THE NEW TESTAMENT OF OUR LORD and SAVIOUR Jesus Christ,

Newly TRANSLATED out of the Original GREEK;

AND

With the former TRANSLATIONS diligently Compared and Reviſed.

By His Majeſties ſpecial Command.

In the *SAVOY*,
Printed by the Aſſigns of *John Bill* and *Chriſtopher Barker*,
Printers to the Kings moſt Excellent Majeſty. 1669.

BODLEIAN LIBRARY

S. MATHEW.

Mat: 1. v: 1. The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham, etc— v. 2. Abraham begat Isaac, and Isaac begat Jacob, and Jacob begat Judas and his brethren.

The Angel appeareth to Joseph Mat: 1. v. 20.

But while he thought on these things, behold the Angel of ye Lord appeared to him in a dream, saying Joseph etc.

The wise men directed to Christ by a star.
they worship him and offer their presents Mat: 2.

v. 1. Now when Jesus was borne in Bethlehem etc: behold there came wise men from the East to Jerusalem etc:

¶ The Gospel according to S. MATTHEW.

CHAP. I.

1 *The genealogie of Christ from Abraham to Joseph.* 18 *He was conceived by the holy Ghost, and born of the virgin Mary, when she was espoused to Joseph.* 19 *The angel satisfieth the misdeeming thoughts of Joseph, and interpreteth the names of Christ.*

THE book of the * generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

2 * Abraham begat Isaac, and * Isaac begat Jacob, and * Jacob begat Judas and his brethren.

3 And * Judas begat Phares, and Zara of Thamar, and * Phares begat Esrom, and Esrom begat Aram.

4 And Aram begat Aminadab, and Aminadab begat Naasson, and Naasson begat Salmon.

5 And Salmon begat Booz of Rachab, and Booz begat Obed of Ruth, and Obed begat Jesse.

6 And * Jesse begat David the king, and * David the king begat Solomon of her *that had been the wife* of Urias.

7 And * Solomon begat Roboam, and Roboam begat Abia, and Abia begat Asa.

8 And Asa begat Josaphat, and Josaphat begat Joram, and Joram begat Ozias.

9 And Ozias begat Joatham, and Joatham begat Achaz, and Achaz begat Ezekias.

10 And * Ezekias begat Manasses, and Manasses begat Amon, and Amon begat Josias.

11 And ‡ Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon.

12 And after they were brought to Babylon, * Jechonias begat Salathiel, and Salathiel begat Zorobabel.

13 And Zorobabel begat Abiud, and Abiud begat Eliakim, and Eliakim begat Azor.

14 And Azor begat Sadoc, and Sadoc begat Achim, and Achim begat Eliud.

15 And Eliud begat Eleazar, and Eleazar begat Matthan, and Matthan begat Jacob.

16 And Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to David, *are* fourteen generations: and from David, until the carrying away into Babylon, *are* fourteen generations: and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ, *are* fourteen generations.

18 ¶ Now the * birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the holy Ghost.

19 Then Joseph her husband, being a just man, and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privily.

20 But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her, is of the holy Ghost.

21 * And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name Jesus: for he shall save his people from their sins.

22 (Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying,

23 * Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and ‡ they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted, *n* is, God with us.) *be*

24 Then Joseph being raised from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife:

25 And knew her not, till she had brought forth her first-born son, and he called his name Jesus.

CHAP. II.

1 *The wise men out of the east are directed to Christ by a star.* 11 *They worship him, and offer their presents.* 14 *Joseph fleeth into Egypt with Jesus and his mother.* 16 *Herod slayeth the children:* 20 *Himself dieth.* 23 *Christ is brought back again into Galilee, to Nazareth.*

NOW when * Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise-men from the east to Jerusalem, * Luke 2. 6, 7.

2 Saying, where is he that is born king of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.

3 When Herod the king had heard *these things*, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him.

4 And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born.

5 And they said unto him, in Bethlehem of Judea: for thus it is written by the prophet;

6 * And thou Bethlehem *in* the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governour, that shall ‡rule my people Israel. * Mic. 5. 2. Joh. 7. 42. ‡ Or, *feed.*

7 Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise-men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared.

8 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go, and search diligently for the young child, and when ye have found *him*, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also.

9 When they had heard the king, they departed, and lo, the star which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came, and stood over where the young child was.

10 When they saw the star, they rejoyced with exceeding great joy.

11 ¶ And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they ‡ presented unto him gifts, gold, and frankincense, and myrrhe. ‡ Or, *offered.*

12 And being warned of God in a dream, that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own countrey another way.

13 And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him.

14 When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:

15 And was there until the death of Herod, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, * Out of Egypt have I called my Son. * Hos. 11. 1.

16 ¶ Then Herod, when he saw that he was

ocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, nd sent forth and slew all the children that ere in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, om two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently enquired of the wise-men,

17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by * Jeremy the prophet, saying,

18 In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping *for* her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

19 ¶ But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the young childs life.

21 And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judea, in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:

23 And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

CHAP. III.

1 *John preacheth: His office, life, and baptism.* 7 *He reprehendeth the Pharisees,* 13 *and baptiseth Christ in Jordan.*

* Mark 1. 4. Luke 3. 2. IN those days came * John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judea,

2 And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

* Isa. 40. 3. Mark 1. 3. 3 For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, * The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

4 And the same John had his raiment of camels hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins: and his meat was locusts and wild honey.

5 Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judea, and all the region round about Jordan,

6 And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.

* Chap. 12. 34. ‡ Or, *answerable to amendment of life.* 7 ¶ But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, * O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruits ‡ meet for repentance.

9 And think not to say within your selves, * We have Abraham to *our* father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

* John 8. 37. * Chap. 7. 19. * Mark 1. 8. Luke 3. 16. John 1. 26. 10 And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees: * therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good *fruit*, is hewn down and cast into the fire.

11 * I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance; but he that cometh after me is mightier then I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and *with* fire.

12 Whose fan *is* in his hand, and he will throughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner: but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

* Mark 1. 9. Luke 3. 21. 13 ¶ * Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.

14 But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

15 And Jesus answering, said unto him, Suffer *it to be so* now: for thus it becometh us to fulfill all righteousness. Then he suffered him.

16 And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him,

17 And lo, a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

CHAP. IV.

1 *Christ fasteth and is tempted.* 11 *The angels minister unto him.* 13 *He dwelleth in Capernaum,* 17 *beginneth to preach,* 18 *calleth Peter and Andrew,* 21 *James and John,* 23 *and healeth all the diseased.*

THen was * Jesus led up of the spirit into the wilderness, to be tempted of the devil. * Mark 1. 12. Luke 4. 1.

2 And when he had fasted fourty days and fourty nights, he was afterwards an hungred.

3 And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.

4 But he answered and said, It is written, * Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. * Deut. 8. 3.

5 Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinacle of the temple,

6 And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thy self down: for it is written, * He shall give his angels charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. * Psal. 91. 11.

7 Jesus said unto him, It is written again, * Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. * Deut. 6. 16.

8 Again the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them:

9 And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.

10 Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, * Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serve. * Deut. 6. 13. & 10. 20.

11 Then the devil leaveth him, and behold, angels came and ministred unto him. * Mark 1. 14.

12 ¶ * Now when Jesus had heard that John was ‡ cast into prison, he departed into Galilee. Luk. 4. 14. John 4. 43. ‡ Or, *delivered up.*

13 And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea-coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim:

14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,

15 * The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim, *by* the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles: * Isa. 9. 1.

16 The people which sat in darkness, saw great light: and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death, light is sprung up.

17 ¶ * From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. * Mark 1. 14.

18 ¶ * And Jesus walking by the sea of Galilee saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: (for they were fishers) * Mark 1. 16.

19 And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.

20 And they straightway left *their* nets, and followed him.

21 And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James *the son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets: and he called them.

22 And they immediately left the ship, and their father, and followed him.

23 ¶ And

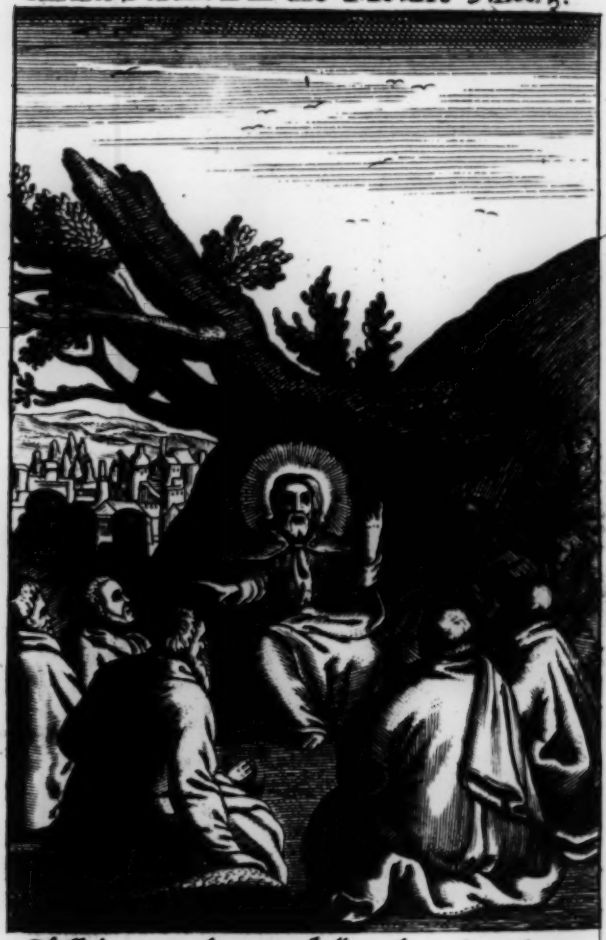
John Baptizeth Christ . Matth: iii.

Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him: v. x. etc:

Christ calleth Peter and Andrew. Mat. 4. 18.

And Jesus walking by the sea of Galilee saw two brethren &c.

Christs Sermon in the Mount Mat: 5.



11. Blessed are ye when men shall revile you & persicute you &c.
13. Ye are the salt of the earth &c:
14. Ye are the light of the World &c:
16. Let your light so shine before men &c:

23 ¶ And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness, & all manner of disease among ỹ people.
24 And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases, and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatick, and those that had the palsie; and he healed them.
25 And there followed him great multitudes of people, from Galilee, and *from* Decapolis, and *from* Jerusalem, and *from* Judea, and *from* beyond Jordan.

CHAP. V.

1 *Christ beginneth his sermon in the mount: 3 declaring who are blessed, 13 who are the salt of the earth, 14 the light of the world, the city on an hill, 15 the candle: 17 that he came to fulfill the law: 21 what it is to kill, 27 to commit adultery, 33 to swear: 38 exhorteth to suffer wrong, 44 to love even our enemies, 48 and to labour after perfectness.*

AND seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him.
2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,
3 * Blessed *are* the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
4 Blessed *are* they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.
5 * Blessed *are* the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.
6 Blessed *are* they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: * for they shall be filled.
7 Blessed *are* the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.
8 * Blessed *are* the pure in heart: for they shall see God.
9 Blessed *are* the peace-makers: for they shall be called the children of God.
10 * Blessed *are* they which are persecuted for righteousness sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
11 Blessed are ye when men shall revile you, and persecute *you*, and shall say all manner of * evil against you † falsly for my sake.
12 Rejoyce, and be exceeding glad: for great *is* your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.
13 ¶ Ye are the salt of the earth: * but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be troden under foot of men.
14 Ye are the light of the world: A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid.
15 Neither do men * light a candle, and put it under ‡ a bushel: but on a candlestick, and it giveth light unto all that are in the house.
16 Let your light so shine before men, * that they may see your good works, and glorifie your Father which is in heaven.
17 ¶ Think not that I am come to destroy the law or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.
18 For verily I say unto you, * Till heaven and earth pass, one jote or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.
19 * Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do, and teach *them*, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.
20 For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed *the righteousness* of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.
21 ¶ Ye have heard, that it was said ‡ by them of old time, * Thou shalt not kill: and whosoever shall kill, shall be in danger of the judgment.
22 But I say unto you, that whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the councel: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell-fire.
23 Therefore, if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there remembrest that thy brother hath ought against thee:
24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.
25 * Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him: lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison.
26 Verily, I say unto thee, thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.
27 ¶ Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, * Thou shalt not commit adultery.
28 But I say unto you, that whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.
29 * And if thy right eye ‡ offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: for *it* is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.
30 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast *it* from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.
31 It hath been said, * Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement.
32 But I say unto you, that * whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced, committeth adultery.
33 ¶ Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, * Thou shalt not forswear thy self, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths.
34 But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven, for it is Gods throne:
35 Nor by the earth, for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King.
36 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black.
37 * But let your communication be, Yea, yea, Nay, nay: for whatsoever *is* more then these, cometh of evil.
38 ¶ Ye have heard that it hath been said, * An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.
39 But I say unto you, * that ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also.
40 And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also.
41 And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain.
42 Give to him that asketh thee, and * from him that would borrow of thee, turn not thou away.
43 ¶ Ye have heard ỹ it hath been said, * Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy;

‡ Or, *to them.*
* Exod. 20. 13. Deut. 5. 17.
* Luke 12. 58.
* Exod. 20. 14.
* Chap. 18. 8. Mark 9. 47.
‡ Or, *do cause thee to offend.*
* Deut. 24. 1.
* Luke 16. 18. 1 Cor. 7. 10.
* Exod. 20. 7. Lev. 19. 12. Deut. 5. 11.
* Jam. 5. 12.
* Exod. 21. 24. Lev. 24. 20. Deut. 19. 21.
* Luke 6. 29.
Rom. 12. 17. 1 Cor. 6. 7.
* Deut. 15. 8.
* Lev. 19. 18.

* Luke 6. 27. * Luke 23. 34. Acts 7. 60.
44 But I ſay unto you, * Love your enemies, bleſs them that curſe you, do good to them that hate you, and pray * for them which deſpitefully uſe you, and perſecute you:
45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven, for he maketh his ſun to riſe on the evil and on the good, and ſendeth rain on the juſt and on the unjuſt.
* Luke 6. 32.
46 * For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicanes the ſame?
47 And if ye ſalute your brethren onely, what do you more *than others*? do not even the publicanes ſo?
48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

CHAP. VI.

1 *Chriſt continueth his ſermon in the mount, ſpeaking of alms,* 5 *prayer,* 14 *forgiving our brethren,* 16 *faſting,* 19 *where our treaſure is to be laid up,* 24 *of ſerving God and mammon:* 25 *exhorteth not to be careful for worldly things,* 33 *but to ſeek Gods kingdom.*

TAke heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be ſeen of them: otherwiſe ye have
‡ Or, *with.* * Rom. 12. 8.
no reward ‡ of your Father which is in heaven.
2 Therefore, * when thou doeſt *thine* alms, ‡ do not ſound a trumpet before thee, as the
‡ Or, *cauſe not a trumpet to be ſounded.*
hypocrites do, in the ſynagogues, and in the ſtreets, that they may have glory of men. Verily, I ſay unto you, they have their reward.
3 But when thou doeſt alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth:
4 That thine alms may be in ſecret: and thy Father which ſeeth in ſecret, himſelf ſhall reward thee openly.
5 ¶ And when thou prayeſt, thou ſhalt not be as the hypocrites *are*: for they love to pray ſtanding in the ſynagogues, and in the corners of the ſtreets, that they may be ſeen of men. Verily, I ſay unto you, they have their reward.
6 But thou, when thou prayeſt, enter into thy cloſet, and when thou haſt ſhut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in ſecret, and thy Father which ſeeth in ſecret, ſhall reward thee openly.
* Eccius. 7. 14.
7 But when ye pray, uſe not vain * repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they ſhall be heard for their much ſpeaking.
8 Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye aſk him.
* Luke 11. 2.
9 After this manner therefore pray ye: * Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name
10 Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as *it is* in heaven.
11 Give us this day our daily bread.
12 And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debters.
13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.
* Mark 11. 25.
14 * For, if ye forgive men their treſpaſſes, your heavenly Father will alſo forgive you.
15 But if ye forgive not men their treſpaſſes, neither will your Father forgive your treſpaſſes.
16 ¶ Moreover, when ye faſt, be not as the hypocrites, of a ſad countenance: for they diſfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to faſt. Verily I ſay unto you, they have their reward.
17 But thou, when thou faſteſt, anoint thine head, and waſh thy face:
18 That thou appear not unto men to faſt, but unto thy Father which is in ſecret: and thy Father which ſeeth in ſecret, ſhall reward thee openly.
19 ¶ Lay not up for your ſelves treaſures upon earth, where moth and ruſt doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and ſteal.
20 * But lay up for your ſelves treaſures in heaven, where neither moth nor ruſt doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor ſteal. * Luke 12. 33. 1 Tim. 6. 19.
21 For where your treaſure is, there will your heart be alſo.
22 * The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be ſingle, thy whole body ſhall be full of light. * Luke 11. 34.
23 But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body ſhall be full of darkneſs. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkneſs, how great *is* that darkneſs!
24 ¶ * No man can ſerve two maſters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or elſe he will hold to the one, and deſpiſe the other. Ye cannot ſerve God and mammon. * Luke 16. 13.
25 Therefore I ſay unto you, * Take no thought for your life, what ye ſhall eat, or what ye ſhall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye ſhall put on. Is not the life more then meat, and the body then raiment? * Phil. 4. 6. Luke 12. 22. 1 Pet. 5. 7.
26 Behold the fowls of the air: for they ſow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better then they?
27 Which of you by taking thought can adde one cubit unto his ſtature?
28 And why take ye thought for raiment? Conſider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they ſpin.
29 And yet I ſay unto you, that even Solomon in all his glory, was not arayed like one of theſe.
30 Wherefore if God ſo clothe the graſs of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is caſt into the oven, *ſhall he* not much more *clothe* you, O ye of little faith?
31 Therefore take no thought, ſaying, What ſhall we eat? or what ſhall we drink? or wherewithall ſhall we be clothed?
32 (For after all theſe things do the Gentiles ſeek) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all theſe things.
33 But ſeek ye firſt the kingdom of God, and his righteouſneſs, and all theſe things ſhall be added unto you.
34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow ſhall take thought for the things of it ſelf. ſufficient unto the day *is* the evil thereof.

CHAP. VII.

1 *Chriſt, ending his ſermon in the mount, reproveth raſh judgment,* 6 *forbideth to caſt holy things to dogs,* 7 *exhorteth to prayer,* 13 *to enter in at the ſtrait gate,* 15 *to beware of falſe prophets,* 21 *not to be hearers, but doers of the word:* 24 *like houſes builded on a rock,* 26 *and not on the ſand.*

* JUdge not, that ye be not judged. * Luke 6. 37. Rom. 2. 1.
2 For with what judgment ye judge, ye ſhall be judged: * and with what meaſure ye mete, it ſhall be meaſured to you again. * Mark 4. 24. Luke 6. 38.
3 * And why beholdeſt thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but conſidereſt not the beam that is in thine own eye? * Luke 6. 41.
4 Or how wilt thou ſay to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and behold, a beam *is* in thine own eye?
5 Thou hypocrite, firſt caſt out the beam out of thine own eye; and then ſhalt thou ſee clearly to caſt out the mote out of thy brothers eye.
6 ¶ Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither caſt ye your pearls before ſwine, leſt they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rent you.
7 ¶ * Aſk,

2. And behold there came a leper, and worshipped him.
3. And Jesus put forth his hand and touched him etc:
5. And when Jesus was entred into Capernaum there came unto him a Centurion beseeching him. etc:

Christ stilleth the Tempest on the Sea Mat. 8

And behold, there arose a great Tempest in the Sea in so much that the ship was covered etc: but he was asleepe. v. 24.

Christ driveth the Devills out of the possessed v. 32

7 ¶ * Ask, and it shall be given you: seek and ye shall find: knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

8 For every one that asketh, receiveth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.

9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone?

10 Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent?

11 If ye then being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?

12 Therefore all things * whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.

13 ¶ * Enter ye in at the strait gate; for wide *is* the gate, and broad *is* the way that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat:

14 ‡ Because strait *is* the gate, and narrow *is* the way which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

15 ¶ Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheeps clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

16 Ye shall know them by their fruits: * Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?

17 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit: neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

19 * Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down and cast into the fire.

20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

21 ¶ Not every one that saith unto me, * Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven: but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.

22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy Name? and in thy Name have cast out devils? and in thy Name done many wonderful works?

23 And then will I profess unto them, * I never knew you: * depart from me ye that work iniquity.

24 ¶ Therefore, * whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man which built his house upon a rock:

25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house: and it fell not, for it was founded upon a rock.

26 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man which built his house upon the sand:

27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house: and it fell, and great was the fall of it.

28 And it came to pass when Jesus had ended these sayings, * the people were astonished at his doctrine.

29 For he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes.

CHAP. VIII.

Christ cleanseth the leper, 5 healeth the centurions servant, 14 Peters mother in law, 16 and many other diseased, 18 sheweth he is to be followed, 23 stilleth the tempest on the sea, 28 driveth the devils out of two men possessed, 31 and suffereth them to go into the swine.

WHen he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

2 * And behold, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. * Mark 1. 40. Luke 5. 12.

3 And Jesus put forth *his* hand, and touched him, saying, I will, be thou clean. And immediately his leprosie was cleansed.

4 And Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no man, but go thy way, shew thy self to the priest, and offer the gift that * Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them. * Levit. 14. 4.

5 ¶ * And when Jesus was entred into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, beseeching him, * Luke 7. 1.

6 And saying, Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the palsie, grievously tormented.

7 And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal him.

8 The centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof: but speak the word onely, and my servant shall be healed.

9 For I am a man under authority, having souldiers under me: and I say to this *man*, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.

10 When Jesus heard *it*, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

11 And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven.

12 But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

13 And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way, and as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the selfsame hour.

14 ¶ * And when Jesus was come into Peters house, he saw his wives mother laid, and sick of a fever. * Mark. 1. 29. Luke 4 38.

15 And he touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose and ministred unto them.

16 ¶ * When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with *his* word, and healed all that were sick: * Mark 1. 32. Luke 4. 40.

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, * Himself took our infirmities, and bare *our* sicknesses. * Isa. 53. 4. 1 Pet. 2. 24.

18 Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart unto the other side.

19 * And a certain scribe came, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. * Luke 9. 57.

20 And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air *have* nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay *his* head.

21 And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

22 But Jesus said unto him, Follow me, and let the dead bury their dead.

23 ¶ And when he was entred into a ship, his disciples followed him.

24 * And behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but he was asleep. * Mark 4. 37. Luke 8. 23.

25 And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us: we perish.

26 And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose and rebuked the winds and the sea, and there was a great calm.

27 But the men marvelled, saying, What manner

ner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him?

* Mark 5. 1. Luk. 8. 26. 28 ¶* And when he we was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way.

29 And behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?

30 And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine, feeding

31 So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine.

32 And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters.

33 And they that kept them fled, and went their ways into the city, and told every thing; and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils.

34 And behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus, and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts.

CHAP. IX.

2 Christ curing one sick of the palsie, 9 calleth Matthew from the receit of custom, 10 eateth with publicans and sinners, 14 defendeth his disciples for not fasting, 20 cureth the bloudy issue, 23 raiseth from death Jairus daughter, 27 giveth sight to two blind men, 32 healeth a dumb man possessed of a devil, 36 and hath compassion of the multitude.

AND he entred into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own city.

* Mark 2. 3. Luk. 5. 18. 2 * And behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsie, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith, said unto the sick of the palsie, Son, be of good cheer, thy sins be forgiven thee.

3 And behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth.

4 And Jesus knowing their thoughts, said, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts?

5 For whether is easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee? or to say, Arise, and walk?

6 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then saith he to the sick of the palsie) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house.

7 And he arose, and departed to his house.

8 But when the multitude saw *it*, they marvelled, and glorified God, which had given such

* Mark. 2. 14. Luk. 5. 27. power unto men.

9 ¶ * And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man named Matthew, sitting at the receit of custom: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose and followed him.

10 ¶ And it came to pass, as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicans and sinners came and sat down with him and his disciples.

11 And when the Pharisees saw *it*, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your master with publicans and sinners?

12 But when Jesus heard *that*, he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick.

* Hos. 6. 6. Chap. 12. 7. * I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am

* 1 Tim. 1. 15. not come to call the righteous, * but sinners to repentance.

* Mark 2. 18. Luk. 5. 33. 14 ¶ Then came to him the disciples of John, saying, * Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?

15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? but the days will come when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.

‡ Or, a piece. 16 No man putteth a piece of ‡ new cloth unto an old garment: for that which is put in to fill it up, taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse.

or, unwrought cloth. 17 Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.

* Mark 5. 22. Luk. 8. 41. 18 ¶ * While he spake these things unto them, behold, there came a certain ruler and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live.

19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and *so did* his disciples.

20 ¶ (And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of bloud twelve years, came behind *him*, and touched the hem of his garment,

21 For she said within her self, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.

22 But Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour)

23 And when Jesus came into the rulers house, and saw the minstrels and the people making a noise,

24 He said unto them, Give place, for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn.

25 But when 9 people were put forth, he went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose.

‡ Or, the same. 26 And ‡ the fame hereof went abroad into all that land.

27 ¶ And when Jesus departed thence, two blind men followed him, crying, and saying, Thou son of David, have mercy on us.

28 And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? they said unto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith, be it unto you.

30 And their eyes were opened, & Jesus straitly charged them, saying, See that no man know *it*.

31 But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that countrey.

* Luke 11. 14. 32 ¶ *As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man possessed with a devil.

33 And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel.

* Chap. 12. 24. Mat. 3. 22. Luk. 11. 15. 34 But the Pharisees said, * He casteth out the devils through the prince of the devils.

* Mat. 4. 23. Luk. 13. 10. * Mat. 4. 23. Luk. 13. 22. * Mat. 6. 6. 35 *And Jesus went about all the cities & villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness, and every disease among the people.

‡ Or, were tired and lay down. * Num. 27. 17. * Luke 10. 2. 36 ¶ * But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they ‡ fainted, and were scattered abroad, * as sheep having no shepherd.

37 Then saith he unto his disciples, * The harvest truly *is* plenteous, but the labourers *are* few.

38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

CHAP. X.

1 Christ sendeth out his twelve Apostles, enabling them with power to do miracles, 5 giveth them their charge, teacheth them; 16 comforteth them against persecution, 40 and promiseth a blessing to those that receive them.

And

Christ raiseth Jairus daughter. Mat. 9

20. And behold a Woman which was diseased with an issue of blood 12 yeares came behind him etc:
23. And when Jesus came into the rulers house etc: 24. he said give place for ꝑ Maid is not dead but sleepeth etc:

AND *when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power ‡ *against* unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease.

2 Now the names of the twelve apostles are these; The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, James *the son* of Zebedee, and John his brother,

3 Philip, and Bartholomew, Thomas, and Matthew the publicane, James *the son* of Alpheus, and Lebbeus, whose surname was Thaddeus,

4 Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

5 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into *any* city of the Samaritanes enter ye not.

6 *But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

7 And as ye go, preach, saying, * The kingdom of heaven is at hand.

8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.

9 * ‡ Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses:

10 Nor scrip for your journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves: (* for the workman is worthy of his meat)

11 * And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, enquire who in it is worthy, and there abide till ye go thence.

12 And when ye come into an house, salute it.

13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you.

14 * And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words: when ye depart out of that house or city, * shake off the dust of your feet.

15 Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgment, then for that city.

16 ¶ * Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and ‡ harmless as doves.

17 But beware of men, for they will deliver you up to the councels, and they will scourge you in their synagogues.

18 And ye shall be brought before governours and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles.

19 * But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak, for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak.

20 For it is not ye that speak, but the spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.

21 * And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against *their* parents, and cause them to be put to death.

22 And ye shall be hated of all men for my names sake: * but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.

23 But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, ye shall not ‡ have gone over the cities of Israel till the Son of man be come.

24 * The disciple is not above *his* master, nor the servant above his lord.

25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord: if they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more *shall they call* them of his household?

26 Fear them not therefore: * for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known.

27 What I tell you in darkness, *that* speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, *that* preach ye upon the house-tops.

28 * And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

29 Are not two sparrows sold for a ‡ farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father.

30 * But the very hairs of your head are all numbred.

31 Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value then many sparrows.

32 * Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven.

33 * But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

34 * Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

35 For I am come to set a man at variance * against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

36 And a mans foes *shall be* they of his own household.

37 * He that loveth father or mother more then me, is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more then me, is not worthy of me.

38 * And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

39 * He that findeth his life, shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake, shall find it.

40 ¶ * He that receiveth you, receiveth me; and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

41 He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall receive a prophets reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous mans reward.

42 * And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones, a cup of cold water onely, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

CHAP. XI.

2 John sendeth his disciples to Christ. 7 Christs testimony concerning John. 18 The opinion of the people, both concerning John and Christ. 20 Christ upbraideth the unthankfulness and impenitence of Chorazin, Bethsaida, and Capernaum: 25 and praising his Fathers wisdom in revealing the gospel to the simple, 28 he calleth to him all such as feel the burden of their sins.

AND it came to pass when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

2 * Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,

3 And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another?

4 Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see:

5 * The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and * the poor have the gospel preached to them.

6 And

* Mark 6. 7. Luke 9. 1. *Or, power.*

* Act. 13. 46

* Luke 9. 3

* Mark 6. 8. Luke 9. 3. 22. 35. *Or, gat.*

* Luke 22. 7. 1 Tim. 5. 18.

* Luke 10. 8.

* Mark. 6. 11.

* Act. 13. 51.

* Luke 10. 3. ‡ Or, *people.*

* Mark. 13. 11. Luk. 12. 11.

* Luke 21. 16.

* Matt. 13. 13.

‡ Or, *end, or, finish.*

* Luke 6. 40. John 13. 16.

* Mark 4. 22. Luke 8. 17. & 12. 2.

* Luke 12. 4.

‡ *It is in value half-penny farthing, in the original, as being the tenth part of the Roman penny.*

* 2 Sam. 14. 11. Acts 27. 34.

* Luke 12. 8.

* Mark 8. 38. Luke 9. 26. 2 Tim. 2. 12.

* Luke 12. 51. * Mic. 7. 6.

* Luke 14. 26.

* Chap. 16. 24. Luk. 9. 23. Mark 8. 34. * John 12. 25.

* Luke 10. 16. John 13. 20.

* Mark 9. 41.

* Isa. 35. 5.

* Isa. 61. 1.

6 And blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended in me.

7 ¶ And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind?

8 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft clothing, are in kings houses.

9 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea, I say unto you, and more then a prophet.

* Mal.3.1. 10 For this is he of whom it is written, * Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

11 Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater then John the Baptist: notwithstanding, he that is least in the kingdom of heaven, is greater then he.

* Luke 16. 16. 12 * And from the days of John the Baptist, until now, the kingdom of heaven ‡ suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.

‡ Or, is gotten by force, and they that thrust men 13 For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John.

14 And if ye will receive *it*, this is * Elias which was for to come.

* Mal.4.5. 15 He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

* Luke 7. 31. 16 ¶ * But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like unto children sitting in the markets, and calling unto their fellows,

17 And saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned unto you, and ye have not lamented.

18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devil.

19 The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold, a man gluttonous and a wine-bibber, a friend of publicanes and sinners: but wisdom is justified of her children.

* Luke 10. 13. 20 ¶ * Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not.

21 Wo unto thee, Chorazin, wo unto thee, Bethsaida: for if the mighty works which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

22 But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgement, then for you.

23 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day.

24 But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, then for thee.

* Luke 10. 21. 25 ¶ * At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.

26 Even so Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

* John 3. 35. 27 * All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son but the

* John 6. 46. Father: * neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal *him*.

28 ¶ Come unto me all ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

* Jer.6.16. 29 Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me, for I am meek and lowly in heart: * and ye shall find rest unto your souls.

* 1 Joh.5.3. 30 * For my yoke is easie, and my burden is light.

CHAP. XII.

1 Christ reproveth the blindness of the Pharisees concerning the breach of the Sabbath, 3 by scriptures, 9 by reason, 13 and by a miracle. 22 He healeth the man possessed that was blind and dumb. 31 Blasphemy against the holy Ghost shall never be forgiven. 36 Account shall be made of idle words. 38 He rebuketh the unfaithful who seek after a sign, 49 and sheweth who is his brother, sister, and mother.

AT that time * Jesus went on the sabbath-day through the corn, and his disciples were an hungred, and began to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat. * Deut. 23.25. Mark 2. 23. Luke 6.1.

2 But when the Pharisees saw *it*, they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do upon the sabbath-day.

3 But he said unto them, Have ye not read * what David did when he was an hungred, and they that were with him, * 1 Sam. 21. 6.

4 How he entred into the house of God, and did eat the shew-bread, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, * but onely for the priests? * Exod. 29. 32. 33. Lev. 8. 31. & 24. 9.

5 Or have ye not read in the * law, how that on the sabbath-days the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are blameless? * Num. 28. 9.

6 But I say unto you, that in this place is *one* greater then the temple.

7 But if ye had known what this meaneth, * I will have mercy and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless. * Hosea. Chap. 6. 13.

8 For the Son of man is Lord even of the sabbath-day.

9 * And when he was departed thence, he went into their synagogue. * Matt 3. 1. Luke. 6.6

10 ¶ And behold, there was a man which had *his* hand withered: and they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath-days? that they might accuse him.

11 And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath-day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift *it* out?

12 How much then is a man better then a sheep? wherefore it is lawful to do well on the sabbath-days.

13 Then saith he unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand: and he stretched *it* forth; and *it* was restored whole, like as the other.

14 ¶ Then the Pharisees went out, and ‡ held a counsel against him, how they might destroy him. ‡ Or, took counsel.

15 But when Jesus knew *it*, he withdrew himself from thence: and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all:

16 And charged them that they should not make him known:

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,

18 * Behold, my servant whom I have chosen, my beloved in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgment to the Gentiles. * Isa. 42.

19 He shall not strive, nor cry, neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets.

20 A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory.

21 And in his name shall the Gentiles trust.

22 ¶ * Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumb both spake and saw. * Luke 11. 14.

23 And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this the son of David?

24 * But

The dryed hand healed, & devil cast out *Mat.* 12.

10. *And behold there was a man which had his hand dryed up etc:* 13. *Then said he unto the man stretch forth thine hand etc:* 22. *Then was brought to him one possessed with a Devil etc: and he healed him etc:*

The Parables of the Sowers & Tares Mat: 13

2. And great Multitudes were gathered together unto him so that he went into a ship and sate and the whole Multitude stood on the shore: 3 And he spake many things unto them in Parables etc: a sower went forth to sow etc: v: 24:

24 * But when the Phariſees heard *it*, they ſaid, This *fellow* doth not caſt out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils.

25 And Jeſus knew their thoughts, and ſaid unto them, Every kingdom divided againſt it ſelf, is brought to deſolation; and every city or houſe divided againſt it ſelf, ſhall not ſtand.

26 And if Satan caſt out Satan, he is divided againſt himſelf; how ſhall then his kingdom ſtand?

27 And if I by Beelzebub caſt out devils, by whom do your children caſt *them* out? therefore they ſhall be your judges.

28 But if I caſt out devils by the ſpirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you.

29 Or elſe, how can one enter into a ſtrong mans houſe, and ſpoil his goods, except he firſt bind the ſtrong man, and then he will ſpoil his houſe?

30 He that is not with me, is againſt me: and he that gathereth not with me, ſcattereth abroad.

Mat. 3. Luke 12. Jud. 16. 31 ¶ Wherefore I ſay unto you, * All manner of ſin and blaſphemy ſhall be forgiven unto men; but the blaſphemy *againſt* the *holy* Ghoſt ſhall not be forgiven unto men.

32 And whoſoever ſpeaketh a word againſt the Son of man, it ſhall be forgiven him: but whoſoever ſpeaketh againſt the holy Ghoſt, it ſhall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the *world* to come.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or elſe make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by *his* fruit.

Luke 6. 45. 34 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, ſpeak good things? * for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth ſpeaketh.

35 A good man out of the good treaſure of the heart, bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treaſure, bringeth forth evil things.

36 But I ſay unto you, That every idle word that men ſhall ſpeak, they ſhall give account thereof in the day of judgment.

37 For by thy words thou ſhalt be juſtified, and by thy words thou ſhalt be condemned.

38 ¶ * Then certain of the ſcribes, and of the Phariſees anſwered, ſaying, Maſter, we would ſee a ſign from thee.

Luke 11. 29. 39 But he anſwered, and ſaid to them, An evil and adulterous generation ſeeketh after a ſign, and there ſhall no ſign be given to it, but the ſign of the prophet Jonas.

Jonah 1. 17. 40 * For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whales belly; ſo ſhall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

Jonah 3. 5. 41 The men of Nineveh ſhall riſe in judgement with this generation, and ſhall condemn it, * becauſe they repented at the preaching of Jonas, and behold, a greater then Jonas *is* here.

1 Kings 10. 1. 42 *The queen of the ſouth ſhall riſe up in the judgment with this generation, and ſhall condemn it; for ſhe came from the uttermoſt parts of the earth to hear the wiſdom of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon is here.

Luke 11. 24. 43 * When the unclean ſpirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, ſeeking reſt, and findeth none.

Zech. 6. 8. 10. 44 Then he ſaith, I will return into my houſe from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth *it* empty, ſwept, and garniſhed.

Luke 11. 26. 45 Then goeth he and taketh with himſelf ſeven other ſpirits, more wicked then himſelf, and they enter in, and dwell there: * and the laſt ſtate of that man is worſe then the firſt. Even ſo ſhall it be alſo unto this wicked generation.

46 ¶ While he yet talked to the people, * behold, his mother and his brethren ſtood without, deſiring to ſpeak with him.

47 Then one ſaid unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren ſtand without, deſiring to ſpeak with thee.

48 But he anſwered and ſaid unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he ſtretched forth his hand towards his diſciples, and ſaid, Behold my mother and my brethren.

50 For whoſoever ſhall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the ſame is my brother, and ſiſter, and mother.

CHAP. XIII.

3 The parable of the ſower and the ſeed. 18 The expoſition of it. 24 The parable of the tares. 31 of the muſtard-ſeed. 33 of the leaven, 44 of the hidden treaſure, 45 of the pearl, 47 of the draw-net caſt into the ſea: 53 and how Chriſt is contemned of his own countreymen.

THe ſame day went Jeſus out of the houſe, * and ſat by the ſea-ſide. * Mar. 4. 1.

2 And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, ſo that he went into a ſhip, and ſat, and the whole multitude ſtood on the ſhore.

3 And he ſpake many things unto them in parables, ſaying, * Behold, a ſower went forth to ſow. * Luke 8. 5.

4 And when he ſowed, ſome *ſeeds* fell by the ways ſide, and the fowls came, and devoured them up.

5 Some fell upon ſtony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they ſprung up, becauſe they had no deepneſs of earth:

6 And when the ſun was up, they were ſcorched, and becauſe they had not root, they withered away.

7 And ſome fell among thorns, and the thorns ſprung up, and choked them.

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, ſome an hundred-fold, ſome ſixty-fold, ſome thirty-fold.

9 Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

10 And the diſciples came, and ſaid unto him, Why ſpeakeſt thou unto them in parables?

11 He anſwered and ſaid unto them, Becauſe it is given unto you to know the myſteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

12 * For whoſoever hath, to him ſhall be given, and he ſhall have more abundance; but whoſoever hath not, from him ſhall be taken away even that he hath. * Chap. 25. 29.

13 Therefore ſpeak I to them in parables, becauſe they ſeeing, ſee not; and hearing, they hear not, neither do they underſtand.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Eſaias, which ſaith, * By hearing ye ſhall hear, and ſhall not underſtand: and ſeeing ye ſhall ſee, and ſhall not perceive. * Iſa. 6. 9. Mat. 4. 12. Luk. 8. 10.

15 For this peoples heart is waxed groſs, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have cloſed, leſt at any time they ſhould ſee with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and ſhould underſtand with *their* heart, and ſhould be converted, and I ſhould heal them. Joh. 12. 40. Act. 28. 26. Rom. 11. 8.

16 But bleſſed *are* your eyes, for they ſee; and your ears, for they hear.

17 For verily I ſay unto you, * that many prophets and righteous men have deſired to ſee thoſe things which ye ſee, and have not ſeen *them*; and to hear thoſe things which ye hear, and have not heard *them*. * Luke 10. 24.

18 ¶ Hear ye therefore the parable of the ſower.

19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and underſtandeth *it* not, then cometh the

the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was ſown in his heart: this is he which received ſeed by the way-ſide.

20 But he that received the ſeed into ſtony places, the ſame is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it:

21 Yet hath he not root in himſelf, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or perſecution ariſeth becauſe of the word, by and by he is offended.

22 He alſo that received ſeed among the thorns, is he that heareth the word: and the care of this world, and the deceitfulneſs of riches choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.

23 But he that received ſeed into the good ground, is he that heareth the word, and underſtandeth *it*, which alſo beareth fruit, and bringeth forth ſome an hundred-fold, ſome ſixty, ſome thirty.

24 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, ſaying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which ſowed good ſeed in his field:

25 But while men ſlept, his enemy came, and ſowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was ſprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares alſo.

27 So the ſervants of the houſholder came, and ſaid unto him, Sir, didſt not thou ſow good ſeed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

28 He ſaid unto them, An enemy hath done this. The ſervants ſaid unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?

29 But he ſaid, Nay; leſt while ye gather up the tares, ye root up alſo the wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together until the harveſt: and in the time of harveſt I will ſay to the reapers, Gather ye together firſt the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them, but gather the wheat into my barn.

* Mark 4. 30. Luk. 13. 19. 31 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, ſaying, * The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of muſtard-ſeed, which a man took and ſowed in his field.

32 Which indeed is the leaſt of all ſeeds: but when it is grown, it is the greateſt among herbs, and becometh a tree: ſo that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.

* Luke 13. 20. † The word in the Greek is, *a meaſure containing about a peck and a half, wanting little more then a pint.* 33 ¶ * Another parable ſpake he unto them, The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took and hid in three †meaſures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

* Mark 4. 33. * Pſal. 78. 2. 34 * All theſe things ſpake Jeſus unto the multitude in parables, and without a parable ſpake he not unto them:

35 That it might be fulfilled which was ſpoken by the prophet, ſaying, * I will open my mouth in parables, I will utter things which have been kept ſecret from the foundation of the world.

36 Then Jeſus ſent the multitude away, and went into the houſe: and his diſciples came unto him, ſaying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.

37 He anſwered and ſaid unto them, He that ſoweth the good ſeed, is the Son of man:

38 The field is the world: the good ſeed are the children of the kingdom: but the tares are the children of the wicked one:

* Joel 3. 13. Rev. 14. 15. 39 The enemy that ſowed them, is the devil: * the harveſt is the end of the world: and the reapers are the angels.

40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burnt in the fire; ſo ſhall it be in the end of this world.

‡ Or, *ſcandals.* 41 The Son of man ſhall ſend forth his angels, and they ſhall gather out of his kingdom all ‡things that offend, and them which do iniquity;

42 And ſhall caſt them into a furnace of fire: there ſhall be wailing and gnaſhing of teeth.

43 * Then ſhall the righteous ſhine forth as the ſun, in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear. * Dan. 12. 3.

44 ¶ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treaſure hid in a field: the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and ſelleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

45 ¶ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant-man, ſeeking goodly pearls:

46 Who when he had found one pearl of great price, he went and ſold all that he had, and bought it.

47 ¶ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net that was caſt into the ſea, and gathered of every kind.

48 Which when it was full, they drew to ſhore, and ſat down, and gathered the good into veſſels, but caſt the bad away.

49 So ſhall it be at the end of the world: the angels ſhall come forth, and ſever the wicked from among the juſt,

50 And ſhall caſt them into the furnace of fire: there ſhall be wailing and gnaſhing of teeth.

51 Jeſus ſaith unto them, Have ye underſtood all theſe things? They ſay unto him, Yea, Lord.

52 Then ſaid he unto them, Therefore every ſcribe which is inſtructed unto the kingdom of heaven, is like unto a man that is an houſholder, which bringeth forth out of his treaſure things new and old.

53 ¶ And it came to paſs, that when Jeſus had finiſhed theſe parables, he departed thence.

54 * And when he was come into his own countrey, he taught them in their ſynagogue, inſomuch that they were aſtoniſhed, and ſaid, Whence hath this man this wiſdom, and theſe mighty works? * Mark 6. 1. Luk. 4. 16.

55 * Is not this the carpenters ſon? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James and Joſes, and Simon, and Judas? * John 6. 24.

56 And his ſiſters, are they not all with us? whence then hath this man all theſe things?

57 And they were offended in him. But Jeſus ſaid unto them, * A prophet is not without honour, ſave in his own countrey, and in his own houſe. * Mat. 6. Luk. 4. John 4.

58 And he did not many mighty works there, becauſe of their unbelief.

CHAP. XIV.

1 Herods opinion of Chriſt. 3 Wherefore John Baptiſt was beheaded. 13 Jeſus departeth into a deſert place, 15 where he feedeth five thouſand men with five loaves and two fiſhes. 22 He walketh on the ſea to his diſciples, 34 and landing at Genneſaret, healeth the ſick by the touch of the hem of his garment.

AT that time * Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jeſus, * Mark 6. 14.

2 And ſaid unto his ſervants, This is John the Baptiſt, he is riſen from the dead, and therefore mighty works ‡ do ſhew forth themſelves in him? Luke 9. ‡ Or, *are wrought by him.*

3 ¶ * For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put *him* in priſon for Herodias ſake, his brother Philips wife. * Luke 3. 19, 20.

4 For John ſaid unto him, * It is not lawful for thee to have her. * Levit. 18. 16.

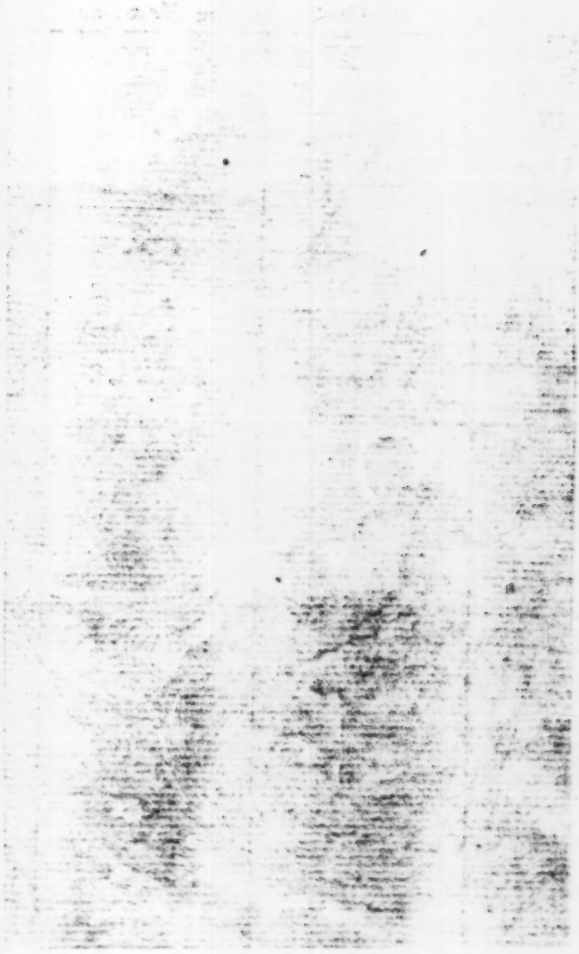
5 And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, * becauſe they counted him as a prophet. & 20. 21. * Chap. 21. 26.

6 But when Herods birth-day was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleaſed Herod.

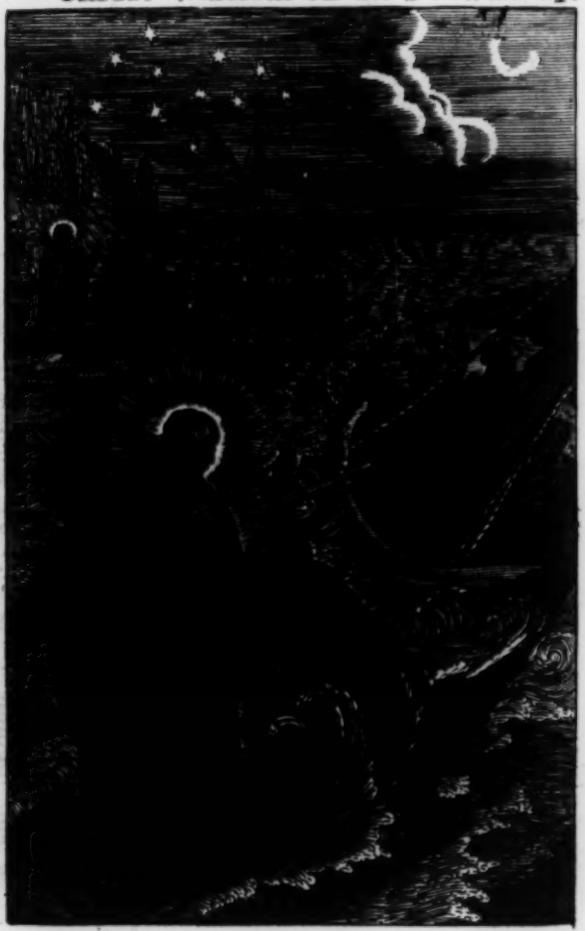
7 Whereupon he promiſed with an oath, to give her whatſoever ſhe would aſk.

8 And

Christ feedeth five thousand
with five loaves and Mat: 14: v. 17.
2. fishes



Christ Walketh on the Sea. Mat: 14.



24: But the Ship was now in the midst of the Sea tossed with wav
25 And in the fourth watch of the night Jesus went unto them
walking on the Sea. 28. And Peter said Lord if it be thou bid
me come unto thee on the water. etc :

Christ delivereth ỹ woman of Canaans daughter Mat: 15

22. And behold a woman of Canaan etc: cryed unto him saying etc: my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil. 26. But he answerd and said it is not meet to take ỹ childrens bread and cast it to dogs. 27. She said truth Lord yet the dogs eate of the crumbs etc:

8 And she, being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here John Baptists head in a charger.

9 And the king was sorry: nevertheless, for the oaths sake, and them which sat with him at meat, he commanded *it* to be given *her*.

10 And he sent & beheaded John in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel: and she brought *it* to her mother.

12 And his disciples came, and took up the body, and buried it, and went and told Jesus.

13 ¶ * When Jesus heard *of it*, he departed thence by ship into a desert place apart: and when the people had heard *thereof*, they followed him on foot out of the cities.

14 And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick.

15 ¶ * And when it was evening, his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past; send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves victuals.

16 But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart, give ye them to eat.

17 And they say unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes.

18 He said, Bring them hither to me.

19 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the grass, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to *his* disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

20 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the fragments that remained, twelve baskets full.

21 And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, beside women and children.

22 ¶ And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, & to go before him unto the other side, while he sent *y* multitudes away.

23 * And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: * and when the evening was come, he was there alone.

24 But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the wind was contrary.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Jesus went unto them walking on the sea.

26 And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear.

27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer, it is I, be not afraid.

28 And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.

29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus.

30 But when he saw the wind ‡ boisterous, he was afraid: and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord, save me.

31 And immediately Jesus stretched forth *his* hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

32 And when they were come into the ship, the wind ceased.

33 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

34 ¶ * And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Gennesaret.

35 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that country round about, and brought unto him all that were diseased,

35 And besought him; that they might only touch the hem of his garment: and as many as touched were made perfectly whole.

CHAP. XV.

3 Christ reproveth the Scribes and Pharisees, for transgressing Gods commandments through their own traditions; 11 teacheth how that which goeth into the mouth, doth not defile a man. 21 He healeth the daughter of the woman of Canaan, 30 and other great multitudes, 32 and with seven loaves, and a few little fishes feedeth four thousand men, besides women and children.

THen * came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying, * Mar. 7. 1.

2 Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.

3 But he answered and said unto them, Why do you also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?

4 For God commanded, saying, * Honour thy father and mother: and, * He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. * Exod. 20. 12. Deut. 5. 16.

5 But ye say, Whosoever shall say to *his* father or *his* mother, * *It is* a gift by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me, * Exod. 21. 17. Levit.

6 And honour not his father or his mother, *he shall be free*. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition. 20. 9. Prov. 20. 20.

7 Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesie of you, saying, * Mar. 7. 11, 12.

8 * This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is far from me. * Isa. 29. 13.

9 But in vain they do worship me, teaching *for doctrines* the commandments of men.

10 ¶ * And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear and understand. * Mar. 7. 14,

11 Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man: but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man.

12 Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended after they heard this saying?

13 But he answered and said, * Every plant which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up. * John 15. 2.

14 Let them alone: * they be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch. * Luke 6. 39.

15 * Then answered Peter and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable. * Mar. 7. 17.

16 And Jesus said, Are ye also yet without understanding?

17 Do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever entreth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

18 But those things which proceed out of the mouth, come forth from the heart, and they defile the man.

19 * For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies. * Gen. 6. 5. & 8. 21.

20 These are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashen hands, defileth not a man.

21 ¶ * Then Jesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon. * Mat. 7. 24.

22 And behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cried unto him, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil.

23 But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away, for she crieth after us.

24 But he answered and said, * I am not sent, * Chap. 10. 6.

but unto the loſt ſheep of the houſe of Iſrael.

25 Then came ſhe and worſhipped him, ſaying, Lord, help me.

26 But he anſwered and ſaid, It is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to caſt it to dogs.

27 And ſhe ſaid, Truth Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their maſters table.

28 Then Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto her, O woman, great *is* thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.

* Mar. 7. 31. 29 * And Jeſus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the ſea of Galilee, and went up into a mountain, and ſat down there.

* Iſa. 35. 5, 6. 30 * And great multitudes came unto him, having with them thoſe that were lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and caſt them down at Jeſus feet, and he healed them:

31 Inſomuch that the multitude wondred when they ſaw the dumb to ſpeak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to ſee: and they glorified the God of Iſrael.

* Mar. 8. 1. 32 ¶ * Then Jeſus called his diſciples unto him, and ſaid, I have compaſſion on the multitude, becauſe they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat: and I will not ſend them away faſting, leſt they faint in the way.

33 And his diſciples ſay unto him, Whence ſhould we have ſo much bread in the wilderneſs, as to fill ſo great a multitude?

34 And Jeſus ſaith unto them, How many loaves have ye? and they ſaid, Seven, and a few little fiſhes.

35 And he commanded the multitude to ſit down on the ground.

36 And he took the ſeven loaves, and the fiſhes, and gave thanks, and brake *them*, and gave to his diſciples, and the diſciples to the multitude.

37 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, ſeven baſkets full.

38 And they that did eat, were four thouſand men, beſide women and children.

39 And he ſent away the multitude, and took ſhip, and came into the coaſts of Magdala.

CHAP. XVI.

1 *The Phariſees require a ſign.* 6 *Jeſus warneth his diſciples of the leaven of the Phariſees and Sadducees.* 13 *The peoples opinion of Chriſt,* 16 *and Peters confeſſion of him.* 21 *Jeſus foreſheweth his death,* 23 *reproving Peter for diſſwading him from it:* 24 *and admoniſheth thoſe that will follow him, to bear the croſs.*

* Mat. 8. 11. Luke 12. 54. THe * Phariſees alſo with the Sadducees, came, and tempting, deſired him that he would ſhew them a ſign from heaven.

2 He anſwered and ſaid unto them, When it is evening, ye ſay, *It will be* fair weather: for the ſky is red.

3 And in the morning, *It will be* foul weather to day: for the ſky is red and lowring. O ye hypocrites, ye can diſcern the face of the ſky, but can ye not *diſcern* the ſigns of the times?

4 A wicked and adulterous generation ſeeketh after a ſign, and there ſhall no ſign be given unto it, but the ſign of the prophet Jonas. And he left them, and departed.

5 And when his diſciples were come to the other ſide, they had forgotten to take bread.

6 ¶ Then Jeſus ſaid unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Phariſees, and of the Sadducees.

7 And they reaſoned among themſelves, ſaying, *It is* becauſe we have taken no bread.

8 *Which* when Jeſus perceived, he ſaid unto them, O ye of little faith, why reaſon ye among your ſelves, becauſe ye have brought no bread?

* Chap. 14. 17. 9 * Do ye not yet underſtand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thouſand, and how many baſkets ye took up?

* Chap. 15. 34. 10 * Neither the ſeven loaves of the four thouſand, and how many baſkets ye took up?

11 How is it that ye do not underſtand, that I ſpake *it* not to you concerning bread, that ye ſhould beware of the leaven of the Phariſees, and of the Sadducees?

12 Then underſtood they how that he bade *them* not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Phariſees, and of the Sadducees.

13 ¶ When Jeſus came into the coaſts of Ceſarea Philippi, he aſked his diſciples, ſaying, * Whom do men ſay, that I, the Son of man, am?

* Mat. 8. Luke 9. 14 And they ſaid, Some *ſay that thou art* John the Baptiſt, ſome Elias, and others Jeremias, or one of the prophets.

15 He ſaith unto them, But whom ſay ye that I am?

* John 6. 69. 16 And Simon Peter anſwered and ſaid, * Thou art Chriſt the Son of the living God.

17 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, Bleſſed art thou Simon Bar-jona: for fleſh and bloud hath not revealed *it* unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven.

* John 1. 42. 18 And I ſay alſo unto thee, that * thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church: and the gates of hell ſhall not prevail againſt it.

* John 20. 23. 19 * And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatſoever thou ſhalt bind on earth, ſhall be bound in heaven: and whatſoever thou ſhalt looſe on earth, ſhall be looſed in heaven.

20 Then charged he his diſciples that they ſhould tell no man that he was Jeſus the Chriſt.

21 ¶ From that time forth began Jeſus to ſhew unto his diſciples, how that he muſt go unto Jeruſalem, and ſuffer many things of the elders, and chief prieſts, and ſcribes, and be killed, and be raiſed again the third day.

22 Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, ſaying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this ſhall not be unto thee.

23 But he turned and ſaid unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan, thou art an offence unto me: for thou ſavoureſt not the things that be of God, but thoſe that be of men.

* Chap. 10. 38. Mar. 8. 34. 24 ¶ * Then ſaid Jeſus unto his diſciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himſelf, and take up his croſs, and follow me.

25 For whoſoever will ſave his life, ſhall loſe it: and whoſoever will loſe his life for my ſake, ſhall find it.

26 For what is a man profited, if he ſhall gain the whole world, and loſe his own ſoul? or what ſhall a man give in exchange for his ſoul?

* Pſal. 62. 12. 27 For the Son of man ſhall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels; * and then he ſhall reward every man according to his works.

* Rom. 16. * Mar. 9. Luke 9. 27. 28 Verily I ſay unto you, * There be ſome ſtanding here, which ſhall not taſte of death, till they ſee the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

CHAP. XVII.

1 *The tranſfiguration of Chriſt.* 14 *He healeth the lunatick,* 22 *foretelleth his own paſſion,* 24 *and payeth tribute.*

* Mat. 22. Luke 9. 28 AND * after ſix days, Jeſus taketh Peter, James and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart,

2 And was tranſfigured before them, and his

The Greatest in ye Kingdom of Heaven Mat: 18

1. At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus saying; who is the greatest in the Kingdom of heaven?
2. And Jesus called a little childe unto him etc:
3. Except ye be converted and become as little children, etc:

his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light.

3 And behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias

5 * While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold, a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him.

6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.

7 And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

8 And when they had lift up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen again from the dead.

10 And his disciples asked him, saying, * Why then say the scribes, that Elias must first come?

11 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things:

12 But I say unto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed: likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.

13 Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

14 ¶ * And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a *certain* man, kneeling down to him, and saying,

15 Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is lunatick, and sore vexed: for oft-times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.

17 Then Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Jesus rebuked the devil, and he departed out of him: and the child was cured from that very hour.

19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

20 And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, * If ye have faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place, and it shall remove; and nothing shall be unpossible unto you.

21 Howbeit this kind goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.

22 ¶ * And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men:

23 And they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised again: and they were exceeding sorry.

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received ‡ tribute-*money*, came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay tribute?

25 He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custome or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?

26 Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him, Then are the children free.

27 Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find ‡ a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

‡ Or, a stater, *It is half an ounce of silver, in value two shillings six pence, after five shillings the ounce.*

CHAP. XVIII.

1 *Christ warneth his disciples to be humble and harmless,* 7 *to avoid offences, and not to despise the little ones.* 15 *teacheth how we are to deal with our brethren when they offend us,* 21 *and how oft to forgive them;* 23 *which he setteth forth by a parable of the king, that took account of his servants,* 32 *and punished him who shewed no mercy to his fellow.*

AT * the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven? * Mat. 9. 33. Luk. 9. 46.

2 And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them,

3 And said, Verily I say unto you, * Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. * Chap. 19. 14. 1 Cor. 14. 20.

4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

5 And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name, receiveth me.

6 * But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and *that* he were drowned in the depth of the sea. * Mat. 9. 24. Luke 17. 1, 2.

7 ¶ Wo unto the world because of offences: for it must needs be that offences come: but wo to that man by whom the offence cometh.

8 * Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast *them* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather then having two hands or two feet, to be cast into everlasting fire. * Chap. 5. 30. Mar. 9. 45.

9 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather then having two eyes to be cast into hell-fire.

10 Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.

11 * For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. * Luke 19. 10.

12 * How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray? * Luke 15. 4.

13 And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoyceth more of that *sheep*, then of the ninety and nine which went not astray.

14 Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

15 ¶ Moreover, * if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. * Levit. 19. 17. Luk. 17. 3. * Deut. 19. 15.

16 But if he will not hear *thee*, *then* take with thee one or two more, that in * the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. John. 8. 17. 2 Cor. 13. 1. Heb. 10. 28.

17 And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an * heathen man and a publican. * 1 Cor. 5. 9. 2 Thess. 3. 14.

18 Verily I say unto you, * Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven. * John 20. 23. 1 Cor. 5. 4.

19 Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth, as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

21 ¶ Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? * till seven times?

* Luke 17. 4.

22 Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, until seventy times seven

23 ¶ Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king which would take account of his servants.

24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him which ought him ten thousand ‡ talents.

‡ *A talent is* 750 *ounces of silver, which after five shillings the ounce, is* 187 *li.* 10 *shillings.*

25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, & his wife and children, & all that he had, and payment to be made.

26 The servant therefore fell down, and ‡ worshipped him, saying, Lord have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

‡ Or, *besought him.*

27 Then the Lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

28 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which ought him an hundred ‡ pence: and he laid hands on him, and took *him* by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

‡ *The Roman peny is the eighth part of an ounce, which after five shillings the ounce, is seven pence half-peny.*

29 And his fellow-servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.

31 So when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me:

33 Shouldst not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as I had pity on thee?

34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentours, till he should pay all that was due unto him.

35 So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

CHAP. XIX

2 Christ healeth the sick, 3 answereth the Pharisees concerning divorcement: 10 sheweth when marriage is necessary: 13 receiveth little children: 16 instructeth the young man how to attain eternal life, 20 and how to be perfect: 23 telleth his disciples how hard it is for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God: 27 and promiseth reward to those that forsake any thing, to follow him.

* Mar. 10. 1.

AND it came to pass, * that when Jesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea, beyond Jordan:

2 And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there.

3 ¶ The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?

* Gen. 1. 27. * Gen. 2. 24. Eph. 5. 31. ‖ 1 Cor. 6. 16.

4 And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, * that he which made *them* at the beginning, made them male and female?

5 And said, ‖ For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and d * they twain shall be one flesh.

6 Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joyned together, let not man put asunder.

7 They say unto him, * Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away?

* Deut. 24. 1.

8 He saith unto them, Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts, suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.

9 * And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except *it be* for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away, doth commit adultery.

* Chap. 5. 32. Mar. 10. 11. Luke 16. 18. 1 Cor. 7. 10.

10 ¶ His disciples say unto him, If the case of the man be so with *his* wife, it is not good to marry.

11 But he said unto them, All men cannot receive this saying, save *they* to whom it is given.

12 For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from *their* mothers womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heavens sake. He that is able to receive *it*, let him receive *it*.

13 ¶ * Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put *his* hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them.

* Mar. 10. 13. Luke 18. 15.

14 But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven.

15 And he laid *his* hands on them, and departed thence.

16 ¶ * And behold, one came and said unto him, Good master, what good thing shall I do that I may have eternal life?

* Mar. 10. 17. Luke 18. 18.

17 And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? *there is* none good but one, *that is* God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.

18 He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, * Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness,

* Exod. 20. 13.

19 Honour thy father and *thy* mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

20 The young man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet?

21 Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go *and* sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come *and* follow me.

22 But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven.

24 And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

25 When his disciples heard *it*, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?

26 But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is unpossible, but with God all things are possible.

27 ¶ * Then answered Peter, and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore?

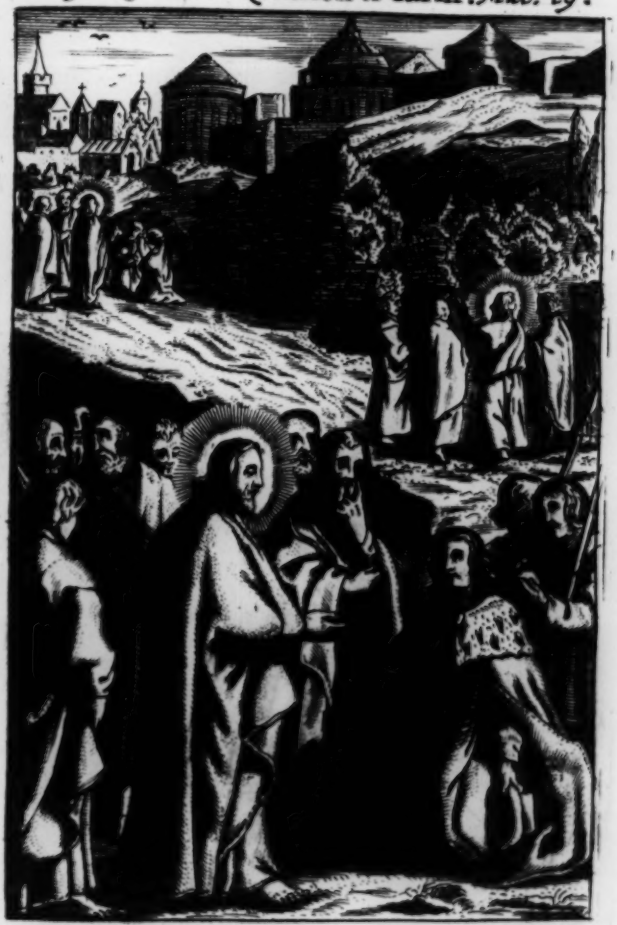
* Mar. 10. 28. Luke 18. 28.

28 And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that ye which have followed me in the regeneration, when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, * ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

* Luke 22. 30.

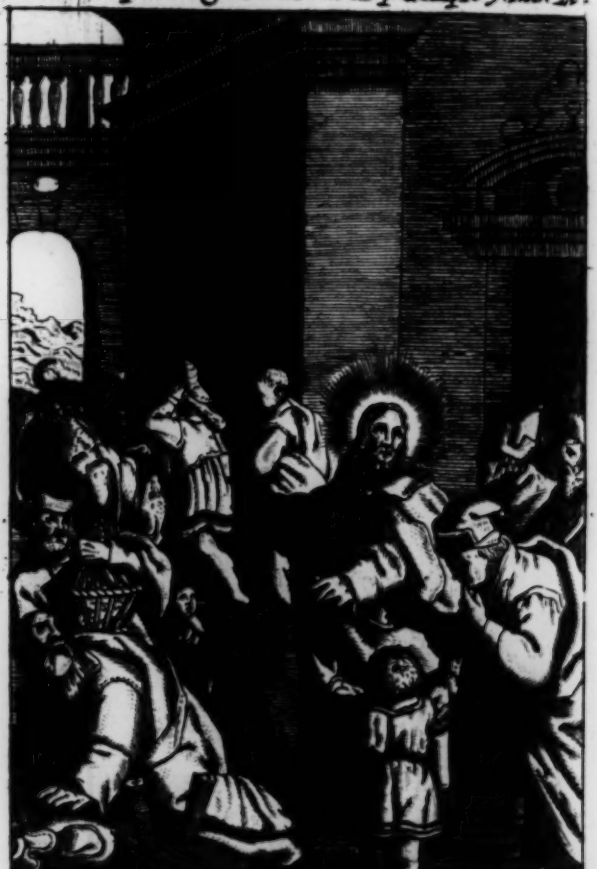
29 And every one that hath forsaken houses,

The young mans question to Christ. Mat: 19.



16. And beholde one came and said unto him good Master what good thing shall I doe that I may have eternall life.
17 And he said unto him etc. keepe the Commandements.
Chap: 20: v: 20: Zebedees Sonns Mother answered

The mony changers cast out of ỹ Temple *Mat: 21:*



12. *And Jesus went into the Temple of God, and cast out all them that bought and sould in the Temple, and overthrew the tables of the mony changers etc: 15: And ỹ children cryed in ỹ Temple Hosanna to the son of David etc:*

or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my names sake, shall receive an hundred-fold, and shall inherit everlasting life.

30 * But many *that are* first, shall be last; and the last *shall be* first.

CHAP. XX.

1 *Christ by the similitude of the labourers in the vineyard, sheweth that God is debter unto no man;* 17 *foretelleth his passion;* 20 *by answering the mother of Zebedees children, teacheth his disciples to be lowly;* 30 *and giveth two blind men their sight.*

FOr the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is an housholder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard.

2 And when he had agreed with the labourers for a ‡ peny a day, he sent them into his vineyard.

3 And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the market-place,

4 And said unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right, I will give you. And they went their way.

5 Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise.

6 And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7 They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right, *that* shall ye receive.

8 So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them *their* hire, beginning from the last unto the first.

9 And when they came that *were hired* about the eleventh hour, they received every man a peny.

10 But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more, and they likewise received every man a peny.

11 And when they had received *it*, they murmured against the good-man of the house,

12 Saying, These last ‡ have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have born the burden and heat of the day.

13 But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a peny?

14 Take *that* thine *is*, and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee.

15 Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? is thine eye evil, because I am good?

16 * So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.

17 ¶ * And Jesus going up to Jerusalem, took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and said unto them,

18 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death,

19 * And shall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to scourge, and to crucifie *him*: and the third day he shall rise again.

20 ¶ * Then came to him the mother of Zebedees children, with her sons, worshipping *him*, and desiring a certain thing of him.

21 And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left in thy kingdom.

22 But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able.

23 And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but *it shall be given to them* for whom it is prepared of my Father.

24 And when the ten heard *it*, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren.

25 But Jesus called them unto him, and said, * Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great, exercise authority upon them. * Luke. 22. 25.

26 But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister:

27 And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant.

28 Even as the * Son of man came not to be ministred unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many. * Phil. 2. 7.

29 * And as they departed from Jericho, a great multitude followed him. * Mar. 10. 46.

30 ¶ And behold, two blind men sitting by the way-side, when they heard that Jesus passed by, cried out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou son of David. Luk. 18. 35.

31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they should hold their peace: but they cried the more, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou son of David.

32 And Jesus stood still, and called them, and said, What will ye that I shall do unto you?

33 They say unto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened.

34 So Jesus had compassion on them, and touched their eyes: and immediately their eyes received sight, and they followed him.

CHAP. XXI.

1 *Christ rideth into Jerusalem upon an ass,* 12 *driveth the buyers and sellers out of the temple,* 17 *curseth the fig-tree,* 23 *puttath to silence the priests and elders,* 28 *and rebuketh them by the similitude of the two sons,* 33 *and the husbandmen, who slew such as were sent unto them.*

AND * when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples, * Mar. 11. 1. Luk. 19. 29.

2 Saying unto them, Go into the village over against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose *them*, and bring *them* unto me.

3 And if any man say ought unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them.

4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,

5 * Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy king cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass. * Isa. 62. 11. Zech. 9. 9.

6 * And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them, John 12. 15. * Mar. 11. 2.

7 And brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set *him* thereon.

8 And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way; others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed *them* in the way.

9 And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the son of David: blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord, Hosanna in the highest.

10 * And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this? * Mar. 11. 15. Luk. 19. 45 John 2. 13.

11 And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

12 ¶ And Jeſus went into the temple of God, and caſt out all them that ſold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the ſeats of them that ſold doves,
* Iſa. 56. 7. * Jer. 7. 11. Mar. 11. 17. Luk. 19. 46. 13 And ſaid unto them, It is written, * My houſe ſhall be called the houſe of prayer, * but ye have made it a den of thieves.
14 And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple, and he healed them.
15 And when the chief prieſts and ſcribes ſaw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and ſaying, Hoſanna to the ſon of David; they were ſore diſpleaſed,
16 And ſaid unto him, Heareſt thou what theſe ſay? And Jeſus ſaith unto them, Yea; have ye
* Pſal. 8. 2. never read, * Out of the mouth of babes and ſucklings thou haſt perfected praiſe?
17 ¶ And he left them, and went out of the city into Bethany, and he lodged there.
18 Now in the morning as he returned into the city, he hungred.
* Mar. 11. 13. 18 * And when he ſaw a fig-tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves onely, and ſaid unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever. And preſently the fig-tree withered away.
20 And when the diſciples ſaw *it*, they marvelled, ſaying, How ſoon is the fig-tree withered away?
21 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, Verily I ſay unto you, if ye have faith and doubt not, ye ſhall not onely do this *which is done* to the fig-tree, but alſo if ye ſhall ſay unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou caſt into the ſea; it ſhall be done.
22 And all things whatſoever ye ſhall aſk in prayer, believing, ye ſhall receive.
* Mar. 11. 27. Luk. 20. 1. 23 ¶ * And when he was come into the temple, the chief prieſts and the elders of the people came unto him, as he was teaching, and ſaid, By what authority doeſt thou theſe things? and who gave thee this authority?
24 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, I alſo will aſk you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in like wiſe will tell you by what authority I do theſe things.
25 The baptiſm of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? And they reaſoned with themſelves, ſaying, If we ſhall ſay, From heaven; he will ſay unto us, Why did ye not then believe him?
* Chap. 14. 5. 26 But if we ſhall ſay, Of men, we fear the people; * for all hold John as a prophet.
27 And they anſwered Jeſus, and ſaid, We cannot tell. And he ſaid unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do theſe things.
28 ¶ But what think ye? A certain man had two ſons, and he came to the firſt, and ſaid, Son, go work to day in my vineyard.
29 He anſwered and ſaid, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went.
30 And he came to the ſecond, and ſaid likewiſe. And he anſwered and ſaid, *I go* ſir; and went not.
31 Whether of them twain did the will of his father? They ſay unto him, The firſt. Jeſus ſaith unto them, Verily I ſay unto you, that the publicanes and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you.
* Chap. 3. 8. * Iſa. 5. 1. Jer. 2. 21. Mar. 12. 1. Luk. 20. 9. 32 For * John came unto you in the way of righteouſneſs, and ye believed him not: but the publicanes and the harlots believed him. And ye, when ye had ſeen *it*, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.
33 ¶ Hear another parable: There was a certain houſholder * which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a wine-preſs in it, and built a tower, and let it out to huſbandmen, and went into a far countrey.
34 And when the time of the fruit drew near, he ſent his ſervants to the huſbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it.
35 And the huſbandmen took his ſervants, and beat one, and killed another, and ſtoned another.
36 Again he ſent other ſervants, more than the firſt: and they did unto them likewiſe.
37 But laſt of all, he ſent unto them his ſon, ſaying, They will reverence my ſon.
38 But when the huſbandmen ſaw the ſon, they ſaid among themſelves, This is the heir; * come, let us kill him, and let us ſeiſe on his inheritance. * Chap. 26. 3. John 11. 53.
39 And they caught *him*, and caſt him out of the vineyard, and ſlew *him*.
40 When the Lord therefore of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto thoſe huſbandmen?
41 They ſay unto him, He will miſerably deſtroy thoſe wicked men, and will let out *his* vineyard unto other huſbandmen, which ſhall render him the fruits in their ſeaſons.
42 Jeſus ſaith unto them, * Did ye never read in the ſcriptures, The ſtone which the builders rejected, the ſame is become the head of the corner: this is the Lords doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes? * Pſal. 118. 22. Acts 4. 11.
43 Therefore ſay I unto you, The kingdom of God ſhall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.
44 And whoſoever * ſhall fall on this ſtone, ſhall be broken: but on whomſoever it ſhall fall, it will grind him to powder. * Iſa. 8. 14, 15. Rom. 9. 32. 1 Pet. 2. 8
45 And when the chief prieſts and Phariſees had heard his parables, they perceived that he ſpake of them.
46 But when they ſought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, becauſe they took him for a prophet.

CHAP. XXII.

1 *The parable of the marriage of the king's ſon.* 9 *The vocation of the Gentiles.* 12 *The puniſhment of him that wanted the wedding-garment.* 15 *Tribute ought to be paid to Ceſar.* 23 *Chriſt confuteth the Sadducees for the reſurrection,* 34 *anſwereth the lawyer, which is the firſt and great commandment,* 41 *and poſeth the Phariſees about the Meſſias.*

AND Jeſus anſwered * and ſpake unto them * Luke 14. 16. Rev. 19. 9. again by parables, and ſaid,
2 The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his ſon,
3 And ſent forth his ſervants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.
4 Again he ſent forth other ſervants, ſaying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and *my* fatlings *are* killed, and all things *are* ready: come unto the marriage.
5 But they made light of *it*, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandiſe:
6 And the remnant took his ſervants, and entreated *them* ſpitefully, and ſlew *them*.
7 But when the king heard *thereof*, he was wroth: and ſent forth his armies, and deſtroyed thoſe murderers, and burnt up their city.
8 Then ſaith he to his ſervants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden, were not worthy.
9 Go ye therefore into the high-ways, and as many as ye ſhall find, bid to the marriage.
10 So thoſe ſervants went out into the high-ways,

ways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.

11 ¶ And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding-garment:

12 And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, not having a wedding-garment? And he was speechless.

13 Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast *him* into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

14 * For many are called, but few *are* chosen.

15 ¶ * Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might intangle him in *his* talk.

16 And they sent out unto him their disciples, with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither careſt thou for any man: for thou regardest not the person of men.

17 Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute unto Cesar, or not?

18 But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

19 Shew me the tribute-money. And they brought unto him a ‡ peny.

20 And he saith unto them, Whose *is* this image and ‡ superscription?

21 They say unto him, Cesars. Then saith he unto them, * Render therefore unto Cesar, the things which are Cesars: and unto God, the things that are Gods.

22 When they had heard *these words*, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

23 ¶ * The same day came to him the Sadducees, *which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him,

24 Saying, Master, * Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

25 Now there were with us seven brethren, and the first when he had married a wife, deceased, and having no issue, left his wife unto his brother.

26 Likewise the second also, and the third, unto the seventh.

27 And last of all the woman died also.

28 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her.

29 Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as the angels of God in heaven.

31 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying,

32 * I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

33 And when the multitude heard *this*, they were astonished at his doctrine.

34 ¶ * But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together.

35 Then one of them *which was* a lawyer, asked *him* a question, tempting him, and saying,

36 Master, which *is* the great commandment in the law?

37 Jesus said unto him, * Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.

38 This is the first and great commandment.

39 And the second *is* like unto it, * Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

40 On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

41 ¶ * While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them,

42 Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, *The son* of David.

43 He saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying,

44 * The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

45 If David then call him Lord, how is he his Son?

46 And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any man (from that day forth) ask him any more questions.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 *Christ admonisheth the people to follow the good doctrine, not the evil examples of the scribes and Pharisees.* 5 *His disciples must beware of their ambition.* 13 *He denounceth eight woes against their hypocrisie and blindness:* 34 *and prophesieth of the destruction of Jerusalem.*

THen spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,

2 Saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses seat.

3 All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, *that* observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not.

4 * For they bind heavy burdens, and grievous to be born, and lay *them* on mens shoulders, but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers.

5 But all their works they do, for to be seen of men: * they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,

6 * And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues,

7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.

8 * But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your master, *even* Christ, and all ye are brethren.

9 And call no man your father upon the earth: * for one is your father which is in heaven.

10 Neither be ye called masters: for one is your master, *even* Christ.

11 But he that is greatest among you, shall be your servant.

12 * And whosoever shall exalt himself, shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself, shall be exalted.

13 ¶ But * wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in your selves, neither suffer ye them that are entring to go in.

14 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; * for ye devour widows houses, and for a pretence make long prayer; therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.

15 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell then your selves.

16 Wo unto you, ye blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing: but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debter.

17 Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold?

18 And whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing: but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is ‡ guilty.

19 Ye fools and blind: for whether *is* greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?

20 Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar,

* Chap. 20. 16.
* Mar. 12.
* Luk. 20. 20.
‡ Or, penie
‡ Or, inscription.
* Rom. 13. 7.
* Mar. 12. 18. Luke 20. 27.
* Acts 23. 8.
* Deut. 25. 5.
* Exod. 3. 6.
* Mar. 12. 28.
* Deut. 6. 5. Luke 10. 27.
* Levit. 19. 18.
* Mar. 12. 35. Luk. 20. 41.
* Psal. 110. 1.
* Mar. 12. 38. Luke 20. 45.
* Num. 15. 38. Deut. 22. 12.
* Mar. 12. 38, 39. Luke 11. 43.
* Jam. 3. 1.
* Mal. 1. 6.
* Luke 14. 11. & 18. 14.
* Luke 11. 52.
* Mar. 12. 40. Luke 20. 47.
‡ Or, debter, or bound.

swereth by it, and by all things thereon.
21 And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.
22 And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.
23 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; * for ye pay tithe of mint and anise, and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.
* Luke 11.42.
24 Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.
25 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; * for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess.
* Luke 11.39.
26 Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that *which is* within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.
27 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all uncleanness.
28 Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquity.
29 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; because ye build the tombs of the prophets, & garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,
30 And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the bloud of the prophets.
31 Wherefore ye be witnesses unto your selves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.
32 Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.
33 Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?
34 ¶ Wherefore behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes; and *some* of them ye shall kill and crucifie, and *some* of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute *them* from city to city:
35 That upon you may come all the righteous bloud shed upon the earth, * from the bloud of righteous Abel, unto the bloud of Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.
* Gen. 4.8.
36 Verily I say unto you, all these things shall come upon this generation.
37 * O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, * and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would * I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under *her* wings, and ye would not!
* Luke 13.34. * 2 Chro. 24.21. * 2 Esdr. 1.30.
38 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate.
39 For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

CHAP. XXIV.

1 Christ foretelleth the distruction of the temple: 3 what and how great calamities shall be before it. 29 The signs of his coming to judgment. 36 And because that day and hour is unknown, 42 we ought to watch like good servants, expecting every moment our masters coming.

* Mark 13. 1. Luke 21.5.
AND * Jesus went out, and departed from the temple; and his disciples came to *him* for to shew him the buildings of the temple.
2 And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, * There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.
* Luke 19.44.
3 ¶ And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?
4 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.
5 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ: and shall deceive many.
6 And ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all *these things* must come to pass, but the end is not yet.
7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famine and pestilences, and earthquakes in divers places.
8 All these *are* the beginning of sorrows.
9 * Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my names sake.
* Chap. 10.17. Luke 21.12.
10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.
John 15.18.
11 And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.
12 And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.
13 But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.
14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world, for a witness unto all nations, and then shall the end come.
15 * When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by * Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand)
* Matt 13.14. * Dan. 9.27.
16 Then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains.
17 Let him which is on the house-top, not come down to take any thing out of his house:
18 Neither let him which is in the field, return back to take his clothes.
19 And wo unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days.
20 But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath-day:
21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.
22 And except those days should be shortned, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elects sake those days shall be shortned.
23 * Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here *is* Christ, or there: believe *it* not.
* Mark 13.21.
24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders, insomuch that (if *it were* possible) they shall deceive the very elect.
Luke 17.23.
25 Behold, I have told you before.
26 Wherefore, if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert, go not forth: behold, *he is* in the secret chambers, believe *it* not.
27 For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west: so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.
28 * For wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together.
* Luke 17.37.
29 ¶ Immediately after the tribulation of those days, * shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.
* Isa. 13.10 Ezek. 32.7. Joel 2.31. Mark 13.24.
30 And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, * and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven, with power and great glory.
Luke 21.25. * Rev. 1.7.
31 * And

Christ foretells Jerusalems destruction Mat: 24.

1: And his disciples shewed him the buildings etc:
2: And Jesus said etc: there shall not be left here one stone,
30 Then shall appeare the signe of the Son of man etc:

The Parable of the ten Virgins Chap: 25. 1.

The Last Judgment Matt: 25.

31. When the Son of man shall come in his glory etc.
then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory.
32. And before him shall be gathered all Nations
And he shall separate them etc:

31 * And he ſhall ſend his angels ‡ with a great ſound of a trumpet, and they ſhall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

32 Now learn a parable of the fig-tree: When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that ſummer *is* nigh:

33 So likewiſe ye, when ye ſhall ſee all theſe things, know that it is near, *even* at the doors.

34 Verily I ſay unto you, this generation ſhall not paſs, till all theſe things be fulfilled.

35 * Heaven and earth ſhall paſs away, but my words ſhall not paſs away.

36 ¶ But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father onely.

37 But as the days of Noe *were*, ſo ſhall alſo the coming of the Son of man be.

38 * For as in the days that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying, and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entred into the ark,

39 And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; ſo ſhall alſo the coming of the Son of man be.

40 * Then ſhall two be in the field, the one ſhall be taken, and the other left.

41 Two *women ſhall be* grinding at the mill, the one ſhall be taken, and the other left.

42 ¶ * Watch therefore, for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come.

43 * But know this, that if the good-man of the houſe had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have ſuffered his houſe to be broken up.

44 Therefore be ye alſo ready: for in ſuch an hour as you think not, the Son of man cometh.

45 * Who then is a faithful and wiſe ſervant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his houſhold, to give them meat in due ſeaſon?

46 Bleſſed *is* that ſervant, whom his lord when he cometh ſhall find ſo doing.

47 Verily I ſay unto you, that he ſhall make him ruler over all his goods.

48 But and if that evil ſervant ſhall ſay in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming;

49 And ſhall begin to ſmite *his* fellow-ſervants, and to eat and drink with the drunken:

50 The lord of that ſervant ſhall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not ware of;

51 And ſhall ‡ cut him aſunder, and appoint *him* his portion with the hypocrites: there ſhall be weeping and gnaſhing of teeth.

CHAP. XXV.

1 The parable of the ten virgins, 14 and of the talents. 31 Alſo the deſcription of the laſt judgment.

THen ſhall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom.

2 And five of them were wiſe, and five *were* fooliſh.

3 They that were fooliſh took their lamps, and took no oyl with them:

4 But the wiſe took oyl in their veſſels, with their lamps.

5 While the bridegroom tarried, they all ſlumbred and ſlept.

6 And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridgegroom cometh, go ye out to meet him.

7 Then all thoſe virgins aroſe, and trimmed their lamps.

8 And the fooliſh ſaid unto the wiſe, Give us of your oyl, for our lamps are ‡ gone out.

9 But the wiſe anſwered, ſaying, *Not ſo*, leſt there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that ſell, and buy for your ſelves.

10 And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came, and they that were ready, went in with him to the marriage, and the door was ſhut.

11 Afterward came alſo the other virgins, ſaying, Lord, Lord, open to us.

12 But he anſwered and ſaid, Verily *I* ſay unto you, I know you not.

13 * Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour, wherein the Son of man cometh. * Chap. 24.42. Mar.13.33.

14 ¶ * For *the kingdom of heaven is* as a man travelling into a far countrey, who called his own ſervants, & delivered unto them his goods: * Luke 19.12.

15 And unto one he gave five ‡ talents, to another two, and to another one, to every man according to his ſeveral ability, and ſtraightway took his journey. ‡ *A talent is* 187 *pound ten ſhillings.*

16 Then he that had received the five talents, went and traded with the ſame, and made *them* other five talents. Ch.18.24.

17 And likewiſe he that *had received* two, he alſo gained other two.

18 But he that had received one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lords money.

19 After a long time, the lord of thoſe ſervants cometh, and reckoneth with them.

20 And ſo he that had received five talents, came and brought other five talents, ſaying, Lord, thou deliveredſt unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beſide them five talents mo.

21 His lord ſaid unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful ſervant; thou haſt been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

22 He alſo that had received two talents, came and ſaid, Lord, thou deliveredſt unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beſides them.

23 His lord ſaid unto him, Well done, good and faithful ſervant; thou haſt been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

24 Then he which had received the one talent, came and ſaid, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou haſt not ſown, and gathering where thou haſt not ſtrawed:

25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou haſt *that is* thine.

26 His lord anſwered and ſaid unto him, Thou wicked and ſlothful ſervant, thou kneweſt that I reap where I ſowed not, and gather where I have not ſtrawed:

27 Thou oughteſt therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, & then at my coming I ſhould have received mine owne with uſury.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give *it* unto him which hath ten talents.

29 * For unto every one that hath ſhall be given, and he ſhall have abundance: but from him that hath not ſhall be taken away, even that which he hath. * Chap. 13. 12. Mar.4.25. Luk.8.18.

30 And caſt ye the unprofitable ſervant into outer darkneſs: there ſhall be weeping and gnaſhing of teeth.

31 ¶ When the Son of man ſhall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then ſhall he ſit upon the throne of his glory.

32 And before him ſhall be gathered all nations: and he ſhall ſeparate them one from another, as a ſhepherd divideth his ſheep from the goats:

33 And he ſhall ſet the ſheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

34 Then ſhall the King ſay unto them on his right

right hand, Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

* Isa. 58. 7. Ezek. 18. 7. 35 * For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in:

36 Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me.

37 Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed *thee*? or thirsty, and gave *thee* drink?

38 When saw we thee a stranger, and took *thee* in? or naked, and clothed *thee*?

39 Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee?

40 And the King shall answer, and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, In as much as ye have done *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me.

41 Then shall he say unto them on the left hand, * Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels:

* Psal. 6. 8. Chap. 7. 23.

42 For I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink:

43 I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee?

45 Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, In as much as ye did *it* not to one of the least of these, ye did *it* not to me.

* Dan. 12. 2. John 5. 29. 46 And * these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

CHAP. XXVI.

3 The rulers conspire against Christ: 6 The woman anointeth his head: 14 Judas selleth him. 17 Christ eateth the passover, 26 instituteth his holy supper, 36 prayeth in the garden, 47 and being betrayed with a kiss, 57 is carried to Caiaphas, 69 and denied of Peter.

AND it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples,

* Mar. 14. 1. Luk. 22. 1. John 13. 1. 2 * Ye know that after two days is *the feast* of the passover, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.

* John 11. 47. 3 * Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas,

4 And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill *him*.

5 But they said, Not on the feast-*day*, lest there be an uproar among the people.

* Mar. 14. 3. John 11. 1. 6 ¶ * Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper,

7 There came unto him a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured *it* on his head, as he sat at *meat*.

8 But when his disciples saw *it*, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose *is* this waste?

9 For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor.

10 When Jesus understood *it*, he said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me.

* Deut. 15. 11. 11 * For ye have the poor always with you, but me ye have not always.

12 For in that she hath poured this ointment on my body, she did *it* for my burial.

13 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, *there* shall also this, that this woman hath done, be told for a memorial of her.

* Mar. 14. 10. Luke 22. 3. 14 ¶ * Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests,

15 And said *unto them*, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver.

16 And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him.

* Mark 14. 12. Luke 22. 7. 17 ¶ * Now the first *day* of the *feast of* unleavened bread, the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the passover?

18 And he said, Go into the city to such a man, and say unto him, The master saith, My time is at hand, I will keep the passover at thy house with my disciples.

19 And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them, and they made ready the passover.

* Mark 14. 18. 20 * Now when the even was come, he sat down with the twelve.

Luke 22. 21. John 13. 21. 21 And as they did eat, he said, Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began every one of them to say unto him, Lord, is *it* I?

* Psal. 23 And he answered and said, * He that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me.

24 The Son of man goeth as it is written of him: but wo unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed: it had been good for that man if he had not been born.

25 Then Judas which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said.

* 1 Cor. 11. 23. Gen. 14. 18. Revel. 10. 26 ¶ And as they were eating, * Jesus took bread, and ‡ blessed *it*, and brake *it*, and gave *it* to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body. ‡ Many Greek copies give thanks

27 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave *it* to them, saying, Drink ye all of it:

28 For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

* Ex. 24. 8. 29 But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom.

‡ Or, psalm. 30 And when they had sung an ‡ hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

* Mat. 26. 33. Luke 22. 54. John 18. 1. 31 Then saith Jesus unto them, * All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, * I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.

* Zech. 13. 7. * Mat. 28. 7. Mark 14. 28. 16. 7. John 21. 1. 32 But after I am risen again, * I will go before you into Galilee.

33 Peter answered and said unto him, Though all men shall be offended because of thee, *yet* will I never be offended.

* John 13. 38. 34 Jesus said unto him, * Verily I say unto thee, that this night before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.

35 Peter said unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.

* Mat. 26. 32. Luke 22. 40. 36 ¶ * Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called Gethsemane, and saith unto the disciples, Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder.

37 And he took with him Peter, and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful, and very heavy.

38 Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here and watch with me.

39 And he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible,

possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou *wilt*.

40 And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one hour?

41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed *is* willing, but the flesh *is* weak.

42 He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done.

43 And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy.

44 And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

45 Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

46 Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that doth betray me.

47 ¶ And * while he yet spake, lo, Judas one of the twelve came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves from the chief priests and elders of the people.

48 Now he that betrayed him, gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he, hold him fast.

49 And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said, Hail master; and kissed him.

50 And Jesus said unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

51 And behold, one of them which were with Jesus, stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and stroke a servant of the high priests, and smote off his ear.

52 Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into his place: * for all they that take the sword, shall perish with the sword.

53 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more then twelve legions of angels?

54 But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, * that thus it must be?

55 In that same hour said Jesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves for to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me.

56 But all this was done, that the * scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled.

57 ¶ * And they that had laid hold on Jesus, led *him* away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled.

58 But Peter followed him afar off, unto the high priests palace, and went in, and sat with the servants to see the end.

59 Now the chief priests and elders, and all the councel, sought false witness against Jesus to put him to death,

60 But found none: yea, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses,

61 And said, This *fellow* said, * I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days.

62 And the high priest arose, and said unto him, Answerest thou nothing? what *is it which* these witness against thee?

63 But Jesus held his peace. And the high priest answered and said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us, whether thou be the Christ the Son of God.

64 Jesus saith unto him, Thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, * Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

65 Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy; what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy.

66 What think ye? They answered and said, He is guilty of death.

67 * Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him, and others smote *him* with ‡ the palms of their hands,

68 Saying, Prophesie unto us, thou Christ, who is he that smote thee?

69 ¶ * Now Peter sat without in the palace: and a damsel came unto him, saying, Thou also wast with Jesus of Galilee.

70 But he denied before them all, saying, I know not what thou sayest.

71 And when he was gone out into the porch, another *maid* saw him, and said unto them that were there, This *fellow* was also with Jesus of Nazareth.

72 And again he denied with an oath, I do not know the man.

73 And after a while came unto him they that stood by, and said to Peter, Surely thou also art *one* of them, for thy speech bewrayeth thee.

74 Then began he to curse and to swear, *saying*, I know not the man. And immediately the cock crew.

75 And Peter remembred the words of Jesus, which said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out and wept bitterly.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 *Christ is delivered bound to Pilate.* 3 *Judas hangeth himself.* 19 *Pilate admonished of his wife,* 24 *washeth his hands,* 26 *and looseth Barabbas.* 29 *Christ is crowned with thorns,* 34 *crucified,* 40 *reviled,* 50 *dieth, and is buried.* 66 *His sepulchre is sealed and watched.*

WHen the morning was come, * all the chief priests and elders of the people, took counsel against Jesus to put him to death.

2 And when they had bound him, they led *him* away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governour.

3 ¶ Then Judas which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders,

4 Saying, I have sinned, in that I have betrayed the innocent bloud. And they said, What *is that* to us? see thou *to that*.

5 And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, * and departed, and went and hanged himself.

6 And the cheif priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of bloud.

7 And they took counsel, and bought with them the potters field, to bury strangers in.

8 Wherefore that field was called, * The field of bloud, unto this day.

9 (Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, * And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, † whom they of the children of Israel did value:

10 And gave them for the potters field, as the Lord appointed me)

11 And Jesus stood before the governour: & the governour asked him, saying, Art thou the king of ? Jews? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest.

12 And when he was accused of the chief priests

* Mar. 14. 43. Luke 22. 47. John 18. 3.
* Gen. 9. 6. Revel. 13. 10.
* Isa. 53. 12.
* Lam. 4. 20.
* Mar. 14. 58. Luke 22. 54. John 18. 13.
* John 2. 19.
* Chap. 16. 27. Rom. 14. 10. 1 Thes. 4. 16.
* Isa. 50. 6. ‡ Or, rods.
* Mar. 14. 66. Luke 22. 55. John 18. 25.
* Mar. 15. 1. Luke 22. 66. Joh. 18. 28.
* Acts 1. 18.
* Zech. 11. 13. ‡ Or, *whom they bought of the children of Israel.*

priests and elders, he answered nothing.
13 Then saith Pilate unto him, Heareſt thou not how many things they witneſs againſt thee?
14 And he answered him to never a word, insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly.
* Luke 23.17. 15 * Now at *that* feaſt the governour was wont to releaſe unto the people a priſoner, whom they would.
16 And they had then a notable priſoner, called Barabbas.
17 Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate ſaid unto them, Whom will ye that I releaſe unto you? Barabbas, or Jeſus, which is called Chriſt?
18 For he knew that for envy they had delivered him.
19 ¶ When he was ſet down on the judgement-ſeat, his wife ſent unto him, ſaying, Have thou nothing to do with that juſt man: for I have ſuffered many things this day in a dream, becauſe of him.
* John 18.40. Acts 3.14. 20 * But the chief prieſts and elders perſwaded the multitude that they ſhould aſk Barabbas, and deſtroy Jeſus.
21 The governour anſwered and ſaid unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I releaſe unto you? They ſaid, Barabbas.
22 Pilate ſaith unto them, What ſhall I do then with Jeſus, which is called Chriſt? They all ſay unto him, Let him be crucified.
23 And the governour ſaid, Why, what evil hath he done? But they cried out the more, ſaying, Let him be crucified.
24 ¶ When Pilate ſaw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and waſhed his hands before the multitude, ſaying, I am innocent of the bloud of this juſt perſon: ſee ye *to it*.
25 Then anſwered all the people, and ſaid, His bloud *be* on us, and on our children.
26 ¶ Then releaſed he Barabbas unto them: and when he had ſcourged Jeſus, he delivered him to be crucified.
* John 19.1. 27 * Then the ſouldiers of the governour took Jeſus into the † common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band *of ſouldiers*.
† Or, governours houſe.
28 And they ſtripped him, and put on him a ſcarlet robe.
29 ¶ And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put *it* upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, & mocked him, ſaying, Hail king of ſ Jews.
30 And they ſpit upon him, and took the reed, and ſmote him on the head.
31 And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucifie him.
* Mark 15.21. Luk.23.26. 32 * And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear his croſs.
* John 19.17. 33 * And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha, that is to ſay, a place of a ſcull,
34 ¶ They gave him vineger to drink, mingled with gall: and when he had taſted *thereof*, he would not drink.
35 And they crucified him, and parted his garments, caſting lots: that it might be fulfilled
* Pſal. 22.18. which was ſpoken by the prophet, * They parted my garments among them, and upon my veſture did they caſt lots.
36 And ſitting down, they watched him there:
37 And ſet up over his head, his accuſation written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.
38 Then were there two thieves crucified with him: one on the right hand, and another on the left.
39 ¶ And they that paſſed by, reviled him, wagging their heads,
40 And ſaying, Thou that deſtroyeſt the temple, and buildeſt *it* in three days, ſave thy ſelf: if thou be ſ Son of God, come down from ſ croſs.
41 Likewiſe alſo the chief prieſts mocking him, with the ſcribes and elders, ſaid,
42 He ſaved others, himſelf he cannot ſave: if he be the king of Iſrael, let him now come down from the croſs, and we will believe him,
43 * He truſted in God; let him deliver him now if he will have him: for he ſaid, I am the Son of God.
* Pſal. 22. Wiſd. 2. 16,17,18.
44 The thieves alſo which were crucified with him, caſt the ſame in his teeth.
45 Now from the ſixth hour there was darkneſs over all the land unto the ninth hour.
46 And about the ninth hour Jeſus cried with a loud voice, ſaying, Eli, Eli, lama ſabachthani? that is to ſay, * My God, my God, why haſt thou forſaken me?
* Pſal. 22.1.
47 Some of them that ſtood there, when they heard that, ſaid, This man calleth for Elias.
48 And ſtraightway one of them ran, and took a ſponge, * and filled *it* with vineger, and put *it* on a reed, and gave him to drink.
* Pſal. 69.21.
49 The reſt ſaid, Let be, let us ſee whether Elias will come to ſave him.
50 ¶ Jeſus, when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghoſt.
51 And behold, the vail of the temple was rent in twain, from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent,
52 And the graves were opened, and many bodies of ſaints which ſlept, aroſe,
53 And came out of the graves after his reſurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.
54 Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jeſus, ſaw the earthquake, & thoſe things that were done, they feared greatly, ſaying, Truly this was the Son of God.
55 And many women were there (beholding afar off) which followed Jeſus from Galilee, miniſtring unto him:
56 Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joſes, and the mother of Zebedees children.
* Mark 15.42. Luk.23. Joh.19. 57 * When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Joſeph, who alſo himſelf was Jeſus diſciple:
58 He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jeſus: then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered.
59 And when Joſeph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth,
60 And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewen out in the rock: and he rolled a great ſtone to the door of the ſepulchre, and departed.
61 And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, ſitting over againſt the ſepulchre.
62 ¶ Now the next day that followed the day of the preparation, the chief prieſts and Phariſees came together unto Pilate,
63 Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver ſaid, while he was yet alive, After three days I will riſe again.
64 Command therefore that the ſepulchre be made ſure until the third day, leſt his diſciples come by night, and ſteal him away, and ſay unto the people, He is riſen from the dead: ſo the laſt errour ſhall be worſe then the firſt.
65 Pilate ſaid unto them, Ye have a watch, go your way, make *it* as ſure as you can.
66 So they went and made the ſepulchre ſure, ſealing the ſtone, and ſetting a watch.

CHAP.

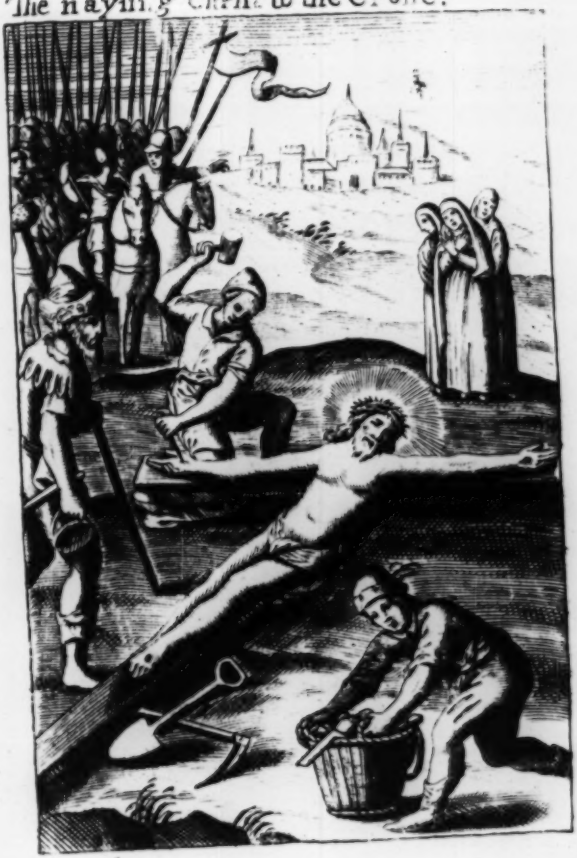
Christ delivered to Pilate. *Mat:* 27. *v.* 17.

Therefore when they were gathered together Pilate said unto them.
etc:

Christ Scourged *Math: 27. v. 26.*

And when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered him to be crucified &c

The naylinge Christ to the Crosse.



S MARKE.

Marke: 1: v. 1: The beginning of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the son of God . etc ⟶ v. 2. As it is written in the Prophets, Behold I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way

Christ heales Peters Mother in Law. Mark. 1

23. The man with the unclean spirit healed.
30. But Simons wives mother lay sick of a fever. etc:
31. And he came and took her by ye hand and lift her up, etc:
The Great draught of fish. Luk. 5. v. 6.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 *Christs resurrection is declared by an angel to the women.* 9 *He himself appeareth unto them.* 11 *The high priests give the souldiers money to say that he was stollen out of his sepulchre.* 16 *Christ appeareth to his disciples,* 19 *and sendeth them to baptize and teach all nations.*

IN the* end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn towards the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, to see the sepulchre. * Luke 24. 1.

2 And behold, there ‡ was a great earthquake; for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it.

3 His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow.

4 And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.

5 And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified.

6 He is not here: for he is risen, as he said: come see the place where the Lord lay.

7 And go quickly and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead; and behold, he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him, lo, I have told you.

8 And they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with fear and great joy, and did run to bring his disciples word.

9 ¶ And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came, and held him by the feet and worshipped him.

10 Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid: go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

11 ¶ Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the city, and shewed unto the chief priests all the things that were done.

12 And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the souldiers,

13 Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept.

14 And if this come to the governours ears, we will perswade him, and secure you.

15 So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them.

17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

18 And Jesus came, and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.

19 ¶ * Go ye therefore and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the holy Ghost: * Mark 16. 15.

20 Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

¶ The Gospel according to S. MARK.

CHAP. I.

1 *The office of John the Baptist.* 9 *Jesus is baptized,* 12 *tempted:* 14 *he preacheth:* 16 *calleth Peter, Andrew, James and John:* 23 *healeth one that had a devil,* 29 *Peters mother in law,* 32 *many diseased persons:* 41 *and cleanseth the leper.*

THE beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ the Son of God,

2 As it is written in the prophets, * Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. * Mal. 3. 1.

3 * The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. * Isa. 40. 3. Luke 3. 4. John 1. 23.

4 * John did baptise in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance, ‡ for the remission of sins. * Mat. 3. 1. ‡ Or, concerning.

5 * And there went out unto him all the land of Judea, and they of Jerusalem, and were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins. * Mat. 3. 5.

6 And John was * clothed with camels hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loyns: and he did eat locusts and wild honey: * Mat. 3. 4.

7 And preached, saying, There cometh one mightier then I after me, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoop down and unloose.

8 I indeed have baptized you with water: but he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost.

9 ¶ * And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan. * Matth. 3. 13.

10 And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens ‡ opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending upon him. ‡ Or, cleaved, or rent.

11 And there came a voice from heaven, saying, Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

12 * And immediately the spirit driveth him into the wilderness. * Matth. 4. 1.

13 And he was there in the wilderness fourty days tempted of Satan, and was with the wild beasts, and the angels ministred unto him.

14 Now after that John was put in prison, * Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, * Matth. 4. 12.

15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye and believe the gospel.

16 * Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: (for they were fishers) * Matth. 4. 18.

17 And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, & I will make you to become fishers of men.

18 And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a little further thence, he saw James *the son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets.

20 And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

21 * And they went into Capernaum, and straightway on the sabbath-day he entred into the synagogue and taught. * Matth. 4. 13.

22 * And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes. * Matth. 7. 28.

23 * And there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit, and he cried out, * Luke 4. 33.

24 Saying, Let us alone; what have we to do with thee thou Jesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the holy one of God.

25 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And

26 And when the unclean ſpirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.
27 And they were all amazed, inſomuch that they queſtioned among themſelves, ſaying, What thing is this? what new doctrine *is* this? for with authority commandeth he even the unclean ſpirits, and they do obey him.
28 And immediately his fame ſpread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.
* Math. 8. 14. 29 * And forthwith, when they were come out of the ſynagogue, they entred into the houſe of Simon and Andrew, with James and John.
30 But Simons wives mother lay ſick of a fever, and anon they tell him of her.
31 And he came and took her by the hand, and lift her up; and immediately the fever left her, and ſhe miniſtred unto them.
32 And at even, when the ſun did ſet, they brought unto him all that were diſeaſed, and them that were poſſeſſed with devils.
33 And all the city was gathered together at the door.
34 And he healed many that were ſick of divers diſeaſes, and caſt out many devils, and ſuffered not the devils ‡ to ſpeak, becauſe they knew him.
‡ Or, *to ſay that they knew him.*
35 And in the morning, riſing up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a ſolitary place, and there prayed.
36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed after him.
37 And when they had found him, they ſaid unto him, All men ſeek for thee.
38 And he ſaid unto them, Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there alſo: for therefore came I forth.
39 And he preached in their ſynagogues throughout all Galilee, and caſt out devils.
* Matth. 8. 2. 40 * And there came a leper to him, beſeeching him, and kneeling down to him, and ſaying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canſt make me clean.
41 And Jeſus moved with compaſſion, put forth *his* hand and touched him, and ſaith unto him, I will, be thou clean.
42 And aſſoon as he had ſpoken, immediately the leproſie departed from him, and he was cleanſed.
43 And he ſtraitly charged him, and forthwith ſent him away;
44 And ſaid unto him, See thou ſay nothing to any man: but go thy way, ſhew thy ſelf to the prieſt, and offer for thy cleanſing thoſe things which Moſes commanded, for a teſtimony unto them.
* Luke 5. 15. 45 * But he went out and began to publiſh *it* much, and to blaze abroad the matter, inſomuch that Jeſus could no more openly enter into the city, but was without in deſert places: and they came to him from every quarter.

CHAP. II.

1 Chriſt healeth one ſick of the palſie, 14 calleth Matthew from the receit of cuſtom, 15 eateth with publicanes and ſinners, 18 excuſeth his diſciples for not faſting, 23 and for plucking the ears of corn on the ſabbath-day.

* Matth. 9. 1. AND again * he entred into Capernaum, after *ſome* days, and it was noiſed that he was in the houſe.
2 And ſtraightway many were gathered together, inſomuch that there was no room to receive *them*, no not ſo much as about the door: and he preached the word unto them.
3 And they come unto him, bringing one ſick of the palſie, which was born of four.
4 And when they could not come nigh unto him for preaſs, they uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken *it* up, they let down the bed wherein the ſick of the palſie lay.
5 When Jeſus ſaw their faith, he ſaid unto the ſick of the palſie, Son, thy ſins be forgiven thee.
6 But there were certain of the ſcribes ſitting there, and reaſoning in their hearts,
7 Why doth this man thus ſpeak blaſphemies? * who can forgive ſins but God onely? * Job 14. 4. Iſa. 43. 25.
8 And immediately, when Jeſus perceived in his ſpirit, that they ſo reaſoned within themſelves, he ſaid unto them, Why reaſon ye theſe things in your hearts?
9 Whether is it eaſier to ſay to the ſick of the palſie, Thy ſins be forgiven thee: or to ſay, Ariſe, and take up thy bed and walk?
10 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive ſins, (he ſaith to the ſick of the palſie)
11 I ſay unto thee, Ariſe, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine houſe.
12 And immediately he aroſe, took up the bed, and went forth before them all, inſomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, ſaying, We never ſaw it on this faſhion.
13 And he went forth again by the ſea-ſide, and all the multitude reſorted unto him, and he taught them.
14 * And as he paſſed by, he ſaw Levi *the ſon* of Alpheus, ſitting ‡ at the receit of cuſtom, and ſaid unto him, Follow me. And he aroſe and followed him.
* Matth. 9. 9.
‡ Or, *in the place where the cuſtom was received.*
15 And it came to paſs, that as Jeſus ſat at meat in his houſe, many publicanes and ſinners ſat alſo together with Jeſus and his diſciples: for they were many, and they followed him.
16 And when the ſcribes and Phariſees ſaw him eat with publicanes and ſinners, they ſaid unto his diſciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with publicanes and ſinners?
17 When Jeſus heard *it*, he ſaith unto them, They that are whole, have no need of the phyſician, but they that are ſick: I came not to call the righteous, but ſinners to repentance.
18 * And the diſciples of John, and of the Phariſees uſed to faſt; and they come, and ſay unto him, Why do the diſciples of John, and of the Phariſees faſt, but thy diſciples faſt not?
* Matth. 9. 14. Luke 5. 33.
19 And Jeſus ſaid unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber faſt, while the bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot faſt.
20 But the days will come, when the bridegroom ſhall be taken away from them, and then ſhall they faſt in thoſe days.
21 No man alſo ſeweth a piece of ‡ new cloth on an old garment: elſe the new piece that filled it up, taketh away from the old, and the rent is made worſe.
‡ Or, *raw* or *unwrought.*
22 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles, elſe the new wine doth burſt the bottles, and the wine is ſpilled, and the bottles will be marred: but new wine muſt be put into new bottles.
23 * And it came to paſs, that he went through the corn-fields on the ſabbath-day, and his diſciples began as they went, to pluck the ears of corn
* Matth. 12. 1.
24 And the Phariſees ſaid unto him, Behold, why do they on the ſabbath-day that which is not lawful?
25 And he ſaid unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was an hungred, he, and they that were with him?
26 How he went into the houſe of God in the days of Abiathar the high prieſt, and did eat the ſhew-bread, which is not lawful to eat, but for the prieſts, and gave alſo to them which were with him?

27 And

The healing of ye Palsie & calling of Mathew Marke

4. And they uncovered the roofe of the house where he was etc: they let downe the bed wherein the sick of the palsie lay. v. 5. when Jesus saw there faith he said to the sick of the palsie sonn thy sinns are forgiven thee.

27 And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath:
28 Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ healeth the withered hand, 10 and many other infirmities: 11 rebuketh the unclean spirits, 13 chooseth his twelve Apostles: 22 convinceth the blasphemy of casting out devils by Beelzebub: 31 and sheweth who are his brother, sister, and mother.

AND * he entred again into the synagogue, and there was a man there which had a withered hand. * Matth. 12. 9.
2 And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath-day, that they might accuse him.
3 And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth.
4 And he saith unto them, Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath-days, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? but they held their peace.
5 And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the ‡ hardness of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched *it* out: and his hand was restored whole as ¶ other. ‡ Or, blindness. ¶ Or, sound.
6 And the Pharisees went forth, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.
7 But Jesus withdrew himself with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Judea,
8 And from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond Jordan, and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came unto him.
9 And he spake to his disciples, that a small ship should wait on him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.
10 For he had healed many, insomuch that they ‡ pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues. ‡ Or, fell.
11 And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God.
12 And he straitly charged them that they should not make him known.
13 ¶ * And he goeth up into a mountain, and calleth unto him whom he would: and they came unto him. * Matth. 10. 1.
14 And he ordained twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach:
15 And to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils:
16 And Simon he surnamed Peter.
17 And James *the son* of Zebedee, and John the brother of James (and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sons of thunder)
18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James *the son* of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon ¶ Canaanite,
19 And Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and they went ‡ into an house.
20 And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread.
21 And when his ‡ friends heard *of it*, they went out to lay hold on him: for they said, He is beside himself.
22 ¶ And the scribes which came down from Jerusalem, said, * He hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the devils casteth he out devils. * Matth. 12. 24.
23 And he called them unto him, and said unto them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan?
24 And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand.
25 And if a house be divided against itself, that house cannot stand.
26 And if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.
27 No man can enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he will first bind the strong man, and then he will spoil his house.
28 * Verily I say unto you, All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blaspheme: * Matth. 12. 31.
29 But he that shall blaspheme against the holy Ghost, hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation:
30 Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.
31 ¶ * There came then his brethren and his mother, and standing without, sent unto him, calling him. * Matth. 12. 46.
32 And the multitude sat about him, and they said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee.
33 And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren?
34 And he looked round about on them which sat about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren.
35 For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

CHAP. IV.

1 The parable of the sower, 14 and the meaning thereof. 21 We must communicate the light of our knowledge to others. 26 The parable of the seed growing secretly, 30 and of the mustard-seed. 35 Christ stilleth the tempest on the sea.

AND * he began again to teach by the sea side: and there was gathered unto him a great multitude, so that he entred into a ship, and sat in the sea, and the whole multitude was by the sea on the land. * Matth. 13. 1.
2 And he taught them many things by parables, and said unto them in his doctrine,
3 Hearken, behold, there went out a sower to sow:
4 And it came to pass as he sowed, some fell by the way-side, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up.
5 And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth, and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth.
6 But when the sun was up, it was scorched, and because it had no root, it withered away.
7 And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no fruit.
8 And other fell on good ground, and did yield fruit that sprang up and increased, and brought forth some thirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred.
9 And he said unto them, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.
10 And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelve, asked of him the parable.
11 And he said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God: but unto them that are without, all *these* things are done in parables:
12 * That seeing they may see, and not perceive, and hearing they may hear, and not understand; lest at any time they should be converted, and *their* sins should be forgiven them. * Matth. 13. 14.
13 And he said unto them, Know ye not this parable?

parable? and how then will ye know all parables?

14 ¶ The sower soweth the word.

15 And these are they by the way-side, where the word is sown; but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts.

16 And these are they likewise which are sown on stony ground, who when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladness:

17 And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward when affliction or persecution ariseth for the words sake, immediately they are offended.

18 And these are they which are sown among thorns: such as hear the word,

19 And the cares of this world, * and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entring in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful.

20 And these are they which are sown on good ground, such as hear the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruit, some thirty-fold, some sixty, and some an hundred.

21 ¶ * And he said unto them, Is a candle brought to be put under a ‡ bushel, or under a bed, and not to be set on a candlestick?

22 * For there is nothing hid which shall not be manifested: neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come abroad.

23 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

24 And he said unto them, Take heed what you hear: * with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear shall more be given.

25 * For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath.

26 ¶ And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground,

27 And should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how.

28 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear.

29 But when the fruit is ‡ brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come.

30 ¶ And he said, * Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God? or with what comparison shall we compare it?

31 *It is* like a grain of mustard-seed, which when it is sown in the earth, is less than all the seeds that be in the earth.

32 But when it is sown, it groweth up, and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches, so that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it.

33 * And with many such parables spake he the word unto them, as they were able to hear *it*.

34 But without a parable spake he not unto them: and when they were alone, he expounded all things to his disciples.

35 ¶ * And the same day when the even was come, he saith unto them, Let us pass over unto the other side.

36 And when they had sent away the multitude, they took him even as he was in the ship, and there were also with him other little ships.

37 And there arose a great storm of wind, and the waves beat into the ship, so that it was now full.

38 And he was in the hinder part of the ship, asleep on a pillow: and they awake him, and say unto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish?

39 And he arose, and rebuked the wind, and said unto the sea, Peace, be still: and the wind ceased, and there was a great calm.

40 And he said unto them, Why are ye so fearful? how is it that you have no faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, What manner of man is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him?

CHAP. V.

† *Christ delivering the possessed of the legion of devils,* 13 *they enter into the swine.* 25 *He healeth the woman of the bloody issue,* 35 *and raiseth from death Jairus his daughter.*

AND * they came over unto the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes.

2 And when he was come out of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombs, a man with an unclean spirit,

3 Who had *his* dwelling among the tombs, and no man could bind him, no not with chains:

4 Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him.

5 And always night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones.

6 But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him,

7 And cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For he said unto him, Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit.)

9 And he asked him, What *is* thy name? and he answered, saying, My name *is* Legion: for we are many.

10 And he besought him much, that he would not send them away out of the country.

11 Now there was there nigh unto the mountains, a great herd of swine feeding.

12 And all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.

13 And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entred into the swine, and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand) and were choked in the sea.

14 And they that fed the swine, fled, and told *it* in the city, and in the country. And they went out to see what it was that was done.

15 And they come to Jesus, and see him that was possessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind, and they were afraid.

16 And they that saw *it*, told them how it befel to him that was possessed with the devil, and also concerning the swine.

17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their coasts.

18 And when he was come into the ship, he that had been possessed with the devil, prayed him that he might be with him.

19 Howbeit, Jesus suffered him not, but saith unto him, Go home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.

20 And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, how great things Jesus had done for him: and all men did marvel.

21 ¶ And when Jesus was passed over again by ship unto the other side, much people gathered unto him, and he was nigh unto the sea.

22 * And behold, there cometh one of the rulers

¶

lers of the synagogue, Jairus by name; and when he saw him, he fell at his feet,

23 And besought him greatly, saying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death, *I pray thee* come and lay thy hands on her that she may be healed, and she shall live.

24 And *Jesus* went with him, and much people followed him, and thronged him.

25 And a certain woman which had an issue of bloud twelve years,

26 And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,

27 When she had heard of Jesus, came in the preass behind, and touched his garment.

28 For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.

29 And straightway the fountain of her bloud was dried up: and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.

30 And Jesus immediately knowing in himself, that vertue had gone out of him, turned him about in the preass, and said, Who touched my clothes?

31 And his disciples said unto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

32 And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

33 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth.

34 And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

35 While he yet spake, there came from the ruler of the synagogues *house*, *certain* which said, Thy daughter is dead, why troublest thou the Master any farther?

36 Assoon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, onely believe.

37 And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James.

38 And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.

39 And when he was come in, he saith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laughed him to scorn: but when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, & them that were with him, and entreth in where the damsel was lying.

41 And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, Talitha cumi, which is being interpreted, Damsel (I say unto thee) arise.

42 And straightway the damsel arose, and walked; for she was *of the age* of twelve years: and they were astonished with a great astonishment.

43 And he charged them straitly, that no man should know it: and commanded that something should be given her to eat.

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ is contemned of his countreymen. 7 He giveth the twelve power over unclean spirits. 14 Divers opinions of Christ. 18 John Baptist is beheaded, 29 and buried. 30 The apostles return from preaching. 34 The miracle of five loaves and two fishes. 48 Christ walketh on the sea: 53 and healeth all that touch him.

AND * he went out from thence, and came into his own countrey, and his disciples follow him.

2 And when the sabbath-day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing *him* were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdom *is* this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands?

3 Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.

4 But Jesus said unto them, * A prophet is not without honour, but in his own countrey, and among his own kin, and in his own house.

5 And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed *them*.

6 And he marvelled because of their unbelief. * And he went round about the villages, teaching.

7 ¶ * And he calleth unto him the twelve, and began to send them forth by two and two, and gave them power *over* unclean spirits,

8 And commanded them that they should take nothing for *their* journey, save a staff onely: no scrip, no bread, no ‡ money in *their* purse:

9 But *be* shod with sandals: and not put on two coats.

10 And he said unto them, In what place soever ye enter into an house, there abide till ye depart from that place.

11 * And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, * shake off the dust under your feet, for a testimony against them. Verily I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgment, then for that city.

12 And they went out, and preached that men should repent.

13 And they cast out many devils, * and anointed with oyl many that were sick, & healed *them*.

14 * And king Herod heard *of him*, (for his name was spread abroad) and he said, That John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

15 Others said, That it is Elias. And others said, That it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.

16 * But when Herod heard *thereof*, he said, It is John whom I beheaded, he is risen from the dead.

17 For Herod himself had sent forth and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife; for he had married her.

18 For John had said unto Herod, * It is not lawful for thee to have thy brothers wife.

19 Therefore Herodias had ‡ a quarrel against him, & would have killed him, but she could not.

20 For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just man and an holy, and ‡ observed him, and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

21 And when a convenient time was come, that Herod on his birth-day made a supper to his lords, high captains, and chief estates of Galilee:

22 And when the daughter of the said Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sat with him, the king said unto the damsel, Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give *it* thee.

23 And he sware unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give *it* thee, unto the half of my kingdom.

24 And she went forth, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And she said, The head of John the Baptist.

* John 4. 44.
* Matth. 9. 35. Luke 13. 22.
* Matth. 10. 1.
‡ The word signifieth *a piece of brass money in value somewhat less then a farthing.* Matth. 10. 9. *but here it is taken in general for money.*
* Matth. 10. 14.
* Acts 13. 51.
* James 5. 14.
* Matth. 14. 1.
* Luke 3. 19.
* Levit. 18. 16.
‡ Or, *an inward grudge.*
‡ Or, *kept him, or saved him.*

25 And she came in straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, saying, I will that thou give me by and by in a charger, the head of John the Baptist.

26 And the king was exceeding sorry; *yet* for his oaths sake, and for their sakes which sat with him, he would not reject her.

‡ Or, *one of his guard.*

27 And immediately the king sent ‡ an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought, and he went, and beheaded him in the prison,

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel, and the damsel gave it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples heard *of it*, they came and took up his corps, and laid it in a tomb.

* Luke 9. 10.

30 * And the apostles gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

31 And he said unto them, Come ye your selves apart into a desert place, and rest a while. For there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat.

* Matt. 14. 13.

32 * And they departed into a desert place by ship privately.

33 And the people saw them departing, and many knew him, and ran afoot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him.

* Matt. 9. 36.

34 ¶ * And Jesus, when he came out, saw much people, and was moved with compassion towards them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd: and he began to teach them many things.

* Matt. 15. 15.

35 * And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came unto him, and said, This is a desert place, and now the time *is* far passed.

36 Send them away, that they may go into the countrey round about, and into the villages, and buy themselves bread: for they have nothing to eat.

‡ The Roman peny is seven pence half-peny; as Matth. 18. 28.

37 He answered and said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they say unto him, Shall we go and buy two hundred ‡ peny-worth of bread, and give them to eat?

38 He saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? go and see. And when they knew, they say, Five, and two fishes.

39 And he commanded them to make all sit down by companies upon the green grass.

40 And they sat down in ranks, by hundreds and by fifties.

41 And when he had taken the five loaves, and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and blessed, and brake the loaves, and gave *them* to his disciples to set before them; and the two fishes divided he among them all.

42 And they did all eat, and were filled.

43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes.

44 And they that did eat of the loaves, were about five thousand men.

‡ Or, *over against Bethsaida.*

45 ¶ And straightway he constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go to the other side before ‡ unto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people.

* Matth. 14. 23.

46 And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray.

47 * And when even was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And he saw them toiling in rowing: (for the wind was contrary unto them) and about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them.

49 But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cried out.

50 (For they all saw him, and were troubled) and immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them, Be of good cheer, it is *I*, be not afraid.

51 And he went up unto them into the ship, and the wind ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondred.

52 For they considered not *the miracle* of the loaves, for their heart was hardened.

53 * And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Gennesaret, and drew to the shore.

* Matt. 14. 34.

54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him,

55 And ran through that whole region round about, and began to carry about in beds those that were sick, where they heard he was.

56 And whithersoever he entred, into villages, or cities, or countrey, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch, if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched ‡ him, were made whole.

‡ Or, *it.*

CHAP. VII.

1 The Pharisees find fault at the disciples for eating with unwashen hands: 8 They break the commandment of God by the traditions of men. 14 Meat defileth not the man: 24 He healeth the Syrophenician womans daughter of an unclean spirit, 31 and one that was deaf and stammered in his speech.

THen * came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which came from Jerusalem.

* Matt. 15. 1.

2 And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with ‡ defiled (that is to say, with unwashen) hands, they found fault.

‡ Or, *common.*

3 For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash *their* hands ‡ oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders.

‡ Or, *diligently*: in the original, *with the fist*: Theophylact. *up to the elbow.*

4 And *when they come* from the market except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, *as* the washing of cups, and ‡ pots, brasen vessels, and of ‡ tables.

5 Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands?

‡ Sextarius is about a pint and an half.

6 He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, * This people honoureth me with *their* lips, but their heart is far from me.

‡ Or, *beside.*

* Isa. 29. 13. Matth. 15. 8.

7 Howbeit, in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

8 For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.

9 And he said unto them, Full well ye ‡ reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.

‡ Or, *frustrate.*

10 For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

11 But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, *it is* * Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me: *he shall be free.*

* Matth. 15. 5.

12 And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father, or his mother:

13 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.

* Matth. 15. 12.

14 ¶ * And when he had called all the people

ple unto him, he ſaid unto them, Hearken unto me every one of you, and underſtand.

15 There is nothing from without a man that entring into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, thoſe are they that defile the man.

16 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

17 And when he was entred into the houſe from the people, his diſciples aſked him concerning the parable.

18 And he ſaith unto them, Are ye ſo without underſtanding alſo? Do ye not perceive, that whatſoever thing from without entreth into the man, it cannot defile him,

19 Becauſe it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?

20 And he ſaid, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man.

21 * For from within out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

22 Theſts, covetouſneſs, wickedneſs, deceit, laſciviouſneſs, an evil eye, blaſphemy, pride, fooliſhneſs:

23 All theſe evil things come from within, and defile the man.

24 ¶ * And from thence he aroſe, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entred into an houſe, and would have no man know *it*; but he could not be hid.

25 For a certain woman whoſe young daughter had an unclean ſpirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet:

26 (The woman was a ‡ Greek, a Syrophenician by nation) and ſhe beſought him that he would caſt forth the devil out of her daughter.

27 But Jeſus ſaid unto her, Let the children firſt be filled: for it is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to caſt *it* unto the dogs.

28 And ſhe anſwered and ſaid unto him, Yes, Lord: yet the dogs under the table eat of the childrens crumbs.

29 And he ſaid unto her, For this ſaying, go thy way, the devil is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when ſhe was come to her houſe, ſhe found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.

31 ¶ And again departing from the coaſts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the ſea of Galilee, through the midſt of the coaſts of Decapolis.

32 And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his ſpeech: and they beſeech him to put his hand upon him.

33 And he took him aſide from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he ſpit, and touched his tongue;

34 And looking up to heaven, he ſighed, and ſaith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.

35 And ſtraightway his ears were opened, and the ſtring of his tongue was looſed, and he ſpake plain.

36 And he charged them that they ſhould tell no man: but the more he charged them, ſo much the more a great deal they publiſhed *it*,

37 And were beyond meaſure aſtoniſhed, ſaying, He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to ſpeak.

CHAP. VIII.

1 *Chriſt feedeth the people miraculouſly,* 10 *refuſeth to give a ſign to the Phariſees,* 14 *admoniſheth his diſciples to beware of the leaven of the Phariſees, and of the leaven of Herod,* 22 *giveth a blind man his ſight,* 27 *acknowledgeth that he is the Chriſt, who ſhould ſuffer and riſe again,* 34 *and exhorteth to patience in perſecution for the profeſſion of the goſpel.*

IN thoſe days * the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, Jeſus called his diſciples unto him, and ſaith unto them, * Matth. 15. 32.

2 I have compaſſion on the multitude, becauſe they have now been with me three days, and have nothing to eat:

3 And if I ſend them away faſting to their own houſes, they will faint by the way: for divers of them came from far.

4 And his diſciples anſwered him, From whence can a man ſatisfie theſe men with bread here in the wilderneſs?

5 And he aſked them, How many loaves have ye? And they ſaid, Seven.

6 And he commanded the people to ſit down on the ground: and he took the ſeven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his diſciples to ſet before *them*: and they did ſet *them* before the people.

7 And they had a few ſmall fiſhes: and he bleſſed, and commanded to ſet them alſo before *them*.

8 So they did eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, ſeven baſkets.

9 And they that had eaten were about four thouſand: and he ſent them away.

10 ¶ And ſtraightway he entred into a ſhip with his diſciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

11 * And the Phariſees came forth, and began to queſtion with him, ſeeking of him a ſign from heaven, tempting him. * Matth. 16. 1.

12 And he ſighed deeply in his ſpirit, and ſaith, Why doth this generation ſeek after a ſign? verily I ſay unto you, There ſhall no ſign be given to this generation.

13 And he left them, and entring into the ſhip again, departed to the other ſide.

14 ¶ * Now *the diſciples* had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ſhip with them more then one loaf. * Matth. 16. 5.

15 And he charged them, ſaying, Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Phariſees, and *of* the leaven of Herod.

16 And they reaſoned among themſelves, ſaying, *It is* * becauſe we have no bread. * Matth. 16. 7.

17 And when Jeſus knew *it*, he ſaith unto them, Why reaſon ye, becauſe ye have no bread? perceive ye not yet, neither underſtand? have ye your heart yet hardened?

18 Having eyes, ſee ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember?

19 When I brake the five loaves among five thouſand, how many baſkets full of fragments took ye up? They ſay unto him, Twelve.

20 And when the ſeven among four thouſand, how many baſkets full of fragments took ye up? And they ſaid, Seven.

21 And he ſaid unto them, How is it that ye do not underſtand?

22 ¶ And he cometh to Bethſaida, and they bring a blind man unto him, and beſought him to touch him.

23 And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the town; and when he had ſpit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he aſked him if he ſaw ought.

24 And he looked up, and ſaid, I ſee men as trees, walking.

25 After that he put *his* hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up: and he was reſtored, and ſaw every man clearly.

26 And he ſent him away to his houſe, ſaying, Neither go into the town, nor tell *it* to any in the town.

* Matth. 16. 13. 27 ¶ * And Jesus went out, and his disciples, into the towns of Cesarea Philippi: and by the way he asked his disciples, saying unto them, Whom do men say that I am?

28 And they answered, John the Baptist: but some say, Elias; and others, one of the prophets.

29 And he saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? And Peter answereth and saith unto him, Thou art the Christ.

30 And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.

31 And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and of the chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again.

32 And he spake that saying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him.

33 But when he had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

34 ¶ And when he had called the people unto him, with his disciples also, he said unto them,

* Matth. 10. 38. * Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

35 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospels, the same shall save it.

36 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?

37 Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

* Matth. 10. 33. 38 * Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me, and of my words, in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed when he cometh in the glory of his Father, with the holy angels.

CHAP. IX.

2 Jesus is transfigured. 11 *He instructeth his disciples concerning the coming of Elias:* 14 *casteth forth a dumb and deaf spirit:* 30 *foretelleth his death and resurrection:* 33 *exhorteth his disciples to humility:* 38 *bidding them not to prohibit such as be not against them, nor to give offence to any of the faithful.*

* Matth. 16. 28. AND he said unto them, * Verily I say unto you, that there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.

* Matth. 17. 1. 2 ¶ * And after six days, Jesus taketh with him, Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them.

3 And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow; so as no fuller on earth can white them.

4 And there appeared unto them Elias, with Moses: and they were talking with Jesus.

5 And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 For he wist not what to say, for they were sore afraid.

7 And there was a cloud that overshadowed them: and a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son: hear him.

8 And suddenly when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus only with themselves.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the Son of man were risen from the dead.

10 And they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean.

11 ¶ And they asked him, saying, Why say the scribes, that Elias must first come?

12 And he answered and told them, Elias verily cometh first, and restoreth all things, and * how it is written of the Son of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought. * Isa. 53. 3.

13 But I say unto you, that Elias is indeed come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him.

14 ¶ * And when he came to *his* disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the scribes questioning with them. * Matth. 17. 14.

15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him, saluted him.

16 And he asked the scribes, What question ye ‡ with them? ‡ Or, among yourselves.

17 And one of the multitude answered and said, Master, I have brought unto thee my son, which hath a dumb spirit;

18 And wheresoever he taketh him, he ‡ teareth him; and he foameth, and gnasheth with his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples, that they should cast him out, and they could not. ‡ Or, dasheth him.

19 He answereth him, and saith, O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him unto me.

20 And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straightway the spirit tare him, and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming.

21 And he asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And he said, Of a child.

22 And oft-times it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters to destroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.

23 Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things *are* possible to him that believeth.

24 And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.

25 When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee, Come out of him, & enter no more into him

26 And *the spirit* cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him: and he was as one dead, insomuch that many said, He is dead.

27 But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up; and he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast him out?

29 And he said unto them, This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

30 ¶ * And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee; and he would not that any man should know *it*. * Matth. 17. 22.

31 For he taught his disciples, and said unto them, The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him, and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day.

32 But they understood not that saying, and were afraid to ask him.

33 ¶ * And he came to Capernaum, and being in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among your selves, by the way? * Matth. 18. 1.

34 But they held their peace: for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who *should be* the greatest.

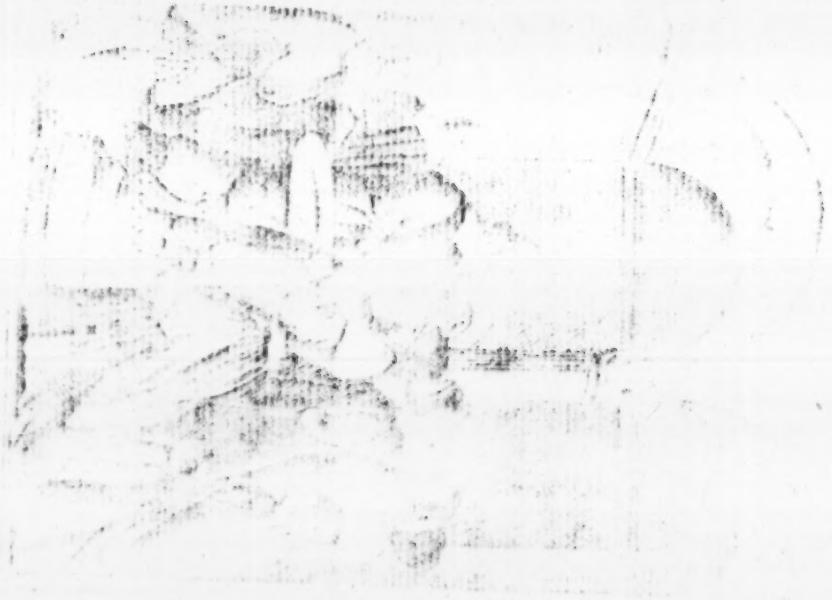
35 And he sat down and called the twelve, and saith unto them, If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.

36 And he took a child, and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them,

37 Who-

Jesus is transfigured in the Mount. Mark. 9.

2. And after six dayes Jesus taketh with him Peter and James and John etc: and he was transfigured before them.
4. And there appeared unto them Moses and Elias and they were talking with Jesus.



The Publick Baptism of Infants.

Mark. 10. 14. 16.

Jesus said unto them, Suffer the Little Children to come unto mee, and forbid them not: etc.

And he took them up in his Armes, put his hands upon them, and blessed them.

37 Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me.

38 ¶ * And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he followeth not us; and we forbad him, because he followeth not us.

39 But Jesus said, Forbid him not: * for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me.

40 For he that is not against us, is on our part.

41 * For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink, in my name, because ye belong to Christ: verily I say unto you, He shall not lose his reward.

42 * And whosoever shall offend one of *these* little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

43 * And if thy hand ‡ offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, then having two hands, to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

44 * Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

45 And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, then having two feet, to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

46 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

47 And if thine eye ‡ offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, then having two eyes, to be cast into hell-fire:

48 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

49 For every one shall be salted with fire, * and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt.

50 * Salt *is* good: but if the salt have lost his saltness, wherewith will you season it? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.

CHAP. X.

2 Christ disputeth with the Pharisees touching divorcement, 13 blesseth the children that are brought unto him, 17 resolveth a rich man how he may inherit life everlasting, 23 telleth his disciples of the danger of riches, 28 promiseth rewards to them that forsake any thing for the Gospel, 32 foretelleth his death and resurrection, 35 biddeth the two ambitious suiters to think rather of suffering with him, 46 and restoreth to Bartimæus his sight.

AND * he rose from thence, and cometh into the coasts of Judea, by the farther side of Jordan: and the people resort unto him again; and, as he was wont, he taught them again.

2 ¶ And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife? tempting him.

3 And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you?

4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away.

5 And Jesus answered and said unto them, For the hardness of your heart he wrote you this precept.

6 But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female.

7 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife;

8 And they twain shall be one flesh: so then they are no more twain but one flesh.

9 What therefore God hath joyned together, let not man put asunder.

10 And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same matter.

11 And he saith unto them, * Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her. * Matth. 5. 32. & 19. 9.

12 And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.

13 ¶ * And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them; and *his* disciples rebuked those that brought *them*. * Matth. 19. 13.

14 But when Jesus saw *it*, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.

15 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.

16 And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them.

17 ¶ * And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life? * Matth. 19. 16.

18 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? *there is* none good, but one, *that is* God.

19 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.

20 And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth.

21 Then Jesus beholding him, loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor; and thou shalt have treasure in heaven; and come, take up the cross, and follow me.

22 And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

24 And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdom of God!

25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved?

27 And Jesus looking upon them, saith, With men *it is* impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

28 ¶ * Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee. * Matth. 19. 27.

29 And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake and the gospels,

30 But he shall receive an hundred-fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come, eternal life.

31 * But many *that are* first, shall be last: and the last, first. * Matth. 19. 30.

32 ¶ * And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem: and Jesus went before them: and they were amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid. And he took again the twelve, & began to tell them what things should happen unto him, * Matth. 20. 17.

33 *Saying*, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes: and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles:

34 And they shall mock him, and shall scourge

him, and shall spit upon him, and shall kill him: and the third day he shall rise again.

* Matth. 20. 20. 35 ¶ * And James and John the sons of Zebedee come unto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldest do for us whatsoever we shall desire.

36 And he said unto them, What would ye that I should do for you?

37 They said unto him, Grant unto us, that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand in thy glory.

38 But Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask: can ye drink of the cup that I drink of? and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with?

39 And they said unto him, We can. And Jesus said unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of; and with the baptism that I am baptized withall, shall ye be baptized:

40 But to sit on my right hand, and on my left hand, is not mine to give, but *it shall be given* to them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the ten heard *it*, they began to be much displeased with James and John.

* Luke 22. 25. ‡ Or, *think good.* 42 But Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them, * Ye know that they which ‡ are accounted to rule over the Gentiles, exercise lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them.

43 But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister:

44 And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all.

45 For even the Son of man came not to be ministred unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

* Matth. 20. 29. 46 ¶ * And they came to Jericho: and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples, and a great number of people, blind Bartimeus, the son of Timeus, sat by the highway side begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say, Jesus thou son of David, have mercy on me.

48 And many charged him that he should hold his peace: but he cryed the more a great deal, Thou son of David, have mercy on me.

49 And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called: and they call the blind man, saying unto him, Be of good comfort, rise, he calleth thee.

50 And he casting away his garment, rose, and came to Jesus.

51 And Jesus answered and said unto him, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? The blind man said unto him, Lord, that I might receive my sight.

‡ Or, *saved thee.* 52 And Jesus said unto him, Go thy way; thy faith hath ‡ made thee whole. And immediately he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ rideth with triumph into Jerusalem: 12 curseth the fruitless leafie tree, 15 purgeth the temple: 20 exhorteth his disciples to stedfastness of faith, and to forgive their enemies, 27 and defendeth the lawfulness of his actions, by the witness of John, who was a man sent of God.

* Matth. 21. 1. AND * when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage, and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth forth two of his disciples,

2 And saith unto them, Go your way into the village over against you; and assoon as ye be entred into it, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon never man sat; loose him, and bring *him.*

3 And if any man say unto you, Why do ye this? Say ye that the Lord hath need of him; and straightway he will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the door without, in a place where two ways met: and they loose him.

5 And certain of them that stood there, said unto them, What do ye loosing the colt?

6 And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded: and they let them go.

7 And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him; and he sat upon him.

8 And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut down branches off the trees, and strawed *them* in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna, blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

10 Blessed *be* the kingdom of our father David, that cometh in the name of the Lord, Hosanna in the highest.

11 And Jesus entred into Jerusalem, and into the temple, and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out unto Bethany, with the twelve.

12 ¶ And on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry.

13 * And seeing a fig-tree afar off, having leaves, he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for the time of figs was not *yet.* * Matth. 21. 19.

14 And Jesus answered and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard *it.*

15 ¶ * And they come to Jerusalem: and Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves; * Matth. 21. 12.

16 And would not suffer that any man should carry any vessel through the temple.

17 And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations, the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of thieves.

18 And the scribes and chief priests heard *it*, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his doctrine.

19 And when even was come, he went out of the city.

20 ¶ * And in the morning as they passed by, they saw the fig-tree dried up from the roots. * Matth. 21. 19.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance, saith unto him, Master, behold, the fig-tree which thou cursedst, is withered away.

22 And Jesus answering, saith unto them, ‡ Have faith in God: ‡ Or, *Have the faith of God.*

23 For verily I say unto you, that whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed and be thou cast into the sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith.

24 Therefore I say unto you, * What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive *them*, and ye shall have *them.* * Mark. 7. 7.

25 And when ye stand praying, * forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. * Matth. 6. 14.

26 But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

27 ¶ And they come again to Jerusalem, * and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests, & the scribes, & the elders, * Matth. 21. 23.

28 And say unto him, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority to do these things?

29 And

29 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I will also ask of you one ‡ question, and answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things.

30 The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men? answer me.

31 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven, he will say, Why then did ye not believe him?

32 But if we shall say, Of men, they feared the people: for all men counted John, that he was a prophet indeed.

33 And they answered and said unto Jesus, We cannot tell. And Jesus answering saith unto them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

CHAP. XII.

1 In a parable of the vineyard let out to unthankful husbandmen, Christ fortelleth the reprobation of the Jews, and the calling of the Gentiles. 13 He avoideth the snare of the Pharisees and Herodians about paying tribute to Cesar, 18 convinceth the error of the Sadducees, who denied the resurrection, 28 resolveth the scribe, who questioned of the first commandment, 35 refuteth the opinion that the scribes held of Christ, 38 bidding the people to beware of their ambition and hypocrisie, 41 and commendeth the poor widow for her two mites above all.

AND * he began to speak unto them by parables. A *certain* man planted a vineyard, and set an hedge about it, and digged *a place for* the wine-fat, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far countrey.

2 And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard.

3 And they caught *him*, and beat him, and sent *him* away empty.

4 And again, he sent unto them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded *him* in the head, and sent *him* away shamefully handled.

5 And again, he sent another; and him they killed: and many others, beating some, and killing some.

6 Having yet therefore one son, his welbeloved, he sent him also last unto them, saying, They will reverence my son.

7 But those husbandmen said amongst themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.

8 And they took him, and killed *him*, and cast *him* out of the vineyard.

9 What shall therefore the Lord of the vineyard do? he will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others.

10 And have ye not read this scripture,* The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner:

11 This was the Lords doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?

12 And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people; for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.

13 ¶ * And they sent unto him certain of the Pharisees, and of the Herodians, to catch him in *his* words.

14 And when they were come, they say unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawful to give tribute to Cesar, or not?

15 Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he knowing their hypocrisie, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? bring me a ‡ peny, that I may see *it*.

16 And they brought *it*: and he saith unto them, Whose *is* this image and superscription? And they said unto him, Cesars.

17 And Jesus answering said unto them, Render to Cesar the things that are Cesars, and to God the things that are Gods. And they marvelled at him.

18 ¶ * Then come unto him the Sadducees, which say there is no resurrection; and they asked him, saying,

19 Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a mans brother die, and leave his wife behind him, and leave no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

20 Now there were seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and dying left no seed.

21 And the second took her, and died, neither left he any seed: and the third likewise.

22 And the seven had her, and left no seed: last of all the woman died also.

23 In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them? for the seven had her to wife.

24 And Jesus answering said unto them, Do ye not therefore erre, because ye know not the scriptures, neither the power of God?

25 For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage: but are as the angels which are in heaven.

26 And as touching the dead, that they rise: have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, saying, I *am* the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?

27 He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living: ye therefore do greatly erre.

28 ¶ * And one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all?

29 And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments *is*, Hear, O Israel, The Lord our God is one Lord;

30 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.

31 And the second *is* like, *namely* this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self: there is none other commandment greater then these.

32 And the scribe said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God, and there is none other but he.

33 And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love *his* neighbour as himself, is more then all whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices.

34 And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him any question.

35 ¶ * And Jesus answered and said, while he taught in the temple, How say the scribes that Christ is the son of David?

36 For David himself said by the holy Ghost, *The LORD said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

37 David therefore himself calleth him Lord; and whence is he *then* his son? And the common people heard him gladly.

38 ¶ And he said unto them in his doctrine, * Beware of the scribes, which love to go in long

‡ *Valuing of our money seven pence half penny, as* Matth. 18. 28.

* Matth. 22. 23.

* Matth. 23. 35.

* Matth. 22. 41.

* Psal. 110. 1.

* Matth. 23. 5.

long clothing, and love ſalutations in the market-places,

39 And the chief ſeats in the ſynagogues, and the uppermoſt rooms at feaſts:

* Matth. 23. 14. 40 * Which devour widows houſes, and for a pretence make long prayers: theſe ſhall receive greater damnation.

* Luke 21. 1. ‡ A piece of braſs money. See Matth. 10. 29. ‡ It is the ſeventh part of one piece of that braſs money. 41 ¶ * And Jeſus ſat over againſt the treaſury, and beheld how the people caſt ‡ money into the treaſury: and many that were rich caſt in much.

42 And there came a certain poor widow, and ſhe threw in two ‡ mites, which make a farthing.

43 And he called unto him his diſciples, and ſaith unto them, Verily I ſay unto you, that this poor widow hath caſt more in then all they which have caſt into the treaſury.

44 For all *they* did caſt in of their abundance: but ſhe of her want did caſt in all that ſhe had, *even* all her living.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *Chriſt foretelleth the deſtruction of the temple, 9 the perſecutions for the goſpel, 10 that the goſpel muſt be preached to all nations, 14 that great calamities ſhall happen to the Jews, 24 and the manner of his coming to judgment. 32 The hour whereof being known to none, every man is to watch and pray, that we be not found unprovided, when he cometh to each one particularly by death.*

* Matth. 24. 1. AND * as he went out of the temple, one of his diſciples ſaith unto him, Maſter, ſee what manner of ſtones and what buildings *are here.*

2 And Jeſus anſwering ſaid unto him, Seeſt thou theſe great buildings? there ſhall not be left one ſtone upon another, that ſhall not be thrown down.

3 And as he ſat upon the mount of Olives, over againſt the temple, Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, aſked him privately,

* Matth. 24. 3. 4 * Tell us, when ſhall theſe things be? and what *ſhall be* the ſign when all theſe things ſhall be fulfilled?

5 And Jeſus anſwering them, began to ſay, Take heed leſt any man deceive you.

6 For many ſhall come in my name, ſaying, I am *Chriſt*: and ſhall deceive many.

7 And when ye ſhall hear of wars, and rumors of wars, be ye not troubled: for *ſuch things* muſt needs be; but the end *ſhall* not *be* yet.

8 For nation ſhall riſe againſt nation, and kingdom againſt kingdom: and there ſhall be earthquakes in *divers* places, & there ſhall be famines and troubles: theſe *are* the beginnings of ‡ ſorrows.

‡ The word in the original importeth *the pains of a woman in travail.* 9 ¶ But take heed to your ſelves: for they ſhall deliver you to councels; and in the ſynagogues ye ſhall be beaten; and ye ſhall be brought before rulers and kings for my ſake, for a teſtimony againſt them.

10 And the goſpel muſt firſt be publiſhed among all nations.

* Matth. 10. 19. 11 * But when they ſhall lead *you*, and deliver you up, take no thought before hand what ye ſhall ſpeak, neither do ye premeditate: but whatſoever ſhall be given you in that hour, that ſpeak ye: for it is not ye that ſpeak, but the holy Ghoſt.

12 Now the brother ſhall betray the brother to death, and the father the ſon: and children ſhall riſe up againſt *their* parents, and ſhall cauſe them to be put to death.

13 And ye ſhall be hated of all men for my names ſake: but he that ſhall endure unto the end, the ſame ſhall be ſaved.

* Matth. 24. 15. 14 ¶ * But when ye ſhall ſee the abomination of deſolation, ſpoken of by Daniel the prophet, ſtanding where it ought not, (let him that readeth, underſtand) then let them that be in Judea, flee to the mountains:

15 And let him that is on the houſe-top, not go down into the houſe, neither enter therein, to take any thing out of his houſe.

16 And let him that is in the field, not turn back again for to take up his garment.

17 But wo to them that are with child, and to them that give ſuck in thoſe days.

18 And pray ye that your flight be not in the winter.

19 For in thoſe days ſhall be affliction, ſuch as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created, unto this time, neither ſhall be.

20 And except that the Lord had ſhortened thoſe days, no fleſh ſhould be ſaved: but for the elects ſake, whom he hath choſen, he hath ſhortened the days.

21 * And then, if any man ſhall ſay to you, Lo, here *is* Chriſt, or lo, *he is* there: believe *him* not. * Matth. 24. 23.

22 For falſe Chriſts, and falſe prophets ſhall riſe, and ſhall ſhew ſigns and wonders, to ſeduce, if *it were* poſſible, even the elect.

23 But take ye heed: behold, *I* have foretold you all things.

24 ¶ * But in thoſe days, after that tribulation, the ſun ſhall be darkened, and the moon ſhall not give her light: * Matth. 24. 29.

25 And the ſtars of heaven ſhall fall, and the powers that are in heaven ſhall be ſhaken.

26 And then ſhall they ſee the Son of man coming in the clouds, with great power and glory.

27 And then ſhall he ſend his angels, and ſhall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the uttermoſt part of the earth, to the uttermoſt part of heaven.

28 Now learn a parable of the fig-tree: When her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that ſummer is near:

29 So ye in like manner, when ye ſhall ſee theſe things come to paſs, know that it is nigh, *even* at the doors.

30 Verily I ſay unto you, that this generation ſhall not paſs, till all theſe things be done.

31 Heaven and earth ſhall paſs away: but my words ſhall not paſs away.

32 ¶ But of that day and *that* hour, knoweth no man, no not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

33 * Take ye heed, watch, and pray: for ye know not when the time is. * Matth. 24. 42.

34 *For the Son of man is* as a man taking a far journey, who left his houſe, and gave authority to his ſervants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch.

35 Watch ye therefore, (for ye know not when the maſter of the houſe cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cock-crowing, or in the morning)

36 Leſt coming ſuddenly, he find you ſleeping.

37 And what I ſay unto you, I ſay unto all, Watch.

CHAP. XIV.

1 *A conſpiracy againſt Chriſt. 3 Precious ointment is poured on his head by a woman. 10 Judas ſelleth his maſter for money. 12 Chriſt himſelf foretelleth how he ſhall be betrayed of one of his diſciples, 22 after the paſſover prepared, and eaten, inſtituteth his ſupper. 26 declareth aforehand the flight of all his diſciples, and Peters denial. 43 Judas betrayeth him with a kiſs. 46 He is apprehended in the garden, 55 falſely accuſed, & impiouſly*

Pretious ointment poured on Christs head.

Mark: 14

3. And being in Bethany, in the house of Simon the Leper, as he sat at meat, there came a woman, having an alabaster box of ointment of Spikenard very pretious, and she brake the box, and poured it on his head etc:

impiously condemned of the Jews counsel, & shamefully abused by them, & thrice denied of Peter.

AFter two days, was *the feast of* the passover, and of unleavened bread: and the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death.

2 But they said, Not on the feast-*day*, lest there be an uproar of the people.

3 ¶ * And being in Bethanie, in the house of Simon the leper, as he sat at meat, there came a woman, having an alabaster-box of ointment of ‡ spikenard, very precious; and she brake the box, and poured it on his head.

4 And there were some that had indignation within themselves, and said, Why was this waste of the ointment made?

5 For it might have been sold for more then three hundred ‡ pence, and have been given to the poor. And they murmured against her.

6 And Jesus said, Let her alone, why trouble ye her? she hath wrought a good work on me.

7 For ye have the poor with you always, and whensoever ye will ye may do them good: but me ye have not always.

8 She hath done what she could: she is come aforehand to anoint my body to the burying.

9 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, *this* also that she hath done shall be spoken of, for a memorial of her.

10 ¶ * And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went unto the chief priests, to betray him unto them.

11 And when they heard *it*, they were glad, and promised to give him money. And he sought how he might conveniently betray him.

12 ¶ * And the first day of unleavened bread, when they ‡ killed the passover, his disciples said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare, that thou mayest eat the passover?

13 And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and saith unto them, Go ye into the city, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him.

14 And wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the good man of the house, The Master saith, Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?

15 And he will shew you a large upper room furnished and prepared: there make ready for us.

16 And his disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover.

17 And in the evening he cometh with the twelve.

18 * And as they sat, and did eat, Jesus said, Verily I say unto you, one of you which eateth with me, shall betray me.

19 And they began to be sorrowful, and to say unto him one by one, Is it I? and another said, Is it I?

20 And he answered & said unto them, *It is* one of the twelve, that dippeth with me in the dish.

21 The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but wo to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed: good were it for that man if he had never been born.

22 ¶ * And as they did eat, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and brake *it*, and gave to them, and said, Take, eat: this is my body.

23 And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave *it* to them: and they all drank of it.

24 And he said unto them, This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many.

25 Verily I say unto you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, until that day that I drink it new in the kingdom of God.

26 ¶ And when they had sung an ‡ hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives. ‡ Or, *psalm.*

27 * And Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered. * Matth. 26. 31.

28 But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.

29 * But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be offended, yet *will* not I. * Matth. 26. 33.

30 And Jesus saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, that this day, *even* in this night before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.

31 But he spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

32 * And they came to a place which was named Gethsemane: and he saith to his disciples, Sit ye here, while I shall pray. * Matth. 26. 36.

33 And he taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and began to be sore amazed, and to be very heavy,

34 And saith unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful unto death: tarry ye here, and watch.

35 And he went forward a little, and fell on the ground, and prayed, that if it were possible the hour might pass from him.

36 And he said, Abba, Father, all things *are* possible unto thee, take away this cup from me: nevertheless, not what I will, but what thou wilt.

37 And he cometh, and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldst not thou watch one hour?

38 Watch ye & pray, lest ye enter into temptation: the spirit truly *is* ready, but ỹ flesh *is* weak.

39 And again he went away, and prayed, and spake the same words.

40 And when he returned, he found them asleep again, (for their eyes were heavy) neither wist they what to answer him.

41 And he cometh the third time, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: it is enough, the hour is come; behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

42 Rise up, let us go; lo, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

43 ¶ * And immediately, while he yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders. * Matth. 26. 47.

44 And he that betrayed him, had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he; take him, and lead *him* away safely.

45 And assoon as he was come, he goeth straightway to him, and saith, Master, master; and kissed him.

46 ¶ And they laid their hands on him, and took him.

47 And one of them that stood by, drew a sword, and smote a servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear.

48 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Are ye come out as against a thief, with swords and *with* staves, to take me?

49 I was daily with you in the temple, teaching, and ye took me not: but the scriptures must be fulfilled.

50 And they all forsook him, and fled.

51 And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about his naked body; and the young men laid hold on him.

52 And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

53 ¶ * And they led Jesus away to the high-priest: * Matth. 26. 57.

prieſt: and with him were aſſembled all the chief
priests, and the elders, and the ſcribes.
54 And Peter followed him afar off, even into
the palace of the high prieſt: and he ſat with the
ſervants, and warmed himſelf at the fire.
* Matth. 26. 59. 55 * And the chief priests, and all the councel
ſought for witneſs againſt Jeſus to put him to
death; and found none.
56 For many bare falſe witneſs againſt him,
but their witneſs agreed not together.
57 And there aroſe certain, and bare falſe wit-
neſs againſt him, ſaying,
58 We heard him ſay, I will deſtroy this tem-
ple that is made with hands, and within three
days I will build another made without hands.
59 But neither ſo did their witneſs agree to-
gether.
60 And the high prieſt ſtood up in the mids,
& aſked Jeſus, ſaying, Anſwereſt thou nothing?
What is it which theſe witneſs againſt thee?
61 But he held his peace, & anſwered nothing.
Again the high prieſt aſked him, and ſaid unto
him, Art thou the Chriſt, the ſon of the Bleſſed?
* Matth. 24. 30. 62 And Jeſus ſaid, I am: *and ye ſhall ſee the
Son of man ſitting on the right hand of power,
and coming in the clouds of heaven
63 Then the high prieſt rent his clothes, and
ſaith, What need we any further witneſſes?
64 Ye have heard the blaſphemy: what think
ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty
of death.
65 And ſome began to ſpit on him, and to co-
ver his face, and to buffet him, and to ſay unto
him, Propheſie: and the ſervants did ſtrike him
with the palms of their hands.
* Matth. 26. 69. 66 ¶ * And as Peter was beneath in the pa-
lace, there cometh one of the maids of the
high prieſt.
67 And when ſhe ſaw Peter warming himſelf,
ſhe looked upon him, and ſaid, And thou alſo
waſt with Jeſus of Nazareth.
68 But he denied, ſaying, I know not, neither
underſtand I what thou ſayeſt. And he went
out into the porch; and the cock crew.
69 And the maid ſaw him again, and began to
ſay to them that ſtood by. This is *one* of them.
70 And he denied it again. And a little after,
they that ſtood by ſaid again to Peter, Surely
thou art *one* of them: for thou art a Galilean,
and thy ſpeech agreeth *thereto*.
* Matth. 26. 75. ‡ Or, *he wept abundantly*, or, *he began to weep*. 71 But he began to curſe and to ſwear, *ſaying*,
I know not this man of whom ye ſpeak.
72 * And the ſecond time the cock crew. And
Peter called to mind the word that Jeſus ſaid
unto him, Before the cock crow twice, thou
ſhalt deny me thrice. And ‡ when he thought
thereon, he wept.

CHAP. XV.

1 Jeſus brought bound and accuſed before Pilate. 15 Upon the clamour of the common people, the murderer Barabbas is loſed, and Jeſus delivered up to be crucified: 17 He is crowned with thorns, 19 ſpit on, and mocked, 21 ſaineth in bearing his croſs, 27 hangeth between two thieves, 29 ſuffereth the triumphing reproaches of the Jews, 39 but confeſſed by the centurion to be the Son of God: 43 and is honourably buried by Joſeph.

* Matth. 27. 1. AND * ſtraightway in the morning the chief
priests held a conſultation with the elders
and ſcribes, and the whole councel, and bound
Jeſus, and carried *him* away, and delivered *him* to
Pilate.
2 And Pilate aſked him, Art thou the king of
the Jews? And he anſwering ſaid unto him,
Thou ſayeſt it.
3 And the chief prieſts accuſed him of many
things: but he anſwered nothing.
4 * And Pilate aſked him again, ſaying, An- * Matth. 27. 13.
ſwereſt thou nothing? behold how many things
they witneſs againſt thee.
5 But Jeſus yet anſwered nothing; ſo that
Pilate marvelled.
6 Now at that feaſt he releaſed unto them one
priſoner, whomſoever they deſired.
7 And there was *one* named Barabbas, which
lay bound with them that had made inſurrecti-
on with him, who had committed murder in the
inſurrection.
8 And the multitude crying aloud, began to
deſire *him to do* as he had ever done unto them.
9 But Pilate anſwered them, ſaying, Will ye
that I releaſe unto you the king of the Jews?
10 (For he knew that the chief prieſts had de-
livered him for envy)
11 But the chief prieſts moved the people, that
he ſhould rather releaſe Barabbas unto them.
12 And Pilate anſwered, and ſaid again unto
them, What will ye then that I ſhall do *unto him*
whom ye call the king of the Jews?
13 And they cried out again, Crucifie him.
14 Then Pilate ſaid unto them, Why, what
evil hath he done? And they cried out the
more exceedingly, Crucifie him.
15 ¶ And *ſo* Pilate willing to content the peo-
ple, releaſed Barabbas unto them, and delivered
Jeſus, when he had ſcourged *him*, to be crucified
16 And the ſouldiers led him away into the
hall, called Pretorium; and they call together
the whole band.
17 And they clothed him with purple, and
platted a crown of thorns, and put it about his
head,
18 And began to ſalute him, Hail king of the
Jews.
19 And they ſmote him on the head with a
reed, and did ſpit upon him, and bowing *their*
knees, worſhipped him.
20 And when they had mocked him, they took
off the purple from him, and put his own clothes
on him, and led him out to crucifie him.
21 * And they compel one Simon a Cyrenian, * Matth. 27. 32.
who paſſed by, coming out of the country, the
father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his croſs.
22 And they bring him unto the place Gol-
gotha, which is, being interpreted, the place of
a ſcull.
23 And they gave him to drink, wine mingled
with myrrhe: but he received *it* not.
24 And when they had crucified him, they
parted his garments, caſting lots upon them,
what every man ſhould take.
25 And it was the third hour, and they cru-
cified him.
26 And the ſuperſcription of his accuſation
was written over, THE KING OF THE
JEWS.
27 And with him they crucifie two thieves, the
one on his right hand, and the other on his left.
28 And the ſcripture was fulfilled, which ſaith,
* And he was numbred with the tranſgreſſours. * Iſa. 53. 12.
29 And they that paſſed by, railed on him,
wagging their heads, and ſaying, Ah, thou that
deſtroyeſt the temple, and buildeſt *it* in three
days,
30 Save thy ſelf, and come down from the croſs.
31 Likewiſe alſo the chief prieſts mocking, ſaid
among themſelves, with the ſcribes, He ſaved
others, himſelf he cannot ſave.
32 Let Chriſt the king of Iſrael deſcend now
from the croſs, that we may ſee, and believe. And
they that were crucified with him, reviled him.
33 And when the ſixth hour was come, there
was darkneſs over the whole land, until the
ninth hour.
34 And

Christs resurrection declared *Mark.16.*

1. *And when the sabbath was past Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of James and Salome, had bought sweet spices, etc:*

Luke. 1. v. 5. There was in the dayes of Herod the King of Judea a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia, and his wife was of ye daughters of Aaron and her name was Elizabeth. etc.

34 And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, * Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ran, and filled a spunge full of vineger, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, Let alone; let us see whether Elias will come to take him down.

37 And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and gave up the ghost.

38 And the vail of the temple was rent in twain, from the top to the bottom.

39 ¶ And when the centurion which stood over against him, saw that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost, he said, Truly this man was the Son of God.

40 There were also women looking on afar off: among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the less, and of Joses, and of Salome;

41 Who also when he was in Galilee, * followed him, and ministred unto him; and many other women ψ came up with him unto Jerusalem.

42 ¶ * And now when the even was come, (because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath)

43 Joseph of Arimathea, an honourable counsellour, which also waited for the kingdom of God, came, and went in boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus.

44 And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead: and calling unto him the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead.

45 And when he knew it of the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph.

46 And he bought fine linen, and took him down, and wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a sepulchre which was hewen out of a rock, and rolled a stone unto the door of the sepulchre.

47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Joses, beheld where he was laid.

CHAP. XVI.

1 An angel declareth the resurrection of Christ to three women. 9 Christ himself appeareth to Mary Magdalene, 12 to two going into the country, 14 then to the apostles, 15 whom he sendeth forth to preach the gospel, 19 and ascendeth into heaven.

AND when the sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary *the mother* of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him.

2 * And very early in the morning, the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun.

3 And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre?

4 (And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away) for it was very great.

5 * And entring into the sepulchre, they saw young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were affrighted. * John 20.11.

6 And he saith unto them, Be not affrighted: ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified: he is risen, he is not here: behold the place where they laid him.

7 But go your way, tell his disciples and Peter, that he goeth before you into Galilee: there shall ye see him, * as he said unto you. * Matth. 26. 32.

8 And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulchre; for they trembled, and were amazed: neither said they any thing to any man; for they were afraid.

9 ¶ Now when *Jesus* was risen early, the first *day* of the week, * he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, * out of whom he had cast seven devils. * John 20. 14. * Luke 8. 2.

10 *And* she went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept.

11 And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not.

12 ¶ After that, he appeared in another form * unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the country. * Luke 24. 13.

13 And they went and told *it* unto the residue: neither believed they them.

14 ¶ * Afterward he appeared unto the eleven, as they sat ‡ at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief, and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen. * Luke 24. 36. John 20. 19 ‡ Or, *together.*

15 * And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. * Matth. 28. 19.

16 He that believeth, & is baptized, shall be saved; * but he that believeth not, shall be damned. * John 3. 18. Mark 16. 16.

17 And these signs shall follow them that believe; * In my name shall they cast out devils; * they shall speak with new tongues. * Acts 2. 4.

18 * They shall take up serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; * they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover. * Acts 28. 5. * Acts 28. 8.

19 ¶ So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was * received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God. * Luke 24. 51.

20 And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, * and confirming the word with signs following. Amen. * Heb. 2. 4.

¶ The Gospel according to S. LUKE.

CHAP. I.

1 The preface of Luke to his whole gospel. 5 The conception of John the Baptist, 26 and of Christ. 39 The prophesie of Elizabeth, and of Mary concerning Christ. 57 The nativity and circumcision of John: 67 The prophesie of Zachary both of Christ, 76 and of John.

FOrasmuch as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us,

2 Even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eye-witnesses, and ministers of the word:

3 It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

4 That thou mightest know the certainty of those things wherein thou hast been instructed.

5 ¶ THere was in the days of Herod the king of Judea, a certain priest, named Zacharias, of the course of Abia: and his wife *was* of the daughters of Aaron, and her name *was* Elisabeth.

6 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord, blameless.

7 And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were *now* well stricken in years.

8 And it came to pass, that while he executed the priests office before God in the order of his course,

9 According to the custom of the priests office, his

his lot was to burn incenſe when he went into the temple of the Lord.

* Exod. 30. 7. Lev. 16. 17.

10 * And the whole multitude of the people were praying without, at the time of incenſe.

11 And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord, ſtanding on the right ſide of the altar of incenſe.

12 And when Zacharias ſaw *him*, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him.

13 But the angel ſaid unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Eliſabeth ſhall bear thee a ſon, and thou ſhalt call his name John.

14 And thou ſhalt have joy and gladneſs, and many ſhall rejoyce at his birth.

15 For he ſhall be great in the ſight of the Lord, and ſhall drink neither wine nor ſtrong drink; and he ſhall be filled with the holy Ghoſt, even from his mothers womb.

* Mal. 4. 6.

16 * And many of the children of Iſrael ſhall he turn to the Lord their God.

17 And he ſhall go before him in the ſpirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the diſobedient ‡ to the wiſdom of the juſt, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

‡ Or, *by.*

18 And Zacharias ſaid unto the angel, Whereby ſhall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well ſtricken in years.

19 And the angel anſwering ſaid unto him, I am Gabriel, that ſtand in the preſence of God: and am ſent to ſpeak unto thee, and to ſhew thee theſe glad tidings.

20 And behold, thou ſhalt be dumb, and not able to ſpeak, until the day that theſe things ſhall be performed, becauſe thou believeſt not my words, which ſhall be fulfilled in their ſeaſon.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried ſo long in the temple.

22 And when he came out, he could not ſpeak unto them: and they perceived that he had ſeen a viſion in the temple: for he beckned unto them, and remained ſpeechleſs.

23 And it came to paſs, that aſſoon as the days of his miniſtration were accompliſhed, he departed to his own houſe.

24 And after thoſe days his wife Eliſabeth conceived, and hid her ſelf five moneths, ſaying,

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the days wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproach among men.

26 And in the ſixth moneth, the angel Gabriel was ſent from God, unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth,

27 To a virgin eſpouſed to a man, whoſe name was Joſeph, of the houſe of David; and the virgins name *was* Mary.

28 And the angel came in unto her, and ſaid, Hail, thou that art ‡ highly favoured, the Lord *is* with thee: bleſſed *art* thou among women.

‡ Or, *graciouſly accepted*, or *much graced*: See v. 30.

29 And when ſhe ſaw him, ſhe was troubled at his ſaying, and caſt in her mind what manner of ſalutation this ſhould be.

30 And the angel ſaid unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou haſt found favour with God.

* Iſa. 7. 14. Matt. 1. 21.

31 * And behold, thou ſhalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a ſon, and ſhalt call his name Jeſus.

32 He ſhall be great, and ſhall be called the Son of the Higheſt; and the Lord God ſhall give unto him the throne of his father David.

* Dan. 7. 14. Mic. 4. 7.

33 * And he ſhall reign over the houſe of Jacob for ever, and of his kingdom there ſhall be no end.

34 Then ſaid Mary unto the angel, How ſhall this be, ſeeing I know not a man?

35 And the angel anſwered and ſaid unto her, The holy Ghoſt ſhall come upon thee, and the power of the Higheſt ſhall overſhadow thee: therefore alſo that holy thing which ſhall be born of thee, ſhall be called the Son of God.

36 And behold, thy couſin Eliſabeth, ſhe hath alſo conceived a ſon in her old age: and this is the ſixth moneth with her, who was called barren

37 For with God nothing ſhall be unpoſſible.

38 And Mary ſaid, Behold the handmaid of the Lord, be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her.

39 And Mary aroſe in thoſe days, and went into the hill-countrey with haſte, into a city of Juda,

40 And entred into the houſe of Zacharias, and ſaluted Eliſabeth.

41 And it came to paſs, that when Eliſabeth heard the ſalutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb: and Eliſabeth was filled with the holy Ghoſt.

42 And ſhe ſpake out with a loud voice, and ſaid, Bleſſed *art* thou among women, and bleſſed *is* the fruit of thy womb.

43 And whence *is* this to me, that the mother of my Lord ſhould come to me?

44 For lo, aſſoon as the voice of thy ſalutation ſounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy.

45 And bleſſed *is* ſhe ‡ that believed: for there ſhall be a performance of thoſe things which were told her from the Lord.

‡ Or, *which believed that there.*

46 ¶ And Mary ſaid, My ſoul doth magnifie the Lord,

47 And my ſpirit hath rejoyced in God my Saviour.

48 For he hath regarded the low eſtate of his handmaiden: for behold, from henceforth all generations ſhall call me bleſſed.

49 For he that is mighty hath done to me great things, and holy *is* his name.

50 And his mercy *is* on them that fear him, from generation to generation.

51 * He hath ſhewed ſtrength with his arm, * he hath ſcattered the proud, in the imagination of their hearts.

* Iſa. 51. 9. * Pſ. 33. 10. * 1 Sam. 2. 6.

52 * He hath put down the mighty from *their* ſeats, and exalted them of low degree.

* Pſal. 34. 10.

53 * He hath filled the hungry with good things, and the rich he hath ſent empty away.

* Jer. 31. 3, 20.

54 He hath holpen his ſervant Iſrael, * in remembrance of *his* mercy,

* Gen. 17. 19. Pſ. 132. 11.

55 * As he ſpake to our fathers, to Abraham and to his ſeed for ever.

56 And Mary abode with her about three moneths, and returned to her own houſe.

57 ¶ Now Eliſabeths full time came, that ſhe ſhould be delivered; and ſhe brought forth a ſon.

58 And her neighbours and her couſins heard how the Lord had ſhewed great mercy upon her; and they rejoyced with her.

59 And it came to paſs that on the eighth day they came to circumciſe the child; and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

60 And his mother anſwered and ſaid, Not ſo; but he ſhall be called John.

61 And they ſaid unto her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name.

62 And they made ſigns to his father, how he would have him called.

63 And he aſked for a writing-table, and wrote, ſaying, His name is John. And they marvelled all.

64 And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue *looſed*, and he ſpake, and praiſed God.

65 And fear came on all that dwelt round about

The Angells Salutation to Mary Luke: 1.

v. 28: And the Angell came in unto her and said Hail thou that art highly favoured the Lord is with thee etc:

Mary saluteth Elizabeth. Luk. 1.

v. 39. And Mary arose in those dayes and went into the Hill Country with haſt etc.

The Angells relation to the Shepheards Lu. 2

v. 16: And they came with haste and found Mary and Joseph and the Babe lying in a Manger. etc.

Christ is circumcised Luke 2.

And when eight dayes were accomplished for ye circumcising etc: 1 2

The Purification of Mary. Luke 2 v 22.

And when the dayes of her Purification according to the Law of Moses &c

about them: and all these ‡ sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill-country of Judea.
66 And all they that had heard *them*, laid them up in their hearts, saying, What manner of child shall this be? And the hand of the Lord was with him.
67 ¶ And his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying,
68 Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, for he hath visited and redeemed his people,
69 * And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us, in the house of his servant David;
70 * As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been since the world began,
71 That we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us.
72 To perform the mercy *promised* to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant:
73 * The oath which he sware to our father Abraham,
74 That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hands of our enemies, might serve him without fear,
75 In holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life.
76 And thou child shalt be called the prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord, to prepare his ways;
77 To give knowledge of salvation unto his people, ‡ by the remission of their sins,
78 Through the ‡ tender mercy of our God; whereby the ‡ day-spring from on high hath visited us,
79 To give light to them that sit in darkness, and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.
80 And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto Israel.

CHAP. II.

1 *Augustus taxeth all the Roman empire.* 6 *The nativity of Christ.* 8 *One angel relateth it to the shepherds* 13 *Many sing praises to God for it.* 21 *Christ is circumcised.* 22 *Mary purified.* 28 *Simeon and Anna prophesie of Christ:* 40 *who increaseth in wisdom,* 46 *questioneth in the temple with the doctours,* 51 *and is obedient to his parents.*

AND it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Cesar Augustus, that all the world should be ‡ taxed.
2 (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governour of Syria)
3 And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city.
4 And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, unto * the city of David, which is called Bethlehem (because he was of the house and lineage of David)
5 To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child.
6 And so it was, that while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered.
7 And she brought forth her first-born son, and wrapped him in swadling clothes, and laid him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inne.
8 ¶ And there were in the same countrey shepherds abiding in the field, keeping ‡ watch over their flock by night.
9 And lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them; and they were sore afraid.
10 And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people.
11 For unto you is born this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.
12 And this *shall be* a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swadling clothes lying in a manger.
13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying,
14 Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will towards men.
15 And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us.
16 And they came with haste, and found Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger.
17 And when they had seen *it*, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child.
18 And all they that heard *it*, wondred at those things which were told them by the shepherds.
19 But Mary kept all these things, and pondered *them* in her heart.
20 And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.
21 * And when eight days were accomplished for the circumcising of the child, his name was called * JESUS, which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb. * Gen. 17. 12. * Matth. 1. 21.
22 And when the days of her purification according to the law of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present *him* to the Lord,
23 (As it is written in the law of the Lord, * Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord) * Exod. 13. 2.
24 And to offer a sacrifice according to * that which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtle-doves, or two young pigeons. * Numb. 18. 15. * Levit. 12. 2, 6
25 And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name *was* Simeon; and the same man *was* just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the holy Ghost was upon him.
26 And it was revealed unto him by the holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lords Christ.
27 And he came by the spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law,
28 Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said,
29 Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word.
30 For mine eyes have seen thy salvation:
31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people:
32 A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.
33 And Joseph and his mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him.
34 And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this *child* is set for the * fall and rising again of many in Israel; and for a sign which shall be spoken against: * Isa. 8. 14. Rom. 9. 32.
35 (Yea, a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also) that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.
36 ¶ And there was one Anna a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser; she was of a great age, and had lived with an husband seven years from her virginity:

37 And

37 And she *was* a widow of about fourscore and four years: which departed not from the temple, but served God with fastings and prayers night and day.

38 And she coming in that instant, gave thanks likewise unto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for redemption in ‡ Jerusalem.

‡ Or, *Israel.*

39 And when they had performed all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city Nazareth.

40 And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon him.

41 Now his parents went to Jerusalem * every year at the feast of the passover.

* Deut. 16. 1.

42 And when he was twelve year old, they went up to Jerusalem, after the custom of the feast.

43 And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and Joseph and his mother knew not *of it.*

44 But they supposing him to have been in the company, went a days journey; and they sought him among *their* kinsfolk and acquaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him.

46 And it came to pass, that after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions.

47 And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers.

48 And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing.

49 And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my Fathers business?

50 And they understood not the saying which he spake unto them.

51 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them: but his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.

52 And Jesus increased in wisdom and ‡ stature, and in favour with God and man.

‡ Or, *age.*

CHAP. III.

1 The preaching and baptism of John: 15 His testimony of Christ. 20 Herod imprisoneth John. 21 Christ baptized, receiveth testimony from heaven. 23 The age and genealogie of Christ from Joseph upwards.

NOw in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being governour of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Iturea, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the tetrarch of Abilene,

2 Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness.

3 * And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins;

* Matth. 3. 1.

4 As it is written in the book of the words of Esaias the prophet, saying, * The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

* Is. 40. 3.

5 Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low; and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough ways shall be made smooth;

6 And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

7 Then said he to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of him, * O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

* Matth. 3. 7.

8 Bring forth therefore fruits ‡ worthy of repentance, and begin not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to *our* father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

‡ Or, *meet.*

9 And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down and cast into the fire.

10 And the people asked him, saying, What shall we do then?

11 He answereth and saith unto them, * He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.

* Jam. 2. 15. 1 John 3. 17.

12 Then came also publicanes to be baptized, and said unto him, Master, what shall we do?

13 And he said unto them, Exact no more than that which is appointed you.

14 And the souldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we do? And he said unto them, ‡ Do violence to no man, neither accuse *any* falsely, and be content with your ‡ wages.

‡ Or, *no man fear.*

15 And as the people were † in expectation, and all men ‡ mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ or not;

† Or, *suspence.* ‡ Or, *debated.*

16 John answered, saying unto them all, * I indeed baptize you with water; but one mighter then I cometh, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose: he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire.

‡ Or, *feed,* or *debate.* * Matth. 3. 11.

17 Whose fan *is* in his hand, and he will throughly purge his floor, and will gather the wheat into his garner; but the chaff he will burn with fire unquenchable.

18 And many other things in *his* exhortation preached he unto the people.

19 * But Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by him for Herodias his brother Philips wife, and for all the evils which Herod had done,

* Matth. 14. 3.

20 Added yet this above all, that he shut up John in prison.

21 ¶ Now when all the people were baptized, * it came to pass that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened:

* Matth. 3. 13.

22 And the holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well pleased.

23 And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was *the son* of Heli,

24 Which was *the son* of Matthat, which was *the son* of Levi, which was *the son* of Melchi, which was *the son* of Janna, which was *the son* of Joseph,

25 Which was *the son* of Mattathias, which was *the son* of Amos, which was *the son* of Naum, which was *the son* of Esli, which was *the son* of Nagge,

26 Which was *the son* of Maath which was *the son* of Mattathias, which was *the son* of Semei, which was *the son* of Joseph, which was *the son* of Juda,

27 Which was *the son* of Joanna, which was *the son* of Rhesa, which was *the son* of Zorobabel, which was *the son* of Salathiel, which was *the son* of Neri,

28 Which was *the son* of Melchi, which was *the son* of Addi, which was *the son* of Cosam, which was *the son* of Elmodam, which was *the son* of Er,

29 Which was *the son* of Jose, which was *the son*

Christ questions the Doctors. Luk: 2. 46.

And after three dayes they found him in the Temple ..etc.

son of Eliezer, which was the son of Jorim, which was the son of Matthat, which was the son of Levi,

30 Which was the son of Simeon, which was the son of Juda, which was the son of Joseph, which was the son of Jonan, which was the son of Eliakim,

31 Which was the son of Melea, which was the son of Menan, which was the son of Mattatha, which was the son of Nathan, which was the son of David,

32 Which was the son of Jesse, which was the son of Obed, which was the son of Booz, which was the son of Salmon, which was the son of Naasson,

33 Which was the son of Aminadab, which was the son of Aram, which was the son of Esrom, which was the son of Phares, which was the son of Juda,

34 Which was the son of Jacob, which was the son of Isaac, which was the son of Abraham, which was the son of Thara, which was the son of Nachor,

35 Which was the son of Saruch, which was the son of Ragau, which was the son of Phaleg, which was the son of Heber, which was the son of Sala,

36 Which was the son of Cainan, which was the son of Arphaxad, which was the son of Sem, which was the son of Noe, which was the son of Lamech,

37 Which was the son of Mathusala, which was the son of Enoch, which was the son of Jared, which was the son of Maleleel, which was the son of Cainan,

38 Which was the son of Enos, which was the son of Seth, which was the son of Adam, which was the son of God.

CHAP. IV.

1 *The temptation and fasting of Christ:* 13 *he overcometh the devil;* 14 *beginneth to preach;* 16 *the people of Nazareth admire his gracious words:* 33 *he cureth one possessed of a devil,* 38 *Peters mother in law,* 40 *and divers other sick persons.* 41 *The devils acknowledge Christ, and are reproved for it.* 43 *He preacheth through the cities.*

AND * Jesus being full of the holy Ghost, returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness,

2 Being fourty days tempted of the devil; and in those days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungred.

3 And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread.

4 And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written that man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.

5 And the devil taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time.

6 And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me, and to whomsoever I will, I give it.

7 If thou therefore wilt ‡ worship me, all shall be thine.

8 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

9 And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thy self down from hence.

10 For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee:

11 And in *their* hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

12 And Jesus answering, said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

13 And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.

14 ¶ And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about.

15 And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.

16 ¶ And he came to * Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath-day, and stood up for to reade. * Matth. 13. 54.

17 And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias, and when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,

18 * The Spirit of the Lord *is* upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor, he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, * Isa. 61. 1.

19 To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.

20 And he closed the book, and he gave *it* again to the minister, and sat down: and the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him.

21 And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears.

22 And all bare him witness, and wondred at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Josephs son?

23 And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thy self; whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in thy countrey.

24 And he said, Verily I say unto you, No * prophet is accepted in his own countrey. * Matth. 13. 57.

25 But I tell you of a truth, * many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six moneths, when great famine was throughout all the land: * 1 King. 17. 9.

26 But unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta *a city* of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow.

27 * And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet, and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian. * 2 King. 5. 14.

28 And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath,

29 And rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the ‡ brow of the hill, (whereon their city was built,) that they might cast him down headlong. ‡ Or, *edge.*

30 But he passing through the midst of them, went his way:

31 And came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the sabbath-days.

32 And they were astonished at his doctrine; * for his word was with power. * Matth. 7. 29.

33 ¶ * And in the synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an unclean devil, and cried out with a loud voice, * Mark 1. 23.

34 Saying, ‡ Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the holy one of God. ‡ Or, *away.*

35 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the devil had thrown him in the midst, he came out of him, and hurt him not.

36 And they were all amazed, and ſpake among themſelves, ſaying, What a word *is* this? for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean ſpirits, and they come out.

37 And the fame of him went out into every place of the country round about.

* Matth. 8. 14. 38 ¶ * And he aroſe out of the ſynagogue, and entred into Simons houſe: and Simons wives mother was taken with a great fever: and they beſought him for her.

39 And he ſtood over her, and rebuked the fever, and it left her. And immediately ſhe aroſe, and miniſtred unto them.

40 ¶ Now when the ſun was ſetting, all they that had any ſick with divers diſeaſes, brought them unto him: and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them.

* Mark 1. 34. 41 * And devils alſo came out of many, crying out, and ſaying, Thou art Chriſt the Son of God. And he rebuking them, ſuffered them not ‡ to ſpeak; for they knew that he was Chriſt.

‡ Or, *to ſay that they knew him to be the Chriſt.*

42 And when it was day, he departed and went into a deſert place: and the people ſought him, and came unto him, and ſtayed him, that he ſhould not depart from them.

43 And he ſaid unto them, I muſt preach the kingdom of God to other cities alſo: for therefore am I ſent.

44 And he preached in the ſynagogues of Galilee.

CHAP. V.

1 *Chriſt teacheth the people out of Peters ſhip: 4 in a miraculous taking of fiſhes, ſheweth how he will make him and his partners fiſhers of men: 12 cleanſeth the leper: 16 prayeth in the wilderneſs: 18 healeth one ſick of the the palſie: 27 calleth Matthew the publicane: 29 eateth with ſinners, as being the phyſician of ſouls: 34 foretelleth the faſtings and afflictions of the apoſtles after his aſcenſion: 36 and likeneth faint-hearted and weak diſciples to old bottles, and worn garments.*

* Matth. 4. 18. AND * it came to paſs, that as the people preſſed upon him to hear the word of God, he ſtood by the lake of Gennesareth:

2 And ſaw two ſhips ſtanding by the lake: but the fiſhermen were gone out of them, and were waſhing their nets.

3 And he entred into one of the ſhips, which was Simons, and prayed him that he would thruſt out a little from the land: and he ſat down, and taught the people out of the ſhip.

4 Now when he had left ſpeaking, he ſaid unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.

5 And Simon anſwering ſaid unto him, Maſter, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheleſs at thy word I will let down the net.

6 And when they had this done, they incloſed a great multitude of fiſhes, and their net brake.

7 And they beckened unto *their* partners which were in the other ſhip, that they ſhould come and help them. And they came and filled both the ſhips, ſo that they began to ſink.

8 When Simon Peter ſaw *it*, he fell down at Jeſus knees, ſaying, Depart from me, for I am a ſinful man, O Lord.

9 For he was aſtoniſhed, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fiſhes which they had taken:

10 And ſo *was* alſo James and John the ſons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jeſus ſaid unto Simon, Fear not; from henceforth thou ſhalt catch men.

* Matth. 8. 2. 11 And when they had brought their ſhips to land, they forſook all and followed him.

12 ¶ * And it came to paſs, when he was in a certain city, behold, a man full of leproſie: who ſeeing Jeſus, fell on *his* face and beſought him, ſaying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canſt make me clean.

13 And he put forth *his* hand, and touched him, ſaying, I will: be thou clean. And immediately the leproſie departed from him.

14 And he charged him to tell no man: but go and ſhew thy ſelf to the prieſt, and offer for thy cleanſing, according as Moſes commanded, for a teſtimony unto them.

15 But ſo much the more went there a fame abroad of him: and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities.

16 ¶ And he withdrew himſelf into the wilderneſs, and prayed.

17 And it came to paſs on a certain day, as he was teaching, that there were Phariſees and doctors of the law ſitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judea, and Jeruſalem: and the power of the Lord was *preſent* to heal them.

18 ¶ * And behold, men brought in a bed a man which was taken with a palſie; and they ſought means to bring him in, and to lay *him* before him. * Matth. 9. 2.

19 And when they could not find by what way they might bring him in, becauſe of the multitude, they went upon the houſe-top, and let him down through the tiling with *his* couch, into the midſt before Jeſus.

20 And when he ſaw their faith, he ſaid unto him, Man, thy ſins are forgiven thee.

21 And the ſcribes and the Phariſees began to reaſon, ſaying, Who is this which ſpeaketh bla-ſphemies? Who can forgive ſins but God alone?

22 But when Jeſus perceived their thoughts, he anſwering ſaid unto them, What reaſon ye in your hearts?

23 Whether is eaſier to ſay, Thy ſins be forgiven thee, or to ſay, Riſe up and walk?

24 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power upon earth to forgive ſins, (he ſaid unto the ſick of the palſie) I ſay unto thee, Ariſe, and take up thy couch, and go into thine houſe.

25 And immediately he roſe up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own houſe, glorifying God.

26 And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, ſaying, We have ſeen ſtrange things to day.

27 ¶ * And after theſe things he went forth, & ſaw a publicane, named Levi, ſitting at the receit of cuſtome: and he ſaid unto him, Follow me. * Matth. 9. 9.

28 And he left all, roſe up, and followed him.

29 And Levi made him a great feaſt in his own houſe; and there was a great company of publicanes, and of others that ſat down with them.

30 But their ſcribes and Phariſees murmured againſt his diſciples, ſaying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicanes and ſinners?

31 And Jeſus anſwering, ſaid unto them, They that are whole, need not a phyſician; but they that are ſick.

32 I came not to call the righteous, but ſinners to repentance.

33 ¶ And they ſaid unto him, * Why do the diſciples of John faſt often, and make prayers, and likewiſe *the diſciples* of the Phariſees: but thine eat and drink? * Matth. 9. 14.

34 And he ſaid unto them, Can ye make the children of the bride-chamber faſt, while the bridegroom is with them?

35 But the days will come, when the bride-

¶ groom

II.

AND IN JESUS CHRIST HIS ONELY SON OUR LORD .

V

HE DESCENDED INTO HELL, THE THIRD DAY HE ROSE AGAINE FROM THE DEAD.

VI

HE ASCENDED INTO HEAVEN, AND SITTETH ON THE RIGHT HAND OF GOD Y FATHER ALMIGHTY.

VII

FROM THENCE HE SHALL COME TO IUDGE THE QUICK AND THE DEAD.

VIII

I BELEVE IN THE HOLY GHOST .

IX

THE HOLY CATHOLICKE CHURCH.

X

THE COMMUNION OF SAINTS THE FOR-
GIUENES OF SINS.

XII

AND THE LIFE EVERLASTING AMEN.

groom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days.

36 ¶ And he spake also a parable unto them, No man putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old: if otherwise, then both the new maketh a rent, and the piece that was *taken* out of the new, agreeth not with the old

37 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish.

38 But new wine must be put into new bottles; and both are preserved.

39 No man also having drunk old *wine*, straightway desireth new: for he saith, The old is better.

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ reproveth the Pharisees blindness about the observation of the sabbath by scripture, reason & miracle, 13 chuseth twelve apostles, 17 healeth the diseased, 20 preacheth to his disciples before the people of blessings and curses, 27 how we must love our enemies, 46 and joyn the obedience of good works to the hearing of the word, left in the evil day of temptation, we fall, like an house built upon the face of the earth without any foundation

AND * it came to pass on the second sabbath after the first, that he went through the corn-fields: and his disciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing *them* in *their* hands.

2 And certain of the Pharisees said unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawful to do on the sabbath-days?

3 And Jesus answering them, said, Have ye not read so much as this, what David did, when himself was an hungred, and they which were with him:

4 How he went into the house of God, and did take and eat the shew-bread, and gave also to them that were with him, which is not lawful to eat, but for the priests alone?

5 And he said unto them, That the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

6 * And it came to pass also on another sabbath, that he entred into the synagogue, and taught: and there was a man whose right hand was withered.

7 And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath-day: that they might find an accusation against him.

8 But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the mids. And he arose, and stood forth.

9 Then said Jesus unto them, I will ask you one thing. Is it lawful on the sabbath-days to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to destroy *it*?

10 And looking round about upon them all, he said unto the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he did so: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

11 And they were filled with madness; and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus.

12 And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

13 ¶ And when it was day, he called unto him his disciples: * and of them he chose twelve, whom also he named Apostles:

14 Simon (whom he also named Peter) and Andrew his brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew,

15 Matthew and Thomas, James *the son* of Alpheus, and Simon called Zelotes,

16 And Judas * *the brother* of James, and Judas Iscariot, which also was the traitour.

17 ¶ And he came down with them, and stood in the plain, and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Judea and Jerusalem, and from the sea-coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases;

18 And they that were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed.

19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went vertue out of him, and healed them all.

20 ¶ And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said, * Blessed *be* ye poor: for yours is the kingdom of God. * Matth. 5.3.

21 Blessed *are* ye that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. Blessed *are* ye that weep now: for ye shall laugh.

22 Blessed are ye when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you *from their company*, and shall reproach *you*, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of mans sake.

23 Rejoyce ye in that day, and leap for joy: for behold, your reward *is* great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets

24 * But wo unto you that are rich: for ye have received your consolation. * Amos. 6.1.

25 * Wo unto you that are full: for ye shall hunger. Wo unto you that laugh now: for ye shall mourn and weep. * Isa. 65.13.

26 Wo unto you when all men shall speak well of you: for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

27 ¶ * But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you: * Matth. 5.44

28 Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you. * Matth. 5.39.

29 * And unto him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheek, offer also the other: * and him that taketh away thy cloke, forbid not *to take thy* coat also. * 1 Cor. 6.7.

30 Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods, ask *them* not again.

31 * And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise. * Tob. 4.15.

32 * For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them * Matt. 7.12. * Matth. 5.46.

33 And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same.

34 * And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again. * Matth. 5.42.

35 But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again: and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful, and *to* the evil.

36 Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful.

37 * Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: * forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: * Matth. 7.1.

38 Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosome: for with the same measure that ye mete withall, it shall be measured to you again. * Matth. 15.14. * Matth. 10.24.

39 And he spake a parable unto them, * Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch? ‡ Or, *shall be perfected*

40 * The disciple is not above his master: but every one ‡ that is perfect shall be as his master. * Matth. *as his master.*

41 * And why beholdest thou the mote that is * Matth. 7.3.

in thy brothers eye, but perceiveſt not the beam that is in thine own eye?

42 Either how canſt thou ſay to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thy ſelf beholdeſt not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, caſt out firſt the beam out of thine own eye, and then ſhalt thou ſee clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brothers eye.

* Matth. 7.16. 43 * For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit: neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

44 For every tree is known by his own fruit: for of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble-buſh gather they grapes.

45 A good man out of the good treaſure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is good: and an evil man out of the evil treaſure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth ſpeaketh.

* Matth. 7.21. 46 ¶ * And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I ſay?

47 Whoſoever cometh unto me, and heareth my ſayings, and doeth them, I will ſhew you to whom he is like.

48 He is like a man which built an houſe, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood aroſe, the ſtream beat vehemently upon that houſe, and could not ſhake it: for it was founded upon a rock.

49 But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an houſe upon the earth, againſt which the ſtream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell, and the ruine of that houſe was great.

CHAP. VII.

1 Chriſt findeth a greater faith in the centurion, a Gentile, then in any of the Jews; 10 healeth his ſervant being abſent; 11 raiſeth from death the widows ſon at Nain; 19 anſwereth Johns meſſengers with the declaration of his miracles; 24 teſtifieth to the people what opinion he held of John; 30 inveigheth againſt the Jews, who with neither the manners of John nor of Jeſus could be won; 36 and ſheweth by occaſion of Mary Magdalene, how he is a friend to ſinners, not to maintain them in ſins, but to forgive them their ſins, upon their faith and repentance.

NOw when he had ended all his ſayings in the audience of the people, * he entred into Capernaum. * Matth. 8.5.

2 And a certain centurions ſervant, who was dear unto him, was ſick and ready to die.

3 And when he heard of Jeſus, he ſent unto him the elders of the Jews, beſeeching him that he would come and heal his ſervant.

4 And when they came to Jeſus, they beſought him inſtantly, ſaying, That he was worthy for whom he ſhould do this.

5 For he loveth our nation, and he hath built us a ſynagogue.

6 Then Jeſus went with them. And when he was now not far from the houſe, the centurion ſent friends to him, ſaying unto him, Lord, trouble not thy ſelf, for I am not worthy that thou ſhouldeſt enter under my roof.

7 Wherefore neither thought I my ſelf worthy to come unto thee: but ſay in a word, and my ſervant ſhall be healed.

8 For I alſo am a man ſet under authority, having under me ſouldiers, and I ſay unto one, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my ſervant, Do this, and he doeth it.

9 When Jeſus heard theſe things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and ſaid unto the people that followed him, I ſay unto you, I have not found ſo great faith, no, not in Iſrael.

10 And they that were ſent, returning to the houſe, found the ſervant whole that had been ſick.

11 ¶ And it came to paſs the day after, that he went into a city called Nain; and many of his diſciples went with him, and much people.

12 Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only ſon of his mother, and ſhe was a widow: and much people of the city was with her.

13 And when the Lord ſaw her, he had compaſſion on her, and ſaid unto her, Weep not.

14 And he came and touched the ‡ bier, (and they that bare him ſtood ſtill) and he ſaid, Young man, I ſay unto thee, ariſe. ‡ Or, coffin.

15 And he that was dead ſat up, and began to ſpeak: and he delivered him to his mother.

16 And there came a fear on all: and they glorified God, ſaying, That a great prophet is riſen up among us; and, That God hath viſited his people.

17 And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Judea, and throughout all the region round about.

18 * And the diſciples of John ſhewed him of all theſe things. * Matth. 11.2.

19 ¶ And John calling unto him two of his diſciples, ſent *them* unto Jeſus, ſaying, Art thou he that ſhould come, or look we for another?

20 When the men were come unto him, they ſaid, John Baptiſt hath ſent us unto thee, ſaying, Art thou he that ſhould come, or look we for another?

21 And in that ſame hour he cured many of *their* infirmities and plagues, and of evil ſpirits, and unto many that were blind he gave ſight.

22 Then Jeſus anſwering, ſaid unto them, Go your way, and tell John what things ye have ſeen and heard, how that the blind ſee, the lame walk, the lepers are cleanſed, the deaf hear, the dead are raiſed, to the poor the goſpel is preached.

23 And bleſſed is he whoſoever ſhall not be offended in me.

24 ¶ And when the meſſengers of John were departed, he began to ſpeak unto the people concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderneſs for to ſee? A reed ſhaken with the wind?

25 But what went ye out for to ſee? A man clothed in ſoft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeouſly apparelled, and live delicately, are in kings courts.

26 But what went ye out for to ſee? A prophet? Yea, I ſay unto you, and much more then a prophet.

27 This is he of whom it is written, Behold, I ſend my meſſenger before thy face, which ſhall prepare thy way before thee.

28 For I ſay unto you, Among thoſe that are born of women, there is not a greater prophet then John the Baptiſt: but he that is leaſt in the kingdom of God, is greater then he.

29 And all the people that heard *him*, and the publicanes juſtified God, being baptized with the baptiſm of John.

30 But the Phariſees, and lawyers, ‡ rejected the counſel of God ‡ againſt themſelves, being not baptized of him. ‡ Or, fruſtrated. ‡ Or, within themſelves.

31 ¶ And the Lord ſaid, * Whereunto then ſhall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like?

32 They are like unto children ſitting in the market-place, and calling one to another, and ſay- * Matth. 11.16

Christ raiseth the Widdows son. Luk. 7.

v. 14. And he came and touched the Bier etc.
v. 15 And he that was dead sate up etc.

Magdalen Converted. Luke. 7.

44 And he said unto Simon seest thou this Woman etc: Shee hath washed my feete with Teares and wiped them with the Haires of her head. 45 Kissed my feete etc: 46 this woman hath anointed my feete with ointment etc:

saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept.

33 For John the Baptist came neither eating bread, nor drinking wine; and ye say, He hath a devil.

34 The Son of man is come eating and drinking; and ye say, Behold, a gluttonous man, and a wine-bibber, a friend to publicanes & sinners.

35 But wisdom is justified of all her children.

36 ¶ * And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat.

37 And behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster-box of ointment,

38 And stood at his feet behind him weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe *them* with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed *them* with the ointment.

39 Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw *it*, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who, and what manner of woman *this is* that toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

40 And Jesus answering, said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on.

41 There was a certain creditour, which had two debters: the one ought five hundred ‡ pence, and the other fifty.

42 And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most?

43 Simon answered and said, I suppose that he to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged.

44 And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entred into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped *them* with the hairs of her head.

45 Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss my feet.

46 Mine head with oyl thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment.

47 Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little.

48 And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven.

49 And they that sat at meat with him began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins also?

50 And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Women minister unto Christ of their substance. 4 Christ, after he had preached from place to place, attended with his apostles, propoundeth the parable of the sower, 16 and of the candle, 21 declareth who are his mother, and brethren, 22 rebuketh the winds, 26 casteth the legion of devils out of the man, into the herd of swine, 37 is rejected of the Gadarenes, 43 healeth the woman of her bloudy issue, 49 and raiseth from death Jairus daughter.

AND it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every city and village, preaching, and shewing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God: and the twelve *were* with him;

2 And certain women which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, * out of whom went seven devils,

3 And Joanna the wife of Chuza Herods steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministred unto him of their substance.

4 ¶ * And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, he spake by a parable: * Matth. 13.2.

5 A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way side, and it was troden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it.

6 And some fell upon a rock, and assoon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture.

7 And some fell among thorns, and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it.

8 And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit an hundred-fold. And when he had said these things, he cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

9 And his disciples asked him, saying, What might this parable be?

10 And he said, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God: but to others in parables; that seeing they might not see, and hearing they might not understand.

11 * Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God. * Matth. 13. 18.

12 Those by the way-side, are they that hear; then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved.

13 They on the rock, *are they*, which when they hear, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away.

14 And that which fell among thorns, are they, which when they have heard, go forth, and are choked with cares and riches, and pleasures of *this* life, and bring no fruit to perfection.

15 But that on the good ground, are they, which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep *it*, and bring forth fruit with patience.

16 ¶ * No man when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth *it* under a bed: but setteth it on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light. * Matth. 5.15.

17 * For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest: neither any thing hid, that shall not be known, and come abroad. * Matth. 10.26.

18 Take heed therefore how ye hear: * for whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he ‡ seemeth to have. * Matth. 13.12. ‡ Or, *thinketh that he hath.*

19 ¶ * Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come at him for the preass. * Matth. 12. 46.

20 And it was told him *by certain*, which said, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without desiring to see thee.

21 And he answered and said unto them, My mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God, and do it.

22 ¶ * Now it came to pass on a certain day, that he went into a ship with his disciples, and he said unto them, Let us go over unto the other side of the lake. And they launched forth. * Matth. 8.23.

23 But as they sailed, he fell asleep: and there came down a storm of wind on the lake, and they were filled *with water*, and were in jeopardy.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish. Then he arose, and rebuked the wind and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calm.

25 And he said unto them, Where is your faith? and they being afraid, wondred, saying one to another, What manner of man is this? for he com-

commandeth even the winds and water, and they obey him.

* Matth. 8.28. 26 ¶ * And they arrived at the countrey of the Gadarenes, which is over against Galilee.

27 And when he went forth to land, there met him out of the city a certain man which had devils long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in *any* house, but in the tombs.

28 When he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou son of God most high? I beseech thee torment me not.

29 (For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him: & he was kept bound with chains, and in fetters; and he brake the bands, and was driven of the devil into the wilderness.)

30 And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many devils were entred into him.

31 And they besought him that he would not command them to go out into the deep.

32 And there was there an herd of many swine feeding on the mountain: and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into them. And he suffered them.

33 Then went the devils out of the man, and entred into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked.

34 When they that fed them saw what was done, they fled, and went and told *it* in the city, and in the countrey.

35 Then they went out to see what was done; and came to Jesus, and found the man out of whom the devils were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

36 They also which saw *it*, told them by what means he that was possessed of the devils, was healed.

37 ¶ Then the whole multitude of the countrey of the Gadarenes round about, besought him to depart from them; for they were taken with great fear: and he went up into the ship, and returned back again.

38 Now the man out of whom the devils were departed, besought him that he might be with him: but Jesus sent him away, saying,

39 Return to thine own house, and shew how great things God hath done unto thee. And he went his way, and published throughout the whole city, how great things Jesus had done unto him.

40 And it came to pass, that when Jesus was returned, the people *gladly* received him: for they were all waiting for him.

*Mat. 9.18 41 ¶ * And behold, there came a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue: and he fell down at Jesus feet, and besought him that he would come into his house:

42 For he had one onely daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay a dying. (But as he went, the people thronged him.

43 ¶ And a woman having an issue of bloud twelve years, which had spent all her living upon physicians, neither could be healed of any,

44 Came behind him, and touched the border of his garment: and immediately her issue of bloud stanched.

45 And Jesus said, Who touched me? When all denied, Peter, and they that were with him, said, Master, the multitude throng thee, and preass *thee*, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

46 And Jesus said, Some body hath touched me: for I perceive that vertue is gone out of me.

47 And when the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she declared unto him before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.

48 And he said unto her, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace.)

49 ¶ While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogues *house*, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the Master.

50 But when Jesus heard *it*, he answered him, saying, Fear not: believe onely, and she shall be made whole.

51 And when he came into the house he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, & James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden.

52 And all wept, and bewailed her: but he said, Weep not; she is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead.

54 And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise.

55 And her spirit came again, and she arose straitway: & he commanded to give her meat.

56 And her parents were astonished: but he charged them that they should tell no man what was done.

CHAP. IX.

1 Christ sendeth his apostles to work miracles, and to preach. 7 Herod desireth to see Christ. 17 Christ feedeth five thousand, 18 enquireth what opinion the world had of him: foretelleth his passion, 23 proposeth to all the pattern of his patience. 28 The transfiguration. 37 He healeth the lunatick: 43 again forewarneth his disciples of his passion: 46 commendeth humility: 51 biddeth them to shew mildness towards all, without desire of revenge. 57 Divers would follow him, but upon conditions.

THen * he called his twelve disciples together, and gave them power and authority over all devils, and to cure diseases. * Matth. 10.1.

2 And he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick.

3 And he said unto them, Take nothing for your journey, neither staves, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money; neither have two coats apiece.

4 And whatsoever house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And whosoever will not receive you, when ye go out of that city, shake off the very dust from your feet for a testimony against them.

6 And they departed and went through the towns, preaching the gospel, and healing every where.

7 ¶ * Now Herod the tetrarch heard of all that was done by him: and he was perplexed, because that it was said of some, that John was risen from the dead: * Matth. 14.1.

8 And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of others, that one of the old prophets was risen again.

9 And Herod said, John have I beheaded: but who is this of whom I hear such things? And he desired to see him.

10 ¶ And the apostles when they were returned, told him all that they had done. * And he took them, and went aside privately into a desert place, belonging to the city called Bethsaida. * Matth. 14.13.

11 And the people when they knew *it*, followed him: and he received them, and spake unto them of the kingdom of God, and healed them that had need of healing.

12 * And when the day began to wear away, then came the twelve, and said unto him, Send the multitude away, that they may go into the * Matth. 14.15.

towns

towns and countrey round about, and lodge, and get victuals: for we are here in a desert place.

13 But he said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they said, We have no more but five loaves and two fishes; except we should go and buy meat for all this people.

14 For they were about five thousand men. And he said to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties in a company.

15 And they did so, and made them all sit down.

16 Then he took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake, and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude.

17 And they did eat, and were all filled: and there was taken up of fragments that remained to them, twelve baskets.

18 ¶ * And it came to pass, as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: & he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am?

19 They answering, said, John the Baptist: but some say, Elias: and others say, that one of the old prophets is risen again.

20 He said unto them, But whom say ye that I am? Peter answering, said, The Christ of God.

21 And he straitly charged them, and commanded *them* to tell no man that thing,

22 Saying, * The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and chief priests, and scribes, and be slain, and be raised the third day.

23 ¶ * And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.

24 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it.

25 * For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away?

26 * For whosoever shall be ashamed of me, and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and *in his* Fathers, and of the holy angels.

27 * But I tell you of a truth, There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdom of God.

28 ¶ * And it came to pass about an eight days after these sayings, he took Peter, and John, and James, and went up into a mountain to pray.

29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment *was* white and glistering.

30 And behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias:

31 Who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease, which he should accomplish at Jerusalem.

32 But Peter and they that were with him were heavy with sleep: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him.

33 And it came to pass, as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he said.

34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud, and overshadowed them: and they feared as they entred into the cloud.

35 And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son, hear him.

36 And when the voice was past, Jesus was found alone: and they kept it close, and told no man in those days any of those things which they had seen.

37 ¶ * And it came to pass, that on the next day when they were come down from the hill, much people met him. * Matth. 17.14.

38 And behold, a man of the company cryed out, saying, Master, I beseech thee, look upon my son, for he is mine only child.

39 And lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out, and it teareth him that he foameth again, and bruising him, hardly departeth from him.

40 And I besought thy disciples to cast him out, and they could not.

41 And Jesus answering, said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and suffer you? Bring thy son hither.

42 And as he was yet a coming, the devil threw him down, and tare *him*: and Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and healed the child, and delivered him again to his father

43 ¶ And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God: but while they wondred every one at all things which Jesus did, he said unto his disciples,

44 * Let these sayings sink down into your ears: for the Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of men. * Matth. 17. 22.

45 But they understood not this saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not: and they feared to ask him of that saying.

46 ¶ * Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest. * Matth. 18.1.

47 And Jesus perceiving the thought of their heart, took a child, and set him by him, Mark 9.34.

48 And said unto them, Whosoever shall receive this child in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.

49 ¶ * And John answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name; and we forbad him, because he followeth not with us. * Mark 9.38.

50 And Jesus said unto him, Forbid *him* not: for he that is not against us, is for us.

51 ¶ And it came to pass, when the time was come that he should be received up, he stedfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem,

52 And sent messengers before his face: and they went and entred into a village of the Samaritanes to make ready for him.

53 And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem.

54 And when his disciples, James and John, saw this, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as * Elias did? * 2 King. 1.10.

55 But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of.

56 For the Son of man is not come to destroy mens lives, but to save *them*. And they went to another village.

57 ¶ * And it came to pass, that as they went in the way, a certain man said unto him, Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. * Matth. 8.19.

58 And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the air *have* nests, but the Son of man hath not where to lay *his* head.

59 * And he said unto another, Follow me: but he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father * Matth. 8.21.

60 Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead; but go thou and preach the kingdom of God.

61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee: but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at home at my house.

62 And Jesus said unto him, No man having

put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

CHAP. X.

1 *Christ sendeth out at once seventy disciples to work miracles, and to preach:* 17 *admonisheth them to be humble, and wherein to rejoyce:* 21 *thanketh his Father for his grace:* 23 *magnifieth the happy estate of his church:* 25 *teacheth the lawyer how to attain eternal life, and to take every one for his neighbour that needeth his mercy:* 41 *reprehendeth Martha, and commendeth Mary her sister.*

* Matth. 10.1. AFter * these things the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face, into every city, and place, whither he himself would come.

* Matth. 9.37. 2 Therefore said he unto them, * The harvest truly is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest.

* Matth. 10.16. 3 Go your ways: * behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves.

4 Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes; and salute no man by the way.

* Matth. 10.11. 5 * And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace *be* to this house.

6 And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall return to you again.

7 And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house.

8 And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you.

9 And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.

10 But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say,

11 Even the very dust of your city, which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding, be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.

12 But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city.

* Matth. 11.21. 13 * Wo unto thee, Chorazin, wo unto thee, Bethsaida: for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.

14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgement, than for you.

15 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell.

* Matth. 10.40. 16 * He that heareth you, heareth me: and he that despiseth you, despiseth me: and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

17 ¶ And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name.

18 And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning, fall from heaven.

19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents, and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy; and nothing shall by any means hurt you.

20 Notwithstanding, in this rejoyce not, that the spirits are subject unto you: but rather rejoyce, because your names are written in heaven.

21 ¶ In that hour Jesus rejoyced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes: even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

22 ‡ All things are delivered to me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Son is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal *him*. ‡ Many ancient copies add these words,

23 ¶ And he turned him unto *his* disciples, and said privately, * Blessed *are* the eyes which see the things that ye see. And turning to his disciples, he said.

24 For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen *them*; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard *them*. * Matth. 13.16.

25 ¶ And behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, * Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? He said unto him, * Matth. 22.35.

26 What is written in the law? how readest thou?

27 And he answering, said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thy self.

28 And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live.

29 But he, willing to justifie himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour?

30 And Jesus answering, said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded *him*, and departed, leaving *him* half-dead.

31 And by chance there came down a certain priest that way; and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side.

32 And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked *on him*, and passed by on the other side.

33 But a certain Samaritane, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion *on him*,

34 And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oyl and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him.

35 And on the morrow, when he departed, he took out two ‡ pence, and gave *them* to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee. ‡ 8d. Matth. 20.2.

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him y fell among the thieves?

37 And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

38 ¶ Now it came to pass as they went, that he entred into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha, received him into her house.

39 And she had a sister, called Mary, which also sat at Jesus feet, and heard his word.

40 But Martha was cumbred about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me.

41 And Jesus answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful, and troubled about many things:

42 But one thing is needful, and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

CHAP. XI.

1 *Christ teacheth to pray, and that instantly:* 11 *assuring that God so will give us good things:* 14 *He casting out a dumb devil, rebuketh the blasphemous Pharisees,* 28 *and sheweth who are blessed,* 29 *preacheth to the people,* 37 *and reprehendeth the outward shew of holiness in the Pharisees, scribes, and lawyers.*

AND it came to pass, that as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples

1. Seventy disciples sent out two and two etc:
25 And a certain Lawyer stood up and tempted him: etc:
33. But a certain Samaretane. etc: 34. went to him,
and bound up his wounds etc: and brought him to an Inn etc:

Martha and Mary. Luke. 10.

v. 39. And she had a sister called Mary which also sate at Jesus feete etc. v. 40: but Martha was cumbred etc:

disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.

2 And he said unto them, When ye pray, say * Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy Name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth.

3 Give us ‡ day by day our daily bread.

4 And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil.

5 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, & shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves;

6 For a friend of mine ‡ in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him:

7 And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee.

8 I say unto you, though he will not rise, and give him, because he is his friend: yet because of his importunity, he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.

9 * And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you: seek, and ye shall find: knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

10 For every one that asketh, receiveth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.

11 * If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if *he ask* a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent?

12 Or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion?

13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall *your* heavenly Father give the holy Spirit to them that ask him?

14 ¶ And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumb. And it came to pass, when the devil was gone out, the dumb spake: and the people wondered.

15 But some of them said, * He casteth out devils through Beelzebub the chief of the devils.

16 And other tempting *him*, sought of him a sign from heaven.

17 But he knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against it self is brought to desolation: and an house *divided* against a house, falleth.

18 If Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? because ye say that I cast out devils through Beelzebub.

19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges.

20 But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdom of God is come upon you.

21 When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace.

22 But when a stronger then he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.

23 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

24 * When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places seeking rest: and finding none, he saith, I will return unto my house whence I came out.

25 And when he cometh, he findeth *it* swept and garnished.

26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits more wicked then himself, and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse then the first.

27 ¶ And it came to pass, as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lift up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed *is* the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked.

28 But he said, Yea, rather blessed *are* they that hear the word of God and keep it.

29 ¶ * And when ỹ people were gathered thick together, he began to say, This is an evil generation: they seek a sign, and there shall no sign be given it, but the sign of Jonas the prophet. * Matth. 12.38.

30 For as Jonas was a sign unto the Ninevites, so shal also the Son of man be to this generation.

31 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with the men of this generation, and condemn them: for she came from the utmost parts of the earth, to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, a greater then Solomon *is* here.

32 The men of Nineve shall rise up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and behold, a greater then Jonas *is* here.

33 * No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth *it* in a secret place, neither under a ‡ bushel; but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light. * Matth. 5.15. ‡ See Matth. 5.15.

34 * The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light: but when *thine eye* is evil, thy body also is full of darkness. * Matth. 6.22.

35 Take heed therefore that the light which is in thee, be not darkness.

36 If thy whole body therefore *be* full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.

37 ¶ And as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him: and he went in, and sat down to meat.

38 And when the Pharisee saw *it*, he marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner.

39 * And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup, and the platter: but your inward part is full of ravening and wickedness. * Matth. 23. 25.

40 Ye fools, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also?

41 But rather give alms ‡ of such things as you have: and behold, all things are clean unto you. ‡ Or, *as you are able.*

42 But wo unto you Pharisees: for ye tithe mint and rue, and all manner of herbs, and pass over judgement, and the love of God: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

43 * Wo unto you Pharisees: for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets. * Matth. 23.6.

44 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye are as graves which appear not, and the men that walk over *them* are not aware *of them.*

45 ¶ Then answered one of the lawyers, and said unto him, Master, thus saying, thou reproachest us also.

46 * And he said, Wo unto you also, ye lawyers: for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be born, and ye your selves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers. * Matth. 23.4.

47 * Wo unto you: for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them. * Matth. 23.29.

48 Truly ye bear witness that ye allow the deeds of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres.

49 Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send them prophets and apostles, and *some*

of them they ſhall ſlay and perſecute:
50 That the bloud of all the prophets which was ſhed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation;
* Gen. 4.8. 51 * From the bloud of Abel unto the bloud of Zacharias, which periſhed between the altar and the temple: verily I ſay unto you, It ſhall be required of this generation.
* Matth. 23.13. 52 * Wo unto you lawyers: for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entred not in your ſelves, and them that were entring in ye ‡ hindred.
‡ Or, forbad. 53 And as he ſaid theſe things unto them, the ſcribes and the Phariſees began to urge him vehemently, and to provoke him to ſpeak of many things:
54 Laying wait for him, and ſeeking to catch ſomething out of his mouth, that they might accuſe him.

CHAP. XII.

1 Chriſt preacheth to his diſciples to avoid hypocriſie and fearfulneſs in publiſhing his doctrine: 13 Warneth the people to beware of covetouſneſs, by the parable of the rich man, who ſet up greater barns. 22 We muſt not be over-careful of earthly things, 31 but ſeek the kingdom of God, 33 give alms: 36 be ready at a knock to open to our Lord when ſoever he cometh. 41 Chriſts miniſters are to ſee to their charge, 49 and look for perſecution. 54 The people muſt take this time of grace, 58 becauſe it is a fearful thing to die without reconciliation.

* Matth. 16.6. IN * the mean time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, inſomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to ſay unto his diſciples firſt of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Phariſees, which is hypocriſie.
* Matth. 10.26. 2 * For there is nothing covered, that ſhall not be revealed; neither hid, that ſhal not be known.
3 Therefore whatſoever ye have ſpoken in darkneſs, ſhall be heard in the light: and that which ye have ſpoken in the ear in cloſets, ſhall be proclaimed upon the houſe-tops.
* Matth. 10.28. 4 * And I ſay unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that, have no more that they can do.
5 But I will forewarn you whom you ſhall fear: Fear him, which after he hath killed, hath power to caſt into hell; yea, I ſay unto you, Fear him.
‡ See Matth. 10.29. 6 Are not five ſparrows ſold for two ‡ farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God?
7 But even the very hairs of your head are all numbred. Fear not therefore: ye are of more value then many ſparrows.
* Matth. 10.32. 2 Tim. 2.12. 8 * Alſo I ſay unto you, Whoſoever ſhall confeſs me before men, him ſhall the Son of man alſo confeſs before the angels of God.
9 But he that denieth me before men, ſhall be denied before the angels of God.
10 And whoſoever ſhall ſpeak a word againſt the Son of man, it ſhall be forgiven him: but unto him that blaſphemeth againſt the holy Ghoſt, it ſhall not be forgiven.
* Matth. 10.19. 11 * And when they bring you unto the ſynagogues, and unto magiſtrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye ſhall anſwer, or what ye ſhall ſay:
12 For the holy Ghoſt ſhall teach you in the ſame hour, what ye ought to ſay.
13 ¶ And one of the company ſaid unto him, Maſter, ſpeak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me.
14 And he ſaid unto him, Man, who made me a judge, or a divider over you?
15 And he ſaid unto them, Take heed and beware of covetouſneſs: for a mans life conſiſteth not in the abundance of the things which he poſſeſſeth.
16 And he ſpake a parable unto them, ſaying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully.
17 And he thought within himſelf, ſaying, What ſhall I do, becauſe I have no room where to beſtow my fruits?
18 And he ſaid, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I beſtow all my fruits, and my goods.
19 And I will ſay to my ſoul, Soul, thou haſt much goods laid up for many years; take thine eaſe, eat, drink, and be merry.
20 But God ſaid unto him, Thou fool, this night ‡ thy ſoul ſhall be required of thee: then whoſe ſhall thoſe things be which thou haſt provided? ‡ Or, do they require thy ſoul.
21 So *is* he that layeth up treaſure for himſelf, and is not rich towards God.
22 ¶ And he ſaid unto his diſciples, Therefore I ſay unto you, * Take no thought for your life, what ye ſhall eat; neither for the body, what ye ſhall put on. * Matth. 6.25.
23 The life is more then meat, and the body *is more* then raiment.
24 Conſider the ravens: for they neither ſowe, nor reap; which neither have ſtore-houſe, nor barn; and God feedeth them: how much more are ye better then the fowls?
25 And which of you with taking thought can add to his ſtature one cubit?
26 If ye then be not able to do that thing which is leaſt, why take ye thought for the reſt?
27 Conſider the lilies how they grow: they toil not, they ſpin not: and yet I ſay unto you, that Solomon in all his glory, was not arayed like one of theſe.
28 If then God ſo clothe the graſs, which is to day in the field, and to morrow is caſt into the oven: how much more *will he clothe* you, O ye of little faith?
29 And ſeek not ye what ye ſhall eat, or what ye ſhall drink, ‡ neither be ye of doubtful mind. ‡ Or, lift not carefull ſuſpence.
30 For all theſe things do the nations of the world ſeek after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of theſe things.
31 ¶ But rather ſeek ye the kingdom of God, and all theſe things ſhall be added unto you.
32 Fear not little flock; for it is your Fathers good pleaſure to give you the kingdom.
33 Sell that ye have, and give alms: * provide your ſelves bags which wax not old, a treaſure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth. * Matth. 6.20.
34 For where your treaſure is, there will your heart be alſo.
35 * Let your loins be girded about, and *your* lights burning; * 1 Pet. 1.13.
36 And ye your ſelves like unto men that wait for their lord, when he will return from the wedding, that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately.
37 Bleſſed *are* thoſe ſervants, whom the Lord, when he cometh, ſhall find watching: Verily I ſay unto you, That he ſhall gird himſelf, and make them to ſit down to meat, and will come forth and ſerve them.
38 And if he ſhall come in the ſecond watch, or come in the third watch, and find *them* ſo, bleſſed are thoſe ſervants.
39 * And this know, that if the good-man of the houſe had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have ſuffered his houſe to be broken through. * Matth. 24.43.

40 Be

40 Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not.

41 ¶ Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all?

42 And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom *his* lord shall make ruler over his household, to give *them their* portion of meat in due season?

43 Blessed *is* that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing.

44 Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath.

45 But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the men-servants, and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken:

46 The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an hour when he is not ware, and will ‡ cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.

47 And that servant which knew his lords will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many *stripes*.

48 But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few *stripes*. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

49 ¶ I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I if it be already kindled?

50 But I have a baptism to be baptized with, & how am I ‡ straitned till it be accomplished!

51 * Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division.

52 For from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three.

53 The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father: the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother: the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

54 ¶ And he said also to the people, * When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a showre; and so it is.

55 And when *ye see* the south-wind blow, ye say, There will be heat; and it cometh to pass.

56 Ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the skie, and of the earth: but how is it, that ye do not discern this time?

57 Yea, and why even of your selves judge ye not what is right?

58 ¶ * When thou goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, *as thou art* in the way, give diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him; lest he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison.

59 I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast paid the very last ‡ mite.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *Christ preacheth repentance upon the punishment of the Galileans and others.* 6 *The fruitless fig-tree may not stand:* 11 *He healeth the crooked woman,* 18 *sheweth the powerful working of the word in the hearts of his chosen, by the parable of the grain of mustard-seed, and of leaven:* 24 *exhorteth to enter in at the strait gate,* 31 *and reproveth Herod and Jerusalem.*

THere were present at that season, some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Jesus answering, said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things?

3 I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

4 Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, & slew them, think ye that they were ‡ sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem?

‡ Or, debtors.

5 I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

6 ¶ He spake also this parable: A certain man had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard, and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none.

7 Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and find none: cut it down, why cumbreth it the ground?

8 And he answering, said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung *it*:

9 And if it bear fruit, *well*: and if not, *then* after that thou shalt cut it down.

10 And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath.

11 ¶ And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up *her self*.

12 And when Jesus saw her, he called *her* to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity.

13 And he laid *his* hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath-day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath-day.

15 The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or *his* ass from the stall, and lead *him* away to watering?

16 And ought not this woman being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath-day?

17 And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoyced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

18 ¶ * Then said he, Unto what is the kingdom of God like? and whereunto shall I resemble it?

* Matth. 13. 31.

19 It is like a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took, and cast into his garden, and it grew, and waxed a great tree: and the fowls of the air lodged in the branches of it.

20 And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God?

21 It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three ‡ measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

‡ See Matth. 13. 33.

22 * And he went through the cities and villages, teaching and journeying towards Jerusalem.

* Matth. 9. 35.

23 Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said unto them,

24 ¶ * Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able.

* Matth. 7. 13.

25 When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer & say unto you, I know you not whence you are:

26 Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and

and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets.

* Matth. 7. 23. 27 * But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence you are; depart from me all ye workers of iniquity.

28 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets in the kingdom of God, and you *your selves* thrust out.

29 And they shall come from the east, and *from* the west, and from the north, and *from* the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God.

* Matth. 19. 30. 30 * And behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.

31 ¶ The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart hence: for Herod will kill thee.

32 And he said unto them, Go ye and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to day and to morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected.

33 Nevertheless, I must walk to day and to morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

* Matth. 23. 37. 34 * O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee: how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen *doth gather* her brood under *her* wings, and ye would not?

35 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: And verily I say unto you, ye shall not see me, until *the* time come when ye shall say, Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

CHAP. XIV.

Christ healeth the dropsie on the sabbath, 7 teacheth humility: 12 to feast the poor. 17 Under the parable of the great supper, sheweth how worldly-minded men, who contemn the word of God, shall be shut out of heaven. 25 Those who will be his disciples, to bear their cross, must make their accounts aforehand, lest with shame they revolt from him afterward, 34 and become altogether unprofitable, like salt that hath lost his savour.

AND it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on *the* sabbath-day, that they watched him.

2 And behold, there was a certain man before him which had the dropsie.

3 And Jesus answering, spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath-day?

4 And they held their peace. And he took *him* and healed *him*, and let *him* go:

5 And answered them, saying, Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath-day?

6 And they could not answer him again to these things.

7 ¶ And he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms; saying unto them,

8 When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room: lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him;

9 And he that bade thee and him, come and say to thee, Give this man place; and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room.

* Prov. 25. 6, 7. 10 * But when thou art bidden, go & sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee.

* Matth. 23. 12. 11 * For whosoever exalteth himself, shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself, shall be exalted.

12 ¶ Then said he also to him that bade him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor *thy* rich neighbours; lest they also bid thee again, and a recompense be made thee.

13 But when thou makest a feast, call * the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind: * Tob. 4. 7.

14 And thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.

15 ¶ And when one of them that sat at meat with him, heard these things, he said unto him, * Blessed *is* he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God. * Rev. 19. 9.

16 * Then said he unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and bade many: * Matth. 22. 2.

17 And sent his servant at supper-time to say to them that were bidden, Come, for all things are now ready.

18 And they all with one *consent* began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it: I pray thee have me excused.

19 And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused.

20 And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come.

21 So that servant came, and shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry, said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind.

22 And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room.

23 And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the high-ways and hedges, and compel them to come in, that my house may be filled.

24 For I say unto you, that none of those men which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.

25 ¶ And there went great multitudes with him: and he turned, and said unto them,

* Matth. 10. 37. 26 * If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.

27 And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

28 For which of you intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have *sufficient* to finish *it*?

29 Lest haply after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish *it*, all that behold *it*, begin to mock him,

30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish.

31 Or what king going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand?

32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace.

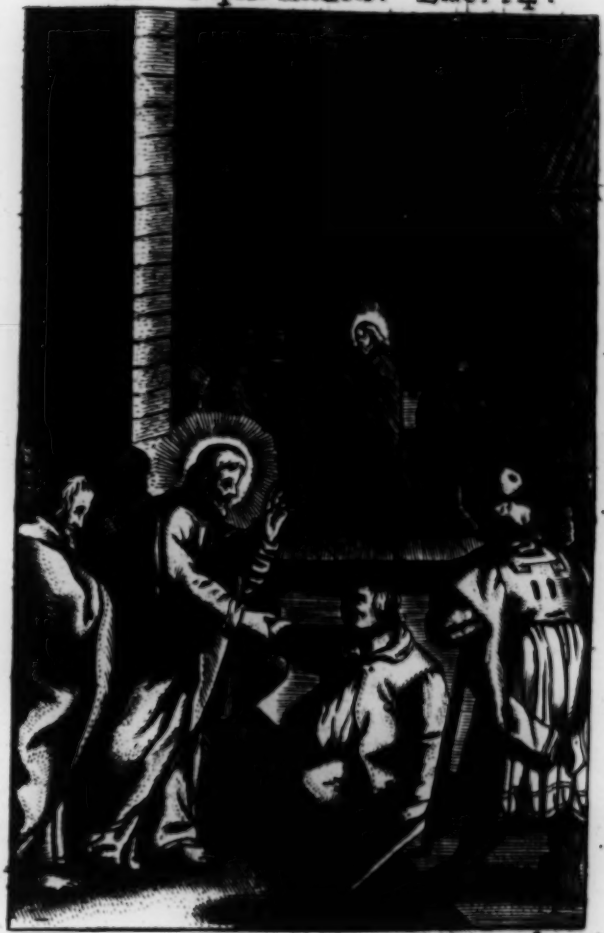
33 So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

* Matth. 5. 13. 34 ¶ * Salt *is* good: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned?

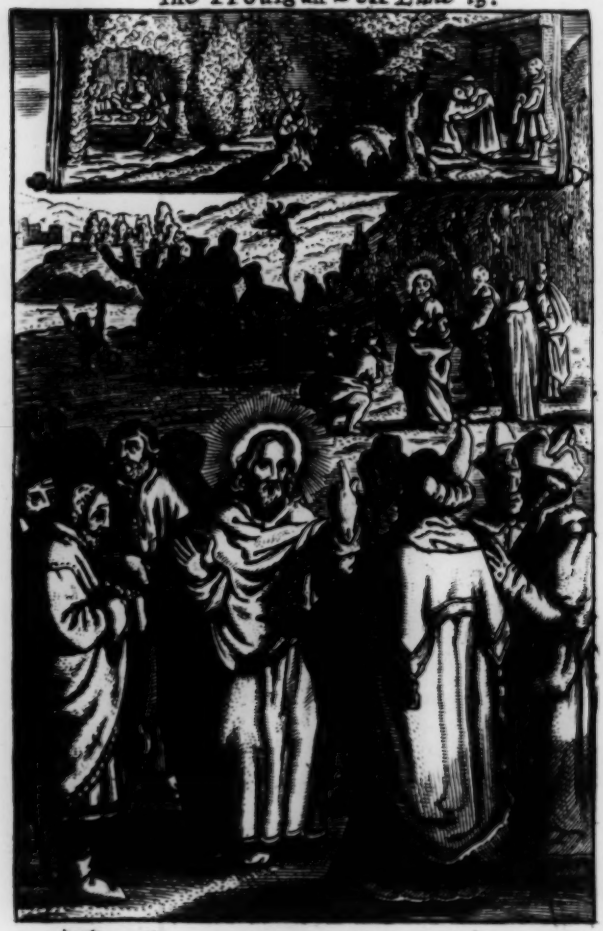
35 It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill; *but* men cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

CHAP.

The Dropsie healed. Luk. 14.



2. And behold there was a certayn man which had ỹ dropsie
3. And Jesus spake etc: saying is it lawfull to heale on the
Sabbath day. 4. And they held their peace. And he
took him and healed him etc:



v.1. Then drew neer unto him all the Publicanes and ſinners for to heare him.

The Dumb Spirit is caſt out Mark 9. 26.

And the ſpirit cried and rent him ſore and came out &c.

CHAP. XV.

1 *The parable of the lost sheep:* 8 *of the piece of silver:* 11 *of the prodigal son.*

THen drew near unto him all the publicanes and sinners for to hear him.

2 And the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.

3 ¶ And he spake this parable unto them, saying,

4 * What man of you having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it?

5 And when he hath found *it*, he layeth *it* on his shoulders, rejoycing.

6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together *his* friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoyce with me, for I have found my sheep which was lost.

7 I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more then over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.

8 ¶ Either what woman having ten ‡ pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find *it*?

9 And when she hath found *it*, she calleth *her* friends and *her* neighbours together, saying, Rejoyce with me, for I have found the piece which I had lost.

10 Likewise I say unto you, There is joy in the presence of the angels of God, over one sinner that repenteth.

11 ¶ And he said, A certain man had two sons:

12 And the younger of them said to *his* father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth *to me*. And he divided unto them *his* living.

13 And not many days after, the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far countrey, and there wasted his substance with riotous living.

14 And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want.

15 And he went and joyned himself to a citizen of that countrey; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine.

16 And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him.

17 And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger!

18 I will arise, and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee,

19 And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants.

20 And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him.

21 And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son.

22 But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put *it* on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on *his* feet.

23 And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill *it*; and let us eat and be merry.

24 For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

25 Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard musick and dancing.

26 And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant.

27 And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound.

28 And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, & intreated him.

29 And he answering, said to *his* father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment, and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends:

30 But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.

31 And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine.

32 It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

CHAP. XVI.

1 *The parable of the unjust steward.* 14 *Christ reproveth the hypocrisie of the covetous Pharisees.* 19 *The rich glutton, and Lazarus the begger.*

AND he said also unto his disciples, There was a certain rich man which had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods.

2 And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship: for thou mayest be no longer steward.

3 Then the steward said within himself, What shall I do? for my lord taketh away from me the stewardship: I cannot dig, to beg I am ashamed.

4 I am resolved what to do, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses.

5 So he called every one of his lords debters unto him, and said unto the first, How much owest thou unto my lord?

6 And he said, An hundred ‡measures of oyl. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and sit down quickly, and write fifty.

7 Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, An hundred ‡ measures of wheat. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourscore.

8 And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser then the children of light.

9 And I say unto you, Make to your selves friends of the ‡ mammon of unrighteousness; that when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations.

10 He that is faithful in that which is least, is faithful also in much: and he that is unjust in the least, is unjust also in much.

11 If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous ‡ mammon, who will commit to your trust the true *riches*?

12 And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another mans, who shall give you that which is your own?

13 ¶ * No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

14 And the Pharisees also who were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided him.

15 And he said unto them, Ye are they which justifie your selves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed amongst men, is abomination in the sight of God.

16 * The law and the prophets were until John:

‡ The word *Batus* in the original, containeth nine gallons three quarts.

‡ The word here interpreted *a measure*, in the original containeth about fourteen bushels and a pottle.

‡ Or, *riches*.

‡ Or, *riches*.

* Matth. 6. 24.

* Matth. 11. 12.

John: since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man preasseth into it.

* Matth. 5. 18. 16. 17 * And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, then one tittle of the law to fail.

* Matth. 5. 32. 18 * Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from *her* husband, committeth adultery.

19 ¶ There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day.

20 And there was a certain begger, named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate full of sores,

21 And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich mans table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores.

22 And it came to pass, that the begger died, and was carried by the angels into Abrahams bosom: the rich man also died and was buried.

23 And in hell he lift up his eyes being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.

24 And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy life-time receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you, cannot; neither can they pass to us, that *would come* from thence.

27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore father, ‖ that thou wouldest send him to my fathers house:

28 For I have five brethren; that he may testifie unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them.

30 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.

31 And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be perswaded, though one rose from the dead.

CHAP. XVII.

1 *Christ teacheth to avoid occasions of offence.* 3 *One to forgive another.* 6 *The power of faith.* 7 *How we are bound to God, and not he to us.* 11 *He healeth ten lepers.* 22 *Of the kingdom of God, and the coming of the Son of man.*

* Matth. 18. 7. THen said he unto the disciples, * It is impossible but that offences will come: but wo *unto him* through whom they come.

2 It were better for him that a milstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, then ‖ he should offend one of these little ones.

* Matth. 18. 21. 3 ¶ Take heed to your selves: * If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him.

4 And if he trespass against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.

5 And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith.

* Matth. 17. 20. 6 * And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye might say unto this sycamine-tree, Be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea; and it should obey you.

7 But which of you having a servant plowing, or feeding cattel, will say unto him by and by, when he is come from the field, Go and sit down to meat?

8 And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thy self, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink?

9 Doth he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? I trow not.

10 So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.

11 ¶ And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee.

12 And as he entred into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off:

13 And they lifted up *their* voices, and said, Jesus Master, have mercy on us.

14 And when he saw *them*, he said unto them, * Go shew your selves unto the priests. And it came to pass that as they went, they were cleansed. * Levit. 14. 2.

15 And one of them when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God,

16 And fell down on *his* face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritane.

17 And Jesus answering said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where *are* the nine?

18 There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.

19 And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way; thy faith hath made thee whole.

20 ¶ And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come; he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not ‡ with observation. ‡ Or, with outward shew.

21 Neither shall they say, Lo here, or, lo there: for behold, the kingdom of God is ‡ within you. ‡ Or, among you.

22 And he said unto the disciples, The days will come when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see *it*.

23 * And they shall say to you, See here, or see there: go not after *them*, nor follow *them*. * Matth. 24. 23.

24 For as the lightning that lighteneth out of the one *part* under heaven, shineth unto the other *part* under heaven: so shall also the Son of man be in his day.

25 But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation.

* Gen. 7. 26 * And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man.

27 They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noe entred into the ark: and the flood came and destroyed them all.

* Gen. 19. 28 * Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot, they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded:

29 But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all:

30 Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed.

31 In that day, he which shall be upon the house-top, and his stuff in the house, let him not come down to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not return back.

* Gen. 19. 26 32 * Remember Lots wife.

* Matth. 16. 25. 33 * Whosoever shall seek to save his life, shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his life, shall preserve it.

* Matth. 24. 40. 34 * I tell you, in that night there shall be two men in one bed; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left.

35 Two women shall be grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

35 ‡ Two

Ten Lepers healed. Luke. 17.

12: There met him ten men that were Lepers etc:
14: And it came to pass as they went they were cleansed etc:
15: And one of them when he saw ỳ he was healed turned back

The blind man restored to sight. Chap: 18.

Christ speakes of the Latter dayes Luk:18

26. And as it was in the dayes of Noe etc:
28. Likewise also as it was in the dayes of Lot etc:
30: Even thus shall it be in the day when the son of man; etc.
The Parables of ye Widow, and Publicane Cha:18.3.13:

Christ calls Zacheus the Publican. Luke. 19.

v. 5 And Jesus looked up, and saw him, and said unto him Zacheus, make hast and come downe etc:
v: 8 And Zacheus stood and said unto the Lord, behold Lord, the halfe of my goods I give to the poore, etc:

36 ‡ Two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

37 And they answered and said unto him, * Where, Lord? And he said unto them, Wheresoever the body *is*, thither will the eagles be gathered together.

CHAP. XVIII.

3 *Of the importunate widow.* 9 *Of the Pharisee and the publicane.* 15 *Children brought to Christ.* 18 *A ruler that would follow Christ, but is hindred by his riches.* 28 *The reward of them that leave all for his sake.* 31 *He foreshewth his death,* 35 *and restoreth a blind man to his sight.*

AND he spake a parable unto them, *to this end,* that men ought * always to pray, and not to faint;

2 Saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man.

3 And there was a widow in that city, and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary.

4 And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man;

5 Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me.

6 And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith.

7 And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them?

8 I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless, when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?

9 And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves ‡ that they were righteous, and despised others:

10 Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publicane.

11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God I thank thee, that I am not as other men *are*, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publicane.

12 I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess.

13 And the publicane standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner.

14 I tell you, this man went down to his house justified *rather* then the other: * for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

15 And they brought unto him also infants, that he would touch them: but when *his* disciples saw *it*, they rebuked them.

16 But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.

17 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, shall in no wise enter therein.

18 * And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?

19 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none *is* good save one, *that is*, God.

20 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother.

21 And he said, All these have I kept from my youth up.

22 Now when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him, Yet lackest thou one thing: sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me.

23 And when he heard this, he was very sorrowful: for he was very rich.

24 And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowful, he said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

25 For it is easier for a camel to go through a needles eye, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they that heard *it*, said, Who then can be saved?

27 And he said, The things which are unpossible with men, are possible with God.

28 * Then Peter said, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee. * Matth. 19. 27.

29 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, there is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children for the kingdom of Gods sake,

30 Who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, and in the world to come life everlasting.

31 ¶ * Then he took unto him the twelve, and said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished. * Matth. 20. 17.

32 For he shall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and spitefully entreated, and spitted on;

33 And they shall scourge *him*, and put him to death: and the third day he shall rise again.

34 And they understood none of these things: and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

35 ¶ * And it came to pass, that as he was come nigh unto Jericho, a certain blind man sat by the way-side begging. * Matth. 20. 29.

36 And hearing the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by.

38 And he cried, saying, Jesus thou son of David, have mercy on me.

39 And they which went before rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried so much the more, Thou son of David, have mercy on me.

40 And Jesus stood and commanded him to be brought unto him: and when he was come near, he asked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I shall do unto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight.

42 And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight: thy faith hath saved thee.

43 And immediately he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people when they saw *it*, gave praise unto God.

CHAP. XIX.

1 *Of Zaccheus a publicane.* 11 *The ten pieces of money.* 28 *Christ rideth into Jerusalem with triumph;* 41 *weepeth over it:* 45 *driveth the buyers and sellers out of the temple,* 47 *teaching daily in it. The rulers would have destroyed him, but for fear of the people.*

AND *Jesus* entred and passed through Jericho.

2 And behold, *there was* a man named Zaccheus, which was the chief among the publicanes, and he was rich.

3 And he sought to see Jesus who he was, and could not for the preass, because he was little of stature.

4 And

4 And he ran before, and climbed up into a ſycomore-tree to ſee him; for he was to paſs that way.

5 And when Jeſus came to the place, he looked up and ſaw him, and ſaid unto him, Zaccheus, make haſte, and come down; for to day I muſt abide at thy houſe.

6 And he made haſte, and came down, and received him joyfully.

7 And when they ſaw *it*, they all murmured, ſaying, That he was gone to be gueſt with a man that is a ſinner.

8 And Zaccheus ſtood and ſaid unto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor: and if I have taken any thing from any man by falſe accuſation, I reſtore *him* fourfold.

9 And Jeſus ſaid unto him, This day is ſalvation come to this houſe, forſomuch as he alſo is the ſon of Abraham.

10 * For the Son of man is come to ſeek and to ſave that which was loſt.

11 And as they heard theſe things, he added, and ſpake a parable, becauſe he was nigh to Jeruſalem, and becauſe they thought that the kingdom of God ſhould immediately appear.

12 * He ſaid therefore, A certain noble man went into a far country to receive for himſelf a kingdom, and to return.

13 And he called his ten ſervants, and delivered them ten ‡ pounds, and ſaid unto them, Occupy till I come.

14 But his citizens hated him, and ſent a meſſage after him, ſaying, We will not have this man to reign over us.

15 And it came to paſs, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded theſe ſervants to be called unto him to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading.

16 Then came the firſt, ſaying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.

17 And he ſaid unto him, Well, thou good ſervant: becauſe thou haſt been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities.

18 And the ſecond came, ſaying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds.

19 And he ſaid likewiſe to him, Be thou alſo over five cities.

20 And another came, ſaying, Lord, behold, *here is* thy pound which I have kept laid up in a napkin:

21 For I feared thee, becauſe thou art an auſtere man: thou takeſt up that thou layedſt not down, and reapeſt that thou didſt not ſow.

22 And he ſaith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked ſervant. Thou kneweſt that I was an auſtere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not ſow:

23 Wherefore then gaveſt not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with uſury?

24 And he ſaid unto them that ſtood by, Take from him the pound, and give *it* to him that hath ten pounds.

25 (And they ſaid unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.)

26 For I ſay unto you, * That unto every one which hath, ſhall be given: and from him that hath not, even that he hath ſhall be taken away from him.

27 But thoſe mine enemies which would not that I ſhould reign over them, bring hither, and ſlay *them* before me.

28 ¶ And when he had thus ſpoken, he went before, aſcending up to Jeruſalem.

29 * And it came to paſs when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called *the mount* of Olives, he ſent two of his diſciples,

30 Saying, Go ye into the village over againſt *you*; in the which at your entring ye ſhall find a colt tied, whereon yet never man ſat: looſe him, and bring *him* hither.

31 And if any man aſk you, Why do ye looſe *him*? thus ſhall ye ſay unto him, Becauſe the Lord hath need of him.

32 And they that were ſent went their way, and found even as he had ſaid unto them.

33 And as they were looſing the colt, the owners thereof ſaid unto them, Why looſe ye the colt?

34 And they ſaid, The Lord hath need of him.

35 And they brought him to Jeſus: and they caſt their garments upon the colt, and they ſet Jeſus thereon.

36 And as he went, they ſpread their clothes in the way.

37 And when he was come nigh, even now at the deſcent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the diſciples began to rejoyce and praiſe God with a loud voice, for all the mighty works that they had ſeen,

38 Saying, Bleſſed *be* the King that cometh in the name of the Lord: peace in heaven, and glory in the higheſt.

39 And ſome of the Phariſees from among the multitude, ſaid unto him, Maſter, rebuke thy diſciples.

40 And he anſwered and ſaid unto them, I tell you, that if theſe ſhould hold their peace, the ſtones would immediately cry out.

41 ¶ And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it,

42 Saying, If thou hadſt known, even thou, at leaſt in this thy day, the things *which belong* unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

43 For the days ſhall come upon thee, that thine enemies ſhall caſt a trench about thee, and compaſs thee round, and keep thee in on every ſide,

44 And ſhall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee; and they ſhall not leave in thee one ſtone upon another: becauſe thou kneweſt not the time of thy viſitation.

45 * And he went into the temple, and began to caſt out them that ſold therein, and them that bought,

46 Saying unto them, It is written, My houſe is the houſe of prayer: but ye have made it a den of thieves.

47 And he taught daily in the temple. But the chief prieſts and the ſcribes, and the chief of the people ſought to deſtroy him,

48 And could not find what they might do: for all the people ‡ were very attentive to hear him.

CHAP. XX.

1 *Chriſt avoucheth his authority by a queſtion of Johns baptiſm.* 9 *The parable of the vineyard.* 19 *Of giving tribute to Ceſar.* 27 *He convinceth the Sadducees that denied the reſurrection.* 41 *How Chriſt is the ſon of David.* 45 *He warneth his diſciples to beware of the ſcribes.*

AND * it came to paſs, that on one of thoſe days, as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the goſpel, the chief prieſts and the ſcribes came upon him with the elders,

2 And ſpake unto him, ſaying, Tell us, by what authority doeſt thou theſe things? or who is he that gave thee this authority?

¶ And

* Matth. 18. 11.

* Matth. 25. 14.

‡ *Mina* here tranſlated a pound, is *twelve ounces and an half*: which according to five ſhillings the ounce, is *three pounds two ſhillings ſix pence.*

* Matth. 13. 12.

* Matth. 21. 1.

‡ Or, *hanged on him.*

* Matth. 21. 23.

Christ rideth to Jerusalem. Luke. XIX.

v: 35 And they brought him to Jesus: and they cast their Garments upon the Colt, and they set Jesus thereon. etc:

of giving tribute to Cesar Luk. 20.

21. And they asked him saying Master etc: 22. Is it lawfull for us to give tribute unto Cesar or no.
24. Shew me a peny etc. 25. And he said unto them Render therefore unto Cesar the things that are Cesars etc

3 And he answered and said unto them, I will also ask you one thing; and answer me:
4 The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men?
5 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why then believed ye him not?
6 But and if we say, Of men; all the people will stone us: for they be perswaded that John was a prophet.
7 And they answered, that they could not tell whence it was.
8 And Jesus said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.
9 Then began he to speak to the people this parable: * A certain man planted a vineyard, and let it forth to husbandmen, and went into a far country for a long time.
10 And at the season, he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen beat him, and sent *him* away empty.
11 And again he sent another servant; and they beat him also, and entreated *him* shamefully, and sent *him* away empty.
12 And again he sent the third; and they wounded him also, and cast *him* out.
13 Then said the lord of the vineyard, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: it may be they will reverence *him* when they see him.
14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, This is the heir: come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.
15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed *him*. What therefore shall the lord of the vineyard do unto them?
16 He shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and shall give the vineyard to others. And when they heard *it*, they said, God forbid.
17 And he beheld them, and said, What is this then that is written, * The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner?
18 Whosoever shall fall upon that stone, shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.
19 ¶ And the chief priests and the scribes the same hour sought to lay hands on him; and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them.
20 And they watched *him*, and sent forth spies, which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governour.
21 And they asked him, saying, * Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person *of any*, but teachest the way of God ‡ truly.
22 Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Cesar, or no?
23 But he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me?
24 Shew me a ‡ peny: whose image and superscription hath it? They answered and said, Cesars.
25 And he said unto them, Render therefore unto Cesar the things which be Cesars, and unto God the things which be Gods.
26 And they could not take hold of his words before the people: and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.
27 ¶ * Then came to him certain of the Sadducees (which deny that there is any resurrection) and they asked him,
28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any mans brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.
29 There were therefore seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and died without children.
30 And the second took her to wife, and he died childless.
31 And the third took her; and in like manner the seven also. And they left no children, and died.
32 Last of all the woman died also.
33 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife of them is she? for seven had her to wife.
34 And Jesus answering said unto them, The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage:
35 But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage.
36 Neither can they die any more; for they are equal unto the angels, and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.
37 Now that the dead are raised, * even Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. * Exod. 3. 6.
38 For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto him.
39 ¶ Then certain of the scribes answering, said, Master, thou hast well said.
40 And after that, they durst not ask him any question at all.
41 And he said unto them, * How say they that Christ is Davids son? * Matth. 22. 42.
42 And David himself saith in the book of psalms, * The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, * Psal. 110. 1.
43 Till I make thine enemies thy footstool.
44 David therefore calleth him Lord, how is he then his son?
45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people, he said unto his disciples,
46 * Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts; * Matth. 23. 5.
47 Which devour widows houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Christ commendeth the poor widow. 5 He foretelleth the destruction of the temple, and of the city Jerusalem. 25 The signs also which shall be before the last day. 34 He exhorteth them to be watchful.

AND he looked up, * and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury. * Mark 12. 41.
2 And he saw also a certain poor widow, casting in thither two ‡ mites. ‡ See Mar. 12. 42.
3 And he said, Of a truth I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast in more then they all.
4 For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God: but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.
5 ¶ * And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones, and gifts, he said, * Matth. 24. 1.
6 *As for* these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down
7 And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what sign will there

there be when these things shall come to pass?

8 And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am *Christ*; and the time draweth near: go ye not therefore after them.

9 But when ye shall hear of wars, and commotions, be not terrified: for these things must first come to pass, but the end *is* not by and by.

* Matth. 24. 7. 10 * Then said he unto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom:

11 And great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and famines, and pestilences, and fearful sights, and great signs shall there be from heaven.

12 But before all these they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute *you*, delivering *you* up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my names sake.

13 And it shall turn to you for a testimony.

* Matth. 10. 19. 14 * Settle *it* therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before, what ye shall answer,

15 For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist.

16 And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends; and *some* of you shall they cause to be put to death.

17 And ye shall be hated of all men for my names sake.

* Matth. 10. 30. 18 * But there shall not an hair of your head perish.

19 In your patience possess ye your souls.

* Matth. 24. 15. 20 * And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.

21 Then let them which are in Judea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it, depart out; and let not them that are in the countreys, enter thereinto.

22 For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.

23 But wo unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days: for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people.

24 And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be troden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

* Matth. 24. 29. 25 ¶ * And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity, the sea and the waves roaring;

26 Mens hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.

27 And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory.

28 And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.

29 And he spake to them a parable, Behold the fig-tree, and all the trees;

30 When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves, that summer is now nigh at hand.

31 So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand.

32 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away till all be fulfilled.

33 Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

34 ¶ And take heed to your selves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares.

35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.

36 Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

37 And in the day-time he was teaching in the temple, and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called *the mount* of Olives.

38 And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, for to hear him.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The Jews conspire against Christ. 3 Satan prepareth Judas to betray him. 7 The apostles prepare the passover. 19 Christ instituteth his holy supper, 21 covertly foretelleth of the traitour, 24 dehorteth the rest of his apostles from ambition, 32 assureth Peter his faith should not fail, 34 and yet he should deny him thrice. 39 He prayeth in the mount, and sweateth blood, 47 is betrayed with a kiss. 50 He healeth Malchus ear. 54 He is thrice denied of Peter, 63 shamefully abused, 66 and confesseth himself to be the Son of God.

NOw * the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the passover. * Matth. 26. 2.

2 And the chief priests and scribes sought how they might kill him; for they feared the people.

3 ¶ * Then entred Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve. * Matth. 26. 14.

4 And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them.

5 And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money.

6 And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him unto them ‡ in the absence of the multitude. ‡ Or, without tumult.

7 ¶ * Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the passover must be killed. * Matth. 26. 17.

8 And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and prepare us the passover that we may eat.

9 And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare?

10 And he said unto them, Behold, when ye are entred into the city, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water; follow him into the house where he entreth in.

11 And ye shall say unto the good-man of the house, The master saith unto thee, Where is the guest-chamber where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?

12 And he shall shew you a large upper room furnished: there make ready.

13 And they went and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover.

* Matth. 26. 22. 14 * And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him.

‡ Or, I have heartily desired. 15 And he said unto them, ‡ With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer.

16 For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.

17 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide *it* among your selves.

18 For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come

* Matth. 26. 26. 19 ¶ * And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake *it*, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me.

20 Like-

Christ is betrayed by Judas Luk. 22. 47.

And while he yet spake, behold a multitude etc : v. 48.

Christ is abused & blasphemed. *Luke. 22.64: etc.*

And when they had blindfolded him they strook him on the face, and asked him, saying, prophesie who is it etc .

Christs Agony in the Mount. Luke 22. v. 44

And being in an Agony he prayed more earnestly and his sweat was as it were great drops of Blood. etc:

20 Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup *is* the new testament in my bloud, which is shed for you.
21 ¶ * But behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me, *is* with me on the table.
22 And truly the Son of man goeth as it was determined: but wo unto that man by whom he is betrayed.
23 And they began to enquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.
24 ¶ And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.
25 * And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them, are called benefactours.
26 But ye *shall* not *be* so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve.
27 For whether *is* greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? *Is* not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as he that serveth.
28 Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations.
29 And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me:
30 That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, * and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.
31 ¶ And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, * Satan hath desired *to have* you, that he may sift *you* as wheat:
32 But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not; and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.
33 And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee both into prison, and to death.
34 * And he said, I tell thee Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.
35 * And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing.
36 Then said he unto them, But now he that hath a purse, let him take *it*, and likewise *his* scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one.
37 For I say unto you, that this that is written, must yet be accomplished in me, * And he was reckoned among the transgressours: for the things concerning me have an end.
38 And they said, Lord, behold here *are* two swords. And he said unto them, It is enough.
39 ¶ * And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to the mount of Olives; and his disciples also followed him.
40 * And when he was at *the* place, he said unto them, Pray, that ye enter not into temptation.
41 And he was withdrawn from them about a stones cast, and kneeled down and prayed,
42 Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine be done.
43 And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him.
44 And being in an agony, he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was as it were great drops of bloud falling down to the ground.
45 And when he rose up from prayer, and was come to his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow,
46 And said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.
47 ¶ And while he yet spake, * behold, a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew near unto Jesus, to kiss him.
48 But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?
49 When they which were about him, saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?
50 ¶ And one of them smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right ear.
51 And Jesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus far. And he touched his ear, and healed him.
52 Then Jesus said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders which were come to him, Be ye come out as against a thief, with swords and staves?
53 When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against me: but this is your hour, and the power of darkness.
54 ¶ * Then took they him, and led *him*, and brought him into the high priests house. And Peter followed afar off. * Matth. 26.57.
55 * And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together, Peter sat down among them. * Matth. 26.69.
56 But a certain maid beheld him, as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said, This man was also with him.
57 And he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not.
58 And after a little while another saw him, and said, Thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not.
59 And about the space of one hour after, another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this *fellow* also was with him: for he is a Galilean.
60 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediately while he yet spake, the cock crew.
61 And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter; and Peter remembred the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.
62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.
63 ¶ And the men that held Jesus, mocked him, and smote *him*.
64 And when they had blindfolded him, they struck him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophesie, who is it that smote thee?
65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.
66 ¶ * And assoon as it was day, the elders of the people, and the chief priests and the scribes came together, and led him into their councel, * Matth. 27. 1.
67 Saying, Art thou the Christ? tell us. And he said unto them, If I tell you, you will not believe.
68 And if I also ask *you*, you will not answer me, nor let *me* go.
69 Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.
70 Then said they all, Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them, * Ye say that I am. * Mark 14.62.
71 And they said, What need we any further witness? for we our selves have heard of his own mouth.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 *Jesus is accused before Pilate, and sent to Herod.* 8 *Herod mocketh him.* 12 *Herod and Pilate are made friends.* 18 *Barabbas is desired of the people, and is loosed by Pilate, and Jesus is given to be crucified.* 27 *He telleth the women that lament him, the destruction of Jerusalem:* 34 *prayeth for his enemies.* 39 *Two evil-doers are crucified with him.* 46 *His death.* 50 *His burial.*

AND the whole multitude of them arose, and led him unto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this *fellow* perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cesar, saying, that he himself is Christ a King.

* Matth. 27.11. 3 * And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jews? and he answered him, and said, Thou sayest *it*.

4 Then said Pilate to the chief priests, and to the people, I find no fault in this man.

5 And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jury, beginning from Galilee, to this place.

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean.

7 And assoon as he knew that he belonged unto Herods jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself was also at Jerusalem at that time.

8 ¶ And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him.

9 Then he questioned with him in many words; but he answered him nothing.

10 And the chief priests, and scribes stood and vehemently accused him.

11 And Herod with his men of war set him at nought, and mocked *him*, and arayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.

12 ¶ And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together; for before they were at enmity between themselves.

* Matth. 27.23. 13 ¶ * And Pilate, when he had called together the chief priests, and the rulers and the people,

14 Said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people: and behold, I having examined *him* before you, have found no fault in this man, touching those things whereof ye accuse him;

15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him, and lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him.

16 I will therefore chastise him, and release *him*.

17 For of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast.

18 And they cried out all at once, saying, Away with this *man*, and release unto us Barabbas:

19 (Who for a certain sedition made in the city, and for murder, was cast in prison)

20 Pilate therefore willing to release Jesus, spake again to them.

21 But they cried, saying, Crucifie *him*, crucifie him.

22 And he said unto them the third time, Why, what evil hath he done? I have found no cause of death in him: I will therefore chastise him, and let *him* go.

23 And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified: and the voices of them, and of the chief priests, prevailed.

‡ Or, assented. 24 And Pilate ‡ gave sentence that it should be as they required.

25 And he released unto them him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired; but he delivered Jesus to their will.

* Matth. 27.32. 26 * And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon a Cyrenian, coming out of the country, and on him they laid the cross, that he might bear *it* after Jesus.

27 ¶ And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him.

28 But Jesus turning unto them, said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for your selves, and for your children.

29 For behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed *are* the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck.

* Isa. 2.19. Hos. 10.8. Rev. 6.16. 30 * Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us.

* 1 Pet. 4.17. 31 * For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry?

32 * And there were also two other malefactours led with him to be put to death.

* Matth. 27.38. ‡ Or, the place of a skull. 33 And when they were come to the place, which is called ‡ Calvary, there they crucified him and the malefactours; one on the right hand, and the other on the left.

34 ¶ Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do. And they parted his raiment, and cast lots.

35 And the people stood beholding: and the rulers also with them, derided *him*, saying, He saved others; let him save himself, if he be Christ, the chosen of God.

36 And the souldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vinegar,

37 And saying, If thou be the king of the Jews, save thy self.

38 And a superscription also was written over him, in letters of Greek, and Latine, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

39 ¶ And one of the malefactours, which were hanged, railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thy self and us.

40 But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss.

42 And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.

43 And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

‡ Or, land. 44 And it was about the sixth hour, and there was a darkness over all the ‡ earth, until the ninth hour.

45 And the sun was darkened, and the vail of the temple was rent in the mids.

* Psal. 31.5. 46 ¶ And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, * Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.

47 Now when the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off, beholding these things.

* Matth. 27.57. 50 ¶ * And behold, *there was* a man named Joseph, a counsellour, *and he was* a good man, and a just:

51 (The same had not consented to the counsel and deed of them) *he was* of Arimathea, a city of the Jews, (who also himself waited for the kingdom of God)

52 This man went unto Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus,

53 And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewen in stone, wherein never man before was laid.

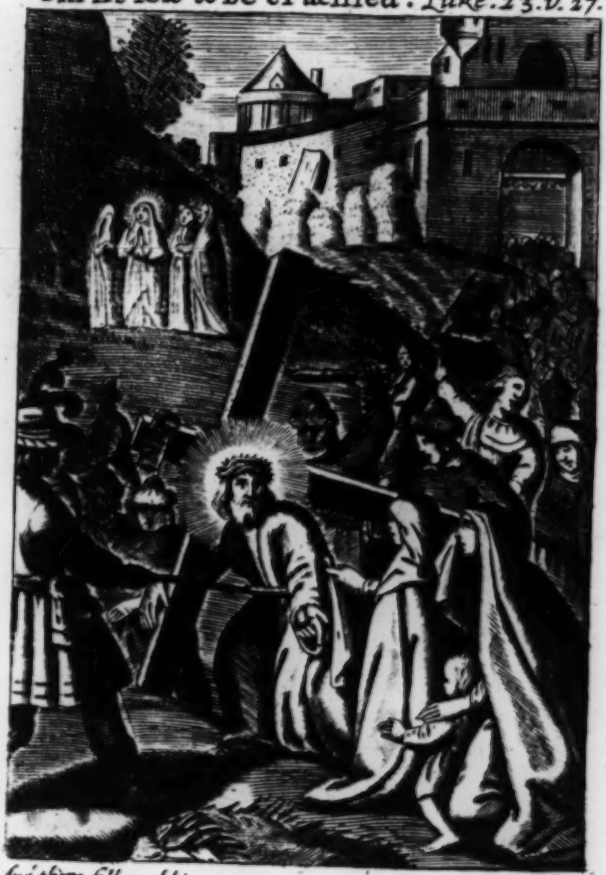
54 And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on.

55 And the women also which came with him from

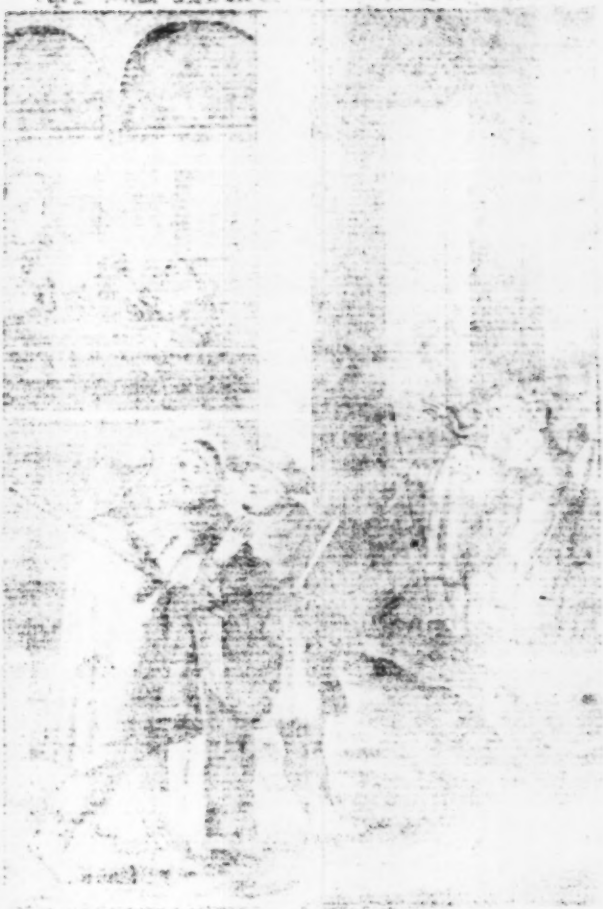
Christ brought before Herod. Luke 23.v:8

And when Herod saw Jesus he was exceeding glad etc.

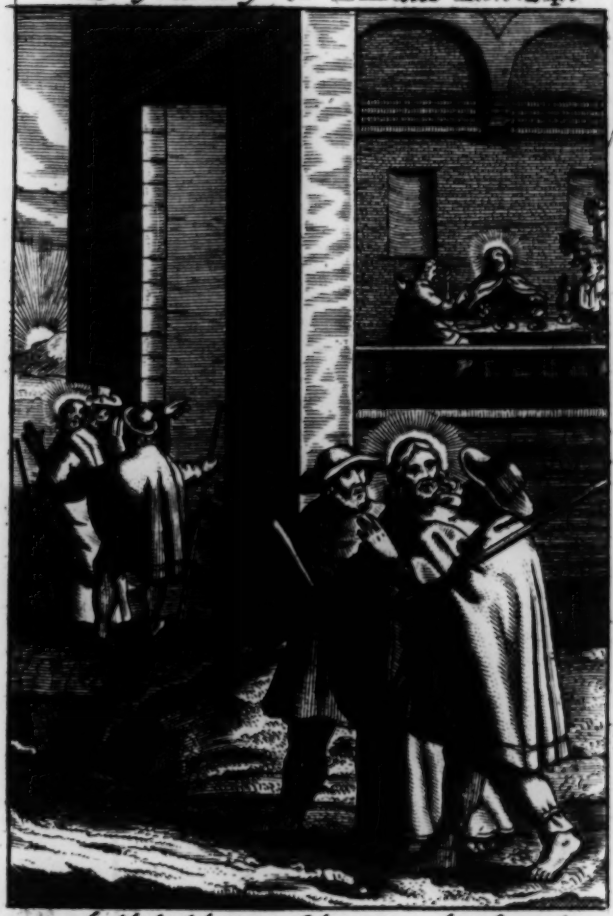
Christ led to be crucified. *Luke.* 23. v. 27.



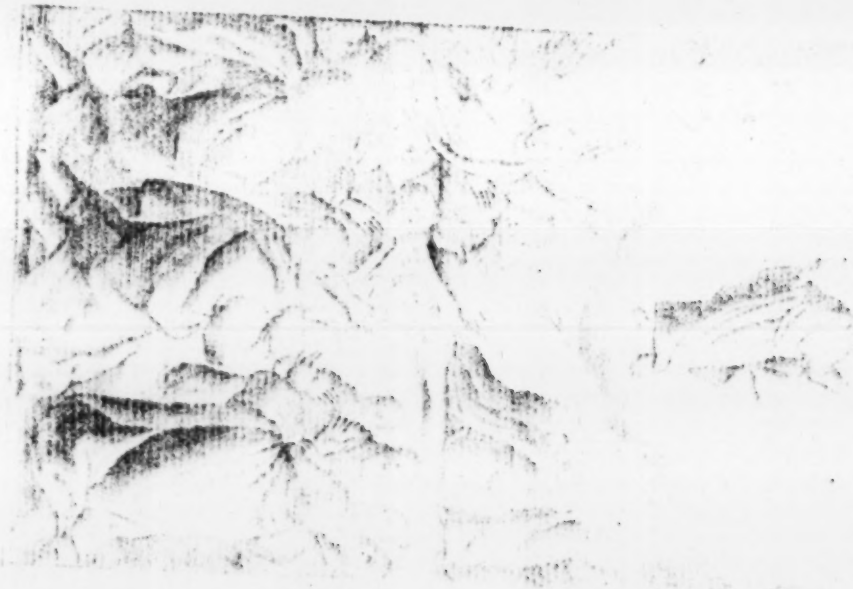
And there followed him a great Company of People, and of women &c.



The Journey to Emaus Luk. 24.



v. 13. And behold, two of them went that same day to a towne which was from Jerusalem about threescore furlong's etc. v. 15. as they comuned together &c reasoned Jesus himselfe drew neare etc:



Christ ascendeth into Heaven. Luke 24.

v. 51. And it came to pass while he blessed them, he was parted from them

from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid.

56 And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments; and rested the sabbath-day, according to the commandment.

CHAP. XXIV.

1 Christ's resurrection is declared by two angels to the women that come to the sepulchre, 9 these report it to others. 13 Christ himself appeareth to the two disciples that went to Emmaus. 36 Afterward he appeareth to the apostles, and reproveth their unbelief, 47 giveth them a charge, 49 promiseth the holy Ghost, 51 and so ascendeth into heaven.

NOw * upon the first *day* of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain *others* with them.

2 And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre.

3 And they entred in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

4 And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments.

5 And as they were afraid, and bowed down *their* faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye ‡ the living among the dead?

6 He is not here, but is risen: *remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee,

7 Saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again.

8 And they remembred his words,

9 And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.

10 It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary *the mother* of James, and other *women that were* with them, which told these things unto the apostles.

11 And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.

12 * Then arose Peter, and ran unto the sepulchre, and stooping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves, and departed, wondring in himself at that which was come to pass.

13 ¶ * And behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was distant from Jerusalem *about* threescore furlongs.

14 And they talked together of all these things which had happened.

15 And it came to pass, that while they communed *together*, and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were holden, that they should not know him.

17 And he said unto them, What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad?

18 And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering, said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there in these days?

19 And he said unto them, What things? and they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God, and all the people:

20 And how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him?

21 But we trusted that it had been he, which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to day is the third day since these things were done.

22 Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre:

23 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive.

24 And certain of them which were with us, went to the sepulchre, and found *it* even so as the women had said: but him they saw not.

25 Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken:

26 Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?

27 And beginning at Moses, and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures, the things concerning himself.

28 And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further.

29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us, for it is towards evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them.

30 And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake, and gave to them.

31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he ‡ vanished out of their sight.

‡ Or, ceased to be seen of them.

32 And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?

33 And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them,

34 Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 And they told what things *were done* in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

36 ¶ * And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace *be* unto you.

* Mark 16. 14.

37 But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

38 And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled, and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?

39 Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I my self: handle me, and see, for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them *his* hands and *his* feet.

41 And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondred, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat?

42 And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honey-comb.

43 And he took *it*, and did eat before them.

44 And he said unto them, These *are* the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the law of Moses, and *in* the prophets, and *in* the psalms concerning me.

45 Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures,

46 And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:

47 And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name, among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

48 And ye are witnesses of these things:

* John 15. 26. Acts 1. 4.

49 ¶ * And behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of

Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.

* Mark 16.19. Acts 1.9. 50 ¶ And he led them out as far as to Bethany: and he lift up his hands, and bleſſed them.
51 *And it came to paſs, while he bleſſed them, he was parted from them, & carried up into heaven.
52 And they worſhipped him, and returned to Jeruſalem, with great joy:
53 And were continually in the temple, praiſing and bleſſing God. Amen.

¶ The Goſpel according to S. JOHN.

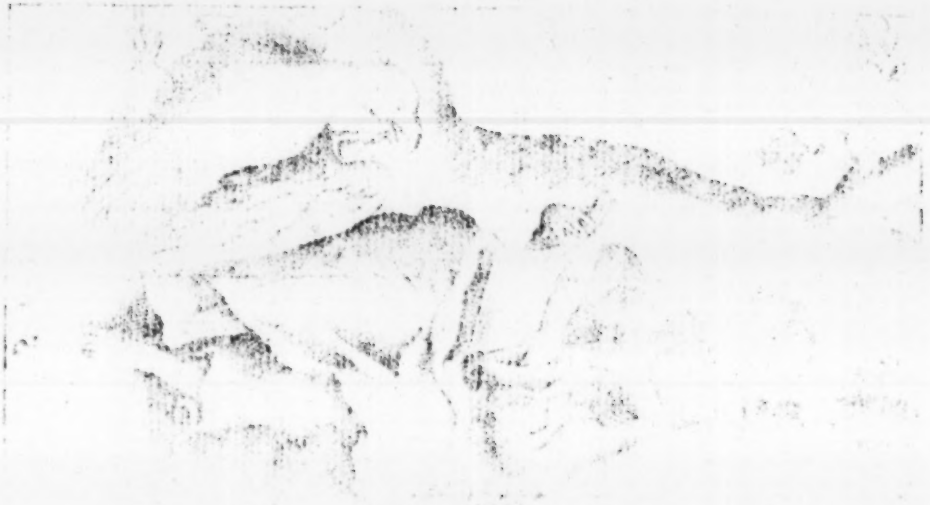
CHAP. I.

1 *The divinity, humanity, and office of Jeſus Chriſt.* 15 *The teſtimony of John.* 39 *The calling of Andrew, Peter, &c.*

IN the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.
* Gen. 1.1. 2 * The ſame was in the beginning with God.
* Col. 1.16. 3 * All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made, that was made.
4 In him was life, and the life was the light of men.
5 And the light ſhineth in darkneſs, and the darkneſs comprehended it not.
* Mat. 3.1. 6 ¶ * There was a man ſent from God, whoſe name *was* John.
7 The ſame came for a witneſs, to bear witneſs of the light, that all men through him might believe.
8 He was not that light, but *was ſent* to bear witneſs of that light.
9 *That* was the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.
* Ieb. 11.3 10 He was in the world, and * the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.
11 He came unto his own, and his own received him not.
12 But as many as received him, to them gave he ‡ power to become the ſons of God, ‡ Or, *the right, or, privilege.* even to them that believe on his name:
13 Which were born, not of bloud, nor of the will of the fleſh, nor of the will of man, but of God.
* Mat. 1.16 14 * And the Word was made fleſh, and dwelt among us (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the onely begotten of the Father) full of grace and truth.
15 ¶ John bare witneſs of him, and cried, ſaying, This was he of whom I ſpake, He that cometh after me, is preferred before me; for he was before me.
* Col. 2.9. 16 And of his * fulneſs have all we received, and grace for grace.
17 For the law was given by Moſes, but grace and truth came by Jeſus Chriſt.
* 1 Tim. 6.16. 1 John 4.12. 18 * No man hath ſeen God at any time; the onely begotten Son, which is in the boſom of the Father, he hath declared *him*.
19 ¶ And this is the record of John, when the Jews ſent prieſts, and Levites from Jeruſalem, to aſk him, Who art thou?
20 And he confeſſed, and denied not; but confeſſed, I am not the Chriſt.
21 And they aſked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he ſaith, I am not. Art thou ‡ that prophet? And he anſwered, No.
‡ Or, a Prophet. 22 Then ſaid they unto him, Who art thou? that we may give an anſwer to them that ſent us: what ſayeſt thou of thy ſelf?
* Mat. 3.3. 23 * He ſaid, I *am* the voice of one crying in the wilderneſs, Make ſtraight the way of the Lord, as ſaid the prophet Eſaias.
24 And they which were ſent, were of the Phariſees.
25 And they aſked him, and ſaid unto him, Why baptizeſt thou then, if thou be not that Chriſt, nor Elias, neither that prophet?
26 John anſwered them, ſaying, I baptize with water: but there ſtandeth one among you, whom ye know not;
* Mat. 3.11. Acts 13.25. 27 * He it is who coming after me, is preferred before me, whoſe ſhoes latchet I am not worthy to unlooſe.
28 Theſe things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.
29 ¶ The next day John ſeeth Jeſus coming unto him, and ſaith, Behold the Lamb of God, which ‡ taketh away the ſin of the world. ‡ Or, *beareth.*
30 This is he of whom I ſaid, After me cometh a man, which is preferred before me: for he was before me.
31 And I knew him not: but that he ſhould be made manifeſt to Iſrael, therefore am I come baptizing with water.
* Matth. 3.16. 32 * And John bare record, ſaying, I ſaw the Spirit deſcending from heaven, like a dove, and it abode upon him.
33 And I knew him not: but he that ſent me to baptize with water, the ſame ſaid unto me, Upon whom thou ſhalt ſee the Spirit deſcending and remaining on him, the ſame is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghoſt.
34 And I ſaw, and bare record that this is the Son of God.
35 ¶ Again the next day after, John ſtood, and two of his diſciples:
36 And looking upon Jeſus as he walked, he ſaith, Behold the Lamb of God.
37 And the two diſciples heard him ſpeak, and they followed Jeſus.
38 Then Jeſus turned, and ſaw them following, and ſaith unto them, What ſeek ye? They ſaid unto him, Rabbi, (which is to ſay, being interpreted, Maſter) where ‡ dwelleſt thou? ‡ Or, *abideſt.*
39 He ſaith unto them, Come and ſee. They came and ſaw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was ‡ about the tenth hour. ‡ That is, *two hours before night.*
40 One of the two which heard John *ſpeak*, and followed him, was Andrew Simon Peters brother.
41 He firſt findeth his own brother Simon, and ſaith unto him, We have found the Meſſias, which is, being interpreted, ‡ the Chriſt. ‡ Or, *anointed.*
42 And he brought him to Jeſus. And when Jeſus beheld him, he ſaid, Thou art Simon the ſon of Jona: thou ſhalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, ‡ a ſtone ‡ Or, *Peter.*
43 ¶ The day following, Jeſus would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and ſaith unto him, Follow me.
44 Now Philip was of Bethſaida, the city of Andrew and Peter.
* Gen. 49.10. Deut. 18.18. * Iſa. 4.2. 45 Philip findeth Nathanael, and ſaith unto him, We have found him of whom * Moſes in the law, and the * prophets did write, Jeſus of Nazareth, the ſon of Joſeph.
46 And Nathanael ſaid unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip ſaith unto him, Come and ſee.
47 Jeſus ſaw Nathanael coming to him, and ſaith of him, Behold an Iſraelite indeed, in whom is no guile.
48 Nathanael ſaith unto him, Whence knoweſt thou me? Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou waſt under the fig-tree, I ſaw thee.
49 Nathanael anſwered and ſaith unto him, Rabbi,

S. IOHN.

Iohn. 1: v:1: *In the beginning was the word, and the word was with* God, *and the word was* God. *v:2. the same was in the beginning with* God. *v:3. All things were made by him, etc.*



The Marriage in Cana. *John. 2.*

v. 7. Jesus saith unto them fill the water-pots with water. etc. v. 9. when the Ruler of the feast had tasted the water was made wine etc.

Christ teacheth Nicodemus. Joan. 3. v. 1. &c.

There was a man of the Pharisees etc. v. 2. The same came to Jesus by night and said unto him etc.

Rabbi, thou art the Son of God, thou art the King of Iſrael.

50 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, Becauſe I ſaid unto thee, I ſaw thee under the fig-tree, believeſt thou? thou ſhalt ſee greater things then theſe.

51 And he ſaith unto him, Verily verily I ſay unto you, Hereafter you ſhall ſee heaven open, and the angels of God aſcending and deſcending upon the Son of man.

CHAP. II.

1 Chriſt turneth water into wine, 12 departeth into Capernaum, and to Jeruſalem, 14 where he purgeth the temple of buyers and ſellers: 19 He foretelleth his death and reſurrection. 23 Many believed becauſe of his miracles, but he would not truſt himſelf with them.

AND the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jeſus was there.

2 And both Jeſus was called, and his diſciples, to the marriage.

3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jeſus ſaith unto him, They have no wine.

4 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come.

5 His mother ſaith unto the ſervants, Whatſoever he ſaith unto you, do *it*.

6 And there were ſet there ſix water-pots of ſtone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece.

7 Jeſus ſaith unto them, Fill the water-pots with water. And they filled them up to the brim.

8 And he ſaith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the governour of the feaſt. And they bare *it*.

9 When the ruler of the feaſt had taſted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was, (but the ſervants which drew the water knew) the governour of the feaſt called the bridegroom,

10 And ſaith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth ſet forth good wine; and when men have well drunk, then that which is worſe: *but* thou haſt kept the good wine until now.

11 This beginning of miracles did Jeſus in Cana of Galilee, and manifeſted forth his glory; and his diſciples believed on him.

12 ¶ After this he went down to Capernaum, he and his mother, & his brethren, and his diſciples, and they continued there not many days.

13 ¶ And the Jews paſſover was at hand, and Jeſus went up to Jeruſalem,

14 And found in the temple thoſe that ſold oxen, and ſheep, and doves, and the changers of money, ſitting:

15 And when he had made a ſcourge of ſmall cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the ſheep, and the oxen; and poured out the changers money, and overthrew the tables;

16 And ſaid unto them that ſold doves, Take theſe things hence; make not my Fathers houſe an houſe of merchandiſe.

17 And his diſciples remembred that it was written, * The zeal of thine houſe hath eaten me up.

18 ¶ Then anſwered the Jews, and ſaid unto him, What ſign ſheweſt thou unto us, ſeeing that thou doeſt theſe things?

19 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, * Deſtroy this temple, and in three days I will raiſe it up.

20 Then ſaid the Jews, Fourty and ſix years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days?

21 But he ſpake of the temple of his body.

22 When therefore he was riſen from the dead, his diſciples remembred that he had ſaid this unto them: and they believed the ſcripture, and the word which Jeſus had ſaid.

23 ¶ Now when he was in Jeruſalem at the paſſover, in the feaſt-*day*, many believed in his name, when they ſaw the miracles which he did.

24 But Jeſus did not commit himſelf unto them, becauſe he knew all men.

25 And needed not that any ſhould teſtifie of man: for he knew what was in man.

CHAP. III.

1 Chriſt teacheth Nicodemus the neceſſity of regeneration: 14 Of faith in his death. 15 The great love of God towards the world. 18 Condemnation for unbelief. 23 The baptiſm, witneſs, and doctrine of John concerning Chriſt.

THERE was a man of the Phariſees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews:

2 The ſame came to Jeſus by night, and ſaid unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do theſe miracles that thou doeſt, except God be with him:

3 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, Verily verily I ſay unto thee, Except a man be born ‡ again, he cannot ſee the kingdom of God. ‡ Or, *from above.*

4 Nicodemus ſaith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the ſecond time into his mothers womb, and be born?

5 Jeſus anſwered, Verily verily I ſay unto thee, Except a man be born of water, and *of* the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

6 That which is born of the fleſh, is fleſh; and that which is born of the Spirit, is ſpirit.

7 Marvel not that I ſaid unto thee, Ye muſt be born ‡ again. ‡ Or, *from above.*

8 The wind bloweth where it liſteth, and thou heareſt the ſound thereof, but canſt not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: ſo is every one that is born of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus anſwered and ſaid unto him, How can theſe things be?

10 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, Art thou a maſter of Iſrael, and knoweſt not theſe things?

11 Verily verily I ſay unto thee, We ſpeak that we do know, and teſtifie that we have ſeen; and ye receive not our witneſs.

12 If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how ſhall ye believe, if I tell you of heavenly things?

13 And no man hath aſcended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, *even* the Son of man which is in heaven.

14 ¶ * And as Moſes lifted up the ſerpent in the wilderneſs, even ſo muſt the Son of man be lifted up: * Num. 21.9.

15 That whoſoever believeth in him, ſhould not periſh, but have eternal life.

16 ¶ * For God ſo loved the world, that he gave his onely begotten Son, that whoſoever believeth in him, ſhould not periſh, but have everlaſting life. * 1 John 4.9.

17 * For God ſent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be ſaved. * Chap. 12.47.

18 ¶ He that believeth on him, is not condemned: but he that believeth not, is condemned already, becauſe he hath not believed in the name of the onely begotten Son of God.

19 And this is the condemnation, * that light is come into the world, and men loved darkneſs rather then light, becauſe their deeds were evil. * Chap. 1.4.

20 For every one that doeth evil, hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, leſt his deeds ſhould be ‡ reproved. ‡ Or, *diſcovered.*

21 But he that doeth truth, cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifeſt, that they are wrought in God.

22 ¶ After theſe things came Jeſus and his diſciples into the land of Judea, and there he
† Chap. 4.2. tarried with them, * and baptized.
23 ¶ And John alſo was baptizing in Enon, near to Salim, becauſe there was much water there: and they came and were baptized.
24 For John was not yet caſt into priſon.
25 ¶ Then there aroſe a queſtion between *ſome* of Johns diſciples and the Jews, about purifying.
26 And they came unto John, and ſaid unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jor-
† Chap. 1.7. 34. dan, * to whom thou bareſt witneſs, behold, the ſame baptizeth, and all men come to him.
* Heb. 5.4. 27 John anſwered & ſaid, * A man can receive
‡ Or, *take unto himſelf.* nothing, except it be given him from heaven.
28 Ye your ſelves bear me witneſs, that I
* Chap. 3.28. ſaid, * I am not the Chriſt, but that I am ſent before him.
29 He that hath the bride is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which ſtandeth and heareth him, rejoyceth greatly becauſe of the bridegrooms voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled.
30 He muſt increaſe, but I *muſt* decreaſe.
31 He that cometh from above, is above all: he that is of the earth, is earthly, and ſpeaketh of the earth: he that cometh from heaven, is above all.
32 And what he hath ſeen and heard, that he teſtifieth; and no man receiveth his teſtimony.
33 He that hath received his teſtimony, * hath
† Rom. 3.4. ſet to his ſeal that God is true.
34 For he whom God hath ſent, ſpeaketh the
‡ Matth. 11.27. words of God: for God giveth not the ſpirit by meaſure *unto him.*
* Hab. 2.4. 35 * The Father loveth the Son, and hath gi-
1 John 5.10. ven all things into his hand.
36 * He that believeth on the Son, hath everlaſting life: and he that believeth not the Son, ſhall not ſee life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

CHAP. IV.

1 Chriſt talketh with a woman of Samaria, and revealeth himſelf unto her. 27 His diſciples marvel. 31 He declareth to them his zeal to Gods glory. 39 Many Samaritanes believe on him. 43 He departeth into Galilee, and healeth the rulers ſon that lay ſick at Capernaum.

WHen therefore the Lord knew how the Phariſees had heard that Jeſus made and baptized mo diſciples then John,
2 (Though Jeſus himſelf baptized not, but *his* diſciples)
3 He left Judea, and departed again into Galilee.
4 And he muſt needs go through Samaria.
5 Then cometh he to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground
† Gen. 33.19. & 48.22. Joſh. 24.32. * that Jacob gave to his ſon Joſeph.
6 Now Jacobs well was there. Jeſus therefore being wearied with *his* journey, ſat thus on the well: and it was about the ſixth hour.
7 There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jeſus ſaith unto her, Give me to drink.
8 For his diſciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat.
9 Then ſaith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it, that thou being a Jew, aſkeſt drink of me which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritanes.
10 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto her, If thou kneweſt the gift of God, and who it is that ſaith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldeſt have aſked of him, and he would have given thee living water.
11 The woman ſaith unto him, Sir, thou haſt nothing to draw with, and the well is deep; from whence then haſt thou that living water?
12 Art thou greater then our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himſelf, and his children, and his cattel?
13 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto her, Whoſoever drinketh of this water, ſhall thirſt again:
14 But whoſoever drinketh of the water that I ſhall give him, ſhall never thirſt: but the water that I ſhall give him, ſhall be in him a well of water, ſpringing up into everlaſting life.
15 The woman ſaith unto him, Sir, give me this water, that I thirſt not, neither come hither to draw.
16 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Go, call thy huſband, and come hither.
17 The woman anſwered and ſaid, I have no huſband. Jeſus ſaid unto her, Thou haſt well ſaid, I have no huſband:
18 For thou haſt had five huſbands, and he whom thou now haſt, is not thy huſband: in that ſaidſt thou truly.
19 The woman ſaith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet.
20 Our fathers worſhipped in this mountain; and ye ſay, that in * Jeruſalem is the place * Deut. 12.5. where men ought to worſhip.
21 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when ye ſhall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jeruſalem worſhip the Father.
22 Ye worſhip ye know not what: we know what we worſhip: for ſalvation is of the Jews.
23 But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worſhippers ſhall worſhip the Father in ſpirit and in truth: for the Father ſeeketh ſuch to worſhip him.
24 * God *is* a Spirit, and they that worſhip him, muſt worſhip *him* in ſpirit and in truth. * 2 Cor. 3.17.
25 The woman ſaith unto him, I know that Meſſias cometh, which is called Chriſt: when he is come, he will tell us all things.
26 Jeſus ſaith unto her, I that ſpeak unto thee, am *he.*
27 ¶ And upon this came his diſciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman: yet no man ſaid, What ſeekeſt thou? or, Why talkeſt thou with her?
28 The woman then left her water-pot, and went her way into the city, and ſaith to the men,
29 Come, ſee a man which told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Chriſt?
30 Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.
31 ¶ In the mean while his diſciples prayed him, ſaying, Maſter, eat.
32 But he ſaid unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of.
33 Therefore ſaid the diſciples one to another, Hath any man brought him *ought* to eat?
34 Jeſus ſaith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that ſent me, and to finiſh his work.
35 Say not ye, There are yet four moneths, and *then* cometh harveſt? behold, I ſay unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; * Matth. 9.37. * for they are white already to harveſt.
36 And he that reapeth, receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal: that both he that ſoweth, and he that reapeth may rejoyce together.
37 And herein is that ſaying true, One ſoweth, and another reapeth.
38 I ſent you to reap that whereon ye beſtowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entred into their labours.
39 ¶ And many of the Samaritanes of that city believed on him, for the ſaying of the woman, which

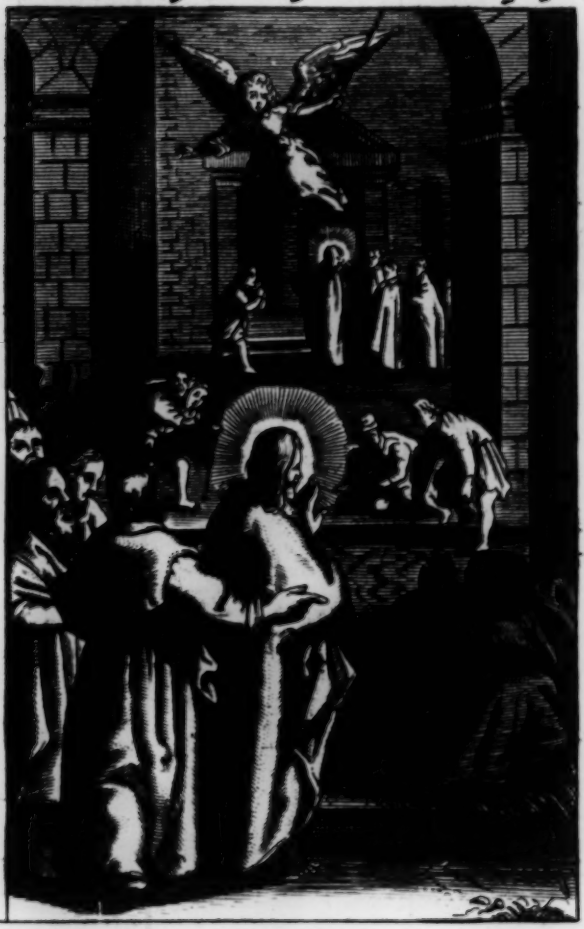
Christ talketh with ỹ woman of Samaria.

Iohn: 4. v. 6. Now Jacobs well was there. etc. v. 7.
There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water, etc:

The Rulers son healed John. 4: v. 46 etc:

And there was a certain noble man whose son was
sick at Capernaum: v. 47. when he heard y^t Jesus was come etc

Christ heales ye man at ye Poole Bethesda: Jo: 5.



5: And a certaine man was there, which had been diseased eight and thirty yeares. 6. When Jesus saw him lie etc. he saith unto him, wilt thou be made whole etc:
8 Jesus saith unto him, rise, take up thy bed and walk.

which testified, He told me all that ever I did.
40 So when the Samaritanes were come unto him, they besought him that he would tarry with them: and he abode there two days.
41 And many mo believed, because of his own word:
42 And said unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy saying: for we have heard him our selves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.
43 ¶ * Now after two days he departed thence, and went into Galilee:
44 For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own countrey.
45 Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem, at the feast: for they also went unto the feast.
46 So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, * where he made the water wine. And there was a certain ‡ noble man, whose son was sick at Capernaum.
47 When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down, and heal his son: for he was at the point of death.
48 Then said Jesus unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will not believe.
49 The noble man saith unto him, Sir, come down ere my child die.
50 Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way; thy son liveth. And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his way.
51 And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told *him*, saying, Thy son liveth.
52 Then enquired he of them the hour, when he began to amend: and they said unto him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him.
53 So the father knew that *it was* at the same hour, in the which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth; and himself believed, and his whole house.
54 This *is* again the second miracle *that* Jesus did, when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

CHAP. V.

1 Jesus on the sabbath-day cureth him that was diseased eight and thirty years. 10 The Jews therefore cavil, and persecute him for it. 17 He answereth for himself, and reproveth them, shewing by the testimony of his father, 32 of John, 36 of his works, 39 and of the scriptures, who he is.

AFter * this, there was a feast of the Jews, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.
2 Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep-‡ *market* a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue, Bethesda, having five porches.
3 In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water.
4 For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.
5 And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years.
6 When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time *in that case*, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?
7 The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me.
8 Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk.
9 And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed and walked: and on the same day was the sabbath.
10 ¶ The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath-day, * it is not lawful for thee to carry *thy* bed.
11 He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed and walk.
12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed & walk?
13 And he that was healed, wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, ‡ a multitude being in *that* place.
14 Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee.
15 The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus which had made him whole.
16 And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath-day.
17 ¶ But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.
18 Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only had broken the sabbath, but said also, that God was his Father, making himself equal with God.
19 Then answered Jesus, and said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what thing soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.
20 For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works then these, that ye may marvel.
21 For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth *them*: even so the Son quickeneth whom he will.
22 For the Father judgeth no man; but hath committed all judgement unto the Son:
23 That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.
24 Verily verily I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.
25 Verily verily I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live.
26 For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself;
27 And hath given him authority to execute judgement also, because he is the Son of man.
28 Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice,
29 And shall come forth, * they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.
30 I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgement is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.
31 * If I bear witness of my self, my witness is not true.
32 ¶ * There is another that beareth witness of me, and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true.
33 Ye sent unto John, * and he bare witness unto the truth.

‡ Or, *from the multitude that was.*

* Jer. 17. 21

* Matth. 25. 46.

* Chap. 8. 14.
* Matth. 3. 17.
* Chap. 1. 7.

34 But I receive not testimony from man: but these things I say, that ye might be saved.

35 He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoyce in his light.

36 ¶ But I have greater witness then *that* of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me.

37 And the Father himself which hath sent
* Matth. 3. 17. & 17. 5. me, * hath born witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, * nor seen his shape.
* Deut. 4. 12. 38 And ye have not his word abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye believe not.

39 ¶ Search the scriptures, for in them ye think ye have eternal life, and they are they which testifie of me.

40 And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.

41 I receive not honour from men.

42 But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you.

43 I am come in my Fathers name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive.

* Chap 12. 43. 44 * How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that *cometh* from God onely?

45 Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is *one* that accuseth you, *even* Moses, in whom ye trust.

* Gen. 3. 15. Deut. 18. 15. 46 For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: * for he wrote of me.

47 But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ feedeth five thousand men with five loaves and two fishes. 15 Thereupon the people would have made him king. 16 But withdrawing himself, he walketh on the sea to his disciples, 26 reproveth the people flocking after him, and all the fleshly hearers of his word, 32 declareth himself to be the bread of life to believers. 66 Many disciples depart from him. 68 Peter confesseth him. 70 Judas is a devil.

AFter these things Jesus went over the sea of Galilee, which is *the sea* of Tiberias.

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased.

3 And Jesus went up into a mountain, and there he sat with his disciples.

* Lev. 23. 5. Deut. 16. 1. 4 * And the passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh.

* Matt. 14. 15. 5 ¶ * When Jesus then lift up *his* eyes, and saw a great company come unto him, he saith unto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread that these may eat?

6 (And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do)

7 Philip answered him, Two hundred penyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.

8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peters brother, saith unto him,

9 There is a lad here which hath five barley-loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?

10 And Jesus said, Make the men sit down. Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down in number about five thousand.

11 And Jesus took the loaves, and when he had given thanks, he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set down; and likewise of the fishes, as much as they would.

12 When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.

13 Therefore they gathered *them* together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley-loaves, which remained over and above unto them that had eaten.

14 Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that prophet that should come into the world.

15 ¶ When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force, to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

16 * And when even was *now* come, his disciples went down unto the sea, * Matt. 14. 23.

17 And entred into a ship, and went over the sea, towards Capernaum: and it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them.

18 And the sea arose by reason of a great wind that blew.

19 So when they had rowed about five and twenty, or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship: and they were afraid.

20 But he saith unto them, It is I, be not afraid.

21 Then they willingly received him into the ship: and immediately the ship was at the land whither they went.

22 ¶ The day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the sea, saw that there was none other boat there, save that one whereinto his disciples were entred, & that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but *that* his disciples were gone away alone:

23 (How beit, there came other boats from Tiberias, nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks)

24 When the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus.

25 And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither?

26 Jesus answered them and said, Verily verily I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves and were filled.

27 ‡ Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: * for him hath God the Father sealed. ‡ Or, work not. * Matt. 3. 17.

28 Then said they unto him, What shall we do that we might work the works of God?

29 Jesus answered and said unto them, * This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent. * 1 John 3. 23.

30 They said therefore unto him, What sign shewest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work?

31 * Our fathers did eat manna in the desert; as it is written, * He gave them bread from heaven to eat. * Exod. 16. 15. Num. 11. 7. * Psal. 78. 25.

32 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven.

33 For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, & giveth life unto the world.

34 Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread.

35 And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me, shall never hunger, and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.

36 But I said unto you, that ye also have seen me, and believe not.

37 All that the Father giveth me, shall come

to me; and him that cometh to me, I will in no wise cast out.

38 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

39 And this is the Fathers will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me, I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.

40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

41 The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven.

42 And they said, * Is not this Jesus the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven?

43 Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmure not among your selves.

44 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me, draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.

45 * It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.

46 Not that any man hath seen the Father, * save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father.

47 Verily verily I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life.

48 I am that bread of life.

49 Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead.

50 This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.

51 I am the living bread, which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give, is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.

52 The Jews therefore strove amongst themselves, saying, How can this man give us *his* flesh to eat?

53 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you.

54 Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day.

55 For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed.

56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

57 As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father: so, he that eateth me, even he shall live by me.

58 This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread, shall live for ever.

59 These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard *this*, said, This is an hard saying, who can hear it?

61 When Jesus knew in himself, that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them, Doth this offend you?

62 * *What* and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before?

63 It is the spirit that quickeneth, the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, *they* are spirit, and *they* are life.

64 But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning, who they were that believed not, and who should betray him.

65 And he said, Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.

66 ¶ From that *time* many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will ye also go away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life.

69 * And we believe, and are sure that thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God. * Matth. 16, 16.

70 Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil?

71 He spake of Judas Iscariot *the son* of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

CHAP. VII.

1 *Jesus reproveth the ambition and boldness of his kinsmen,* 10 *goeth up from Galilee to the feast of tabernacles,* 14 *teacheth in the temple.* 40 *Divers opinions of him among the people.* 45 *The Pharisees are angry that their officers took him not, and chide with Nicodemus for taking his part.*

AFter these things, Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought to kill him. * Levit. 23. 34.

2 * Now the Jews feast of tabernacles was at hand.

3 His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that thy disciples also may see the works that thou doest.

4 For *there is* no man *that* doeth any thing in secret, and he himself seeketh to be known openly: If thou do these things, shew thy self to the world.

5 For neither did his brethren believe in him.

6 Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway ready.

7 The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testifie of it, that the works thereof are evil.

8 Go ye up unto this feast: I go not up yet unto this feast, * for my time is not yet full come. * Chap. 8. 20.

9 When he had said these words unto them, he abode *still* in Galilee.

10 ¶ But when his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret.

11 Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he?

12 And there was much murmuring among the people concerning him: for some said, He is a good man: others said, Nay; but he deceiveth the people.

13 Howbeit, no man spake openly of him, for fear of the Jews.

14 ¶ Now about the midst of the feast, Jesus went up into the temple, and taught.

15 And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man ‡ letters, having never learned? ‡ Or, learning.

16 Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.

17 If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or *whether* I speak of my self.

18 He that speaketh of himself, seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent

sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him.

* Exod. 24. 3. * Chap. 5. 18. 19 * Did not Moses give you the law, and *yet* none of you keepeth the law? * Why go ye about to kill me?

20 The people answered and said, Thou hast a devil: who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Jesus answered and said unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvel.

* Levit. 12. 3. * Gen. 17. 10. 22 * Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision, (not because it is of Moses, *but of the fathers) and ye on the sabbath-day circumcise a man.

‡ Or, without breaking the law of Moses. * Deut. 1. 16. 23 If a man on the sabbath-day receive circumcision, ‡that the law of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath-day?

24 * Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.

25 Then said some of them of Jerusalem, Is not this he whom they seek to kill?

26 But lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing unto him: do the rulers know indeed that this is the very Christ?

27 Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.

28 Then cried Jesus in the temple as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am: and I am not come of my self, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not.

29 But I know him, for I am from him, and he hath sent me.

30 Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come.

31 And many of the people believed on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these which this *man* hath done?

32 ¶ The Pharisees heard that § people murmured such things concerning him; & the Pharisees & the chief priests sent officers to take him.

33 Then said Jesus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and *then* I go unto him that sent me.

* Chap. 13. 33. 34 * Ye shall seek me, and shall not find *me*: and where I am, *thither* ye cannot come.

‡ Or, Greeks. 35 Then said the Jews among themselves, Whither will he go, that we shall not find him? will he go unto the dispersed among the ‡ Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles?

36 What *manner of* saying is this that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find *me*: and where I am, *thither* ye cannot come.

* Levit. 23. 36. * Deut. 18. 15. 37 * In the last day, that great *day* of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink.

38 * He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.

* Isa. 44. 3. Joel 2. 28. 39 (* But this spake he of the spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the holy Ghost was not yet *given*, because that Jesus was not yet glorified.)

40 ¶ Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the prophet.

41 Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee?

* Matth. 2. 5. 42 * Hath not the scripture said, That Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was?

43 So there was a division among the people because of him.

44 And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid hands on him.

45 ¶ Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him?

46 The officers answered, Never man spake like this man.

47 Then answered them the Pharisees, Are ye also deceived?

48 Have any of the rulers, or of the Pharisees believed on him?

49 But this people who knoweth not the law are cursed.

* Chap. 3. 2. 50 Nicodemus saith unto them, (* he that came to Jesus by night, being one of them)

* Deut. 1. 16, &c. 2 Chap. 19. 15. 51 * Doth our law judge any man before it hear him, and know what he doeth?

52 They answered, and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search, and look: for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.

53 And every man went unto his own house.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Christ delivereth the woman taken in adultery. 12 He preacheth himself the light of the world, and justifieth his doctrine, 33 answereth the Jews that boasted of Abraham, 59 and conveyeth himself from their cruelty.

JEsus went unto the mount of Olives:

2 And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down and taught them.

3 And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst,

4 They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.

* Levit. 20. 10. 5 * Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?

6 This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with *his* finger wrote on the ground as though he heard them not.

* Deut. 17. 7. 7 So when they continued asking him, he lift up himself, and said unto them, * He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.

8 And again he stooped down and wrote on the ground.

9 And they which heard *it*, being convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, *even* unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.

10 When Jesus had lift up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

11 She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.

* Chap. 9. 5. and 12. 46 12 ¶ Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, * I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.

13 The Pharisees therefore said unto him, Thou bearest record of thy self; thy record is not true.

* Chap. 5. 31. 14 Jesus answered and said unto them, *Though I bear record of my self, *yet* my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I go.

15 Ye judge after the flesh, I judge no man.

16 And yet if I judge, my judgment is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me.

* Deut. 17. 6. Matth. 18. 16. 17 * It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true.

18 I am one that bear witness of my self, and the Father that sent me, beareth witness of me.

19 Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father?

The Woman taken in adultery delivered Jo: 8

3. Then the Scribes and the Pharisees brought unto him a Woman taken in Adultery and set her in the midst. etc:

6. But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on ye ground as though he heard them not.

ther? Jesus answered, Ye neither know me nor my Father: if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also.

20 These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him, for his hour was not yet come.

21 Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins: whither I go, ye cannot come.

22 Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come.

23 And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath, I am from above: ye are of this world, I am not of this world.

24 I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am *he*, ye shall die in your sins.

25 Then said they unto him, Who art thou? And Jesus saith unto them, Even *the same* that I said unto you from the beginning.

26 I have many things to say, and to judge of you: but he that sent me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him.

27 They understood not that he spake to them of the Father.

28 Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lift up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am *he*, and *that* I do nothing of my self; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things.

29 And he that sent me, is with me: the Father hath not left me alone: for I do always those things that please him.

30 As he spake these words, many believed on him.

31 Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, *then* are ye my disciples indeed;

32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

33 ¶ They answered him, We be Abrahams seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free?

34 Jesus answered them, Verily verily I say unto you, * Whosoever committeth sin, is the servant of sin.

35 And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: *but* the son abideth ever.

36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

37 I know that ye are Abrahams seed; but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.

38 I speak that which I have seen with my Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father.

39 They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abrahams children, ye would do the works of Abraham.

40 But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which *I* have heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, *even* God.

42 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth, and came from God; neither came I of my self, but he sent me.

43 Why do ye not understand my speech? *even* because ye cannot hear my word.

44 * Ye are of *your* father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do: he was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

45 And because I tell *you* the truth, ye believe me not.

46 Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me?

47 * He that is of God, heareth Gods words: ye therefore hear *them* not, because ye are not of God.

48 Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil?

49 Jesus answered, I have not a devil; but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me.

50 And I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth.

51 Verily verily I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.

52 Then said the Jews unto him, Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death.

53 Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thy self?

54 Jesus answered, If I honour my self, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say, that he is your God:

55 Yet ye have not known him; but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his saying.

56 Your father Abraham rejoyced to see my day: and he saw *it*, and was glad.

57 Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham?

58 Jesus said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

59 Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.

CHAP. IX.

1 *The man that was born blind restored to sight.* 8 *He is brought to the Pharisees.* 13 *They are offended at it, and excommunicate him:* 35 *but he is received of Jesus, and confesseth him.* 39 *Who they are whom Christ enlightneth.*

AND as *Jesus* passed by, he saw a man which was blind from *his* birth.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind?

3 Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

4 I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh when no man can work.

5 As long as I am in the world, * I am the light of the world.

6 When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he ‡ anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay,

7 And said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

8 ¶ The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him, that he was blind, said, Is not this he that sat and begged?

9 Some said, This is he: others *said*, He is like him: *but* he said, I am *he*.

10 Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened?

11 He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus,

* 1 Joh. 4. 6.

* Chap. 1. 9.

‡ Or, *spread the clay upon the eyes of the blind man.*

Jesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, & wash: and I went and washed, and I received sight.

12 Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

13 ¶ They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind.

14 And it was the sabbath-day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see.

16 Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath-day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner, do such miracles? And there was a division among them.

17 They say unto the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.

18 But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight.

19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see?

20 His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind:

21 But by what means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age, ask him, he shall speak for himself.

22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue.

23 Therefore said his parents, He is of age, ask him.

24 Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner.

25 He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner *or no*, I know not: one thing I know, that whereas I was blind, now I see.

26 Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

27 He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear *it* again? will ye also be his disciples?

28 Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses disciples.

29 We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.

30 The man answered and said unto them, Why, herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and *yet* he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth.

32 Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind.

33 If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.

34 They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they † cast him out.

† Excommunicated him.

35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God?

36 He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?

37 And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.

38 And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.

39 ¶ And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world: that they which see not, might see; and that they which see, might be made blind.

40 And *some* of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also?

41 Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.

CHAP. X.

1 *Christ is the door, and the good shepherd.* 19 *Divers opinions of him.* 24 *He proveth by his works that he is Christ the Son of God:* 39 *escapeth the Jews,* 40 *and goeth again beyond Jordan, where many believed on him.*

VErily verily I say unto you, He that entreth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.

2 But he that entreth in by the door, is the shepherd of the sheep.

3 To him the porter openeth, and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice.

5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.

6 This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

7 Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily verily I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep.

8 All that ever came before me, are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them.

9 I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture.

10 The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have *it* more abundantly.

11 * I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep. * Ps. 40. 11. Ezek. 34. 23.

12 But he that is an hireling and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.

13 The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep.

14 I am the good shepherd, and know my *sheep*, and am known of mine.

15 As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.

16 And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; * and there shall be one fold, *and* one shepherd. * Ezek. 37. 22.

17 Therefore doth my Father love me, * because I lay down my life, that I might take it again. * Isa. 53. 7, 8.

18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself: I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. * This commandment have I received of my Father. * Acts 2. 24.

19 ¶ There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings.

20 And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is mad; why hear ye him?

21 Others said, These are not the words of him that

14. And it was the sabbath day when Jesus made the Clay, and opened his eyes etc: 18. But the Jewes did not believe concerning him that he had been blind etc:

Christ the true Shepherd. *Chap: 10: v: 1*

Christ raiseth Lazarus. Iohn. 11.

v. 38. Jesus therefore again groning in himselfe cometh to the Grave— etc.

that hath a devil: Can a devil open the eyes of the blind?

22 ¶ And it was at Jeruſalem the * feaſt of the dedication, and it was winter.

23 And Jeſus walked in the temple, in Solomons porch.

24 Then came the Jews round about him, and ſaid unto him, How long doſt thou † make us to doubt? If thou be the Chriſt, tell us plainly.

25 Jeſus anſwered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Fathers name, they bear witneſs of me.

26 But ye believe not; becauſe ye are not of my ſheep, as I ſaid unto you.

27 My ſheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me.

28 And I give unto them eternal life, and they ſhall never periſh, neither ſhall any pluck them out of my hand.

29 My Father which gave *them* me, is greater then all: and none is able to pluck *them* out of my Fathers hand.

30 I and *my* Father are one.

31 Then the Jews took up ſtones again to ſtone him.

32 Jeſus anſwered them, Many good works have I ſhewed you from my Father; for which of theſe works do ye ſtone me?

33 The Jews anſwered him, ſaying, For a good work we ſtone thee not; but for blaſphemy, and becauſe that thou being a man, makeſt thy ſelf God.

34 Jeſus anſwered them, * Is it not written in your law, I ſaid, Ye are gods?

35 If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the ſcripture cannot be broken:

36 Say ye of him whom the Father hath ſanctified, and ſent into the world, Thou blaſphemeſt; becauſe I ſaid, I am the Son of God?

37 If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not.

38 But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know and believe, that the Father *is* in me, and I in him.

39 Therefore they ſought again to take him: but he eſcaped out of their hand,

40 And went away again beyond Jordan, into the place where John at firſt baptized; and there he abode.

41 And many reſorted unto him, and ſaid, John did no miracle: but all things that John ſpake of this man, were true.

42 And many believed on him there.

CHAP. XI.

1 Chriſt raiſeth Lazarus four days buried. 45 Many Jews believe. 47 The high prieſts and Phariſees gather a councel againſt Chriſt. 49 Caiaphas prophecieth. 54 Jeſus hid himſelf. 55 At the paſſover they enquire after him, and lay wait for him.

NOw a certain man was ſick, *named* Lazarus of Bethany, the town of Mary, and her ſiſter Martha.

2 (* It was *that* Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whoſe brother Lazarus was ſick)

3 Therefore his ſiſters ſent unto him, ſaying, Lord behold, he whom thou loveſt is ſick.

4 When Jeſus heard *that*, he ſaid, This ſickneſs is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby.

5 Now Jeſus loved Martha, and her ſiſter, and Lazarus.

6 When he had heard therefore that he was ſick, he abode two days ſtill in the ſame place where he was.

7 Then after that ſaith he to *his* diſciples, Let us go into Judea again.

8 *His* diſciples ſay unto him, Maſter, the Jews of late ſought to ſtone thee; and goeſt thou thither again?

9 Jeſus anſwered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he ſtumbleth not, becauſe he ſeeth the light of this world.

10 But if a man walk in the night, he ſtumbleth, becauſe there is no light in him.

11 Theſe things ſaid he: and after that he ſaith unto them, Our friend Lazarus ſleepeth; but I go that I may awake him out of ſleep.

12 Then ſaid his diſciples, Lord, if he ſleep, he ſhall do well.

13 Howbeit Jeſus ſpake of his death: but they thought that he had ſpoken of taking of reſt in ſleep.

14 Then ſaid Jeſus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead.

15 And I am glad for your ſakes, that I was not there (to the intent ye may believe) nevertheleſs let us go unto him.

16 Then ſaid Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellow-diſciples, Let us alſo go, that we may die with him.

17 Then when Jeſus came, he found that he had lien in the grave four days already.

18 (Now Bethany was nigh unto Jeruſalem, † about fifteen furlongs off)

† That is, *about two miles.*

19 And many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.

20 Then Martha, aſſoon as ſhe heard that Jeſus was coming, went and met him: but Mary ſat *ſtill* in the houſe.

21 Then ſaid Martha unto Jeſus, Lord, if thou hadſt been here, my brother had not died.

22 But I know, that even now, whatſoever thou wilt aſk of God, God will give *it* thee.

23 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Thy brother ſhall riſe again.

24 Martha ſaith unto him, * I know that he ſhall riſe again at the reſurrection at the laſt day.

* Luke 14. 14. Chap. 5. 29.

25 Jeſus ſaith unto her, I am the reſurrection and the * life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet ſhall he live:

* Chap. 6. 35.

26 And whoſoever liveth and believeth in me, ſhall never die. Believeſt thou this?

27 She ſaith unto him, Yea, Lord: I believe that thou art the Chriſt, the Son of God, which ſhould come into the world.

28 And when ſhe had ſo ſaid, ſhe went her way, and called Mary her ſiſter ſecretly, ſaying, The Maſter is come, and calleth for thee.

29 Aſſoon as ſhe heard *that*, ſhe aroſe quickly, and came unto him.

30 Now Jeſus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him.

31 The Jews then which were with her in the houſe, and comforted her, when they ſaw Mary, that ſhe roſe up haſtily, and went out, followed her, ſaying, She goeth unto the grave to weep there.

32 Then when Mary was come where Jeſus was, and ſaw him, ſhe fell down at his feet, ſaying unto him, Lord, if thou hadſt been here, my brother had not died.

33 When Jeſus therefore ſaw her weeping, and the Jews alſo weeping which came with her, he groaned in the ſpirit, and † was troubled,

† Gr. *he troubled himſelf.*

34 And ſaid, Where have ye laid him? They ſay unto him, Lord, come and ſee.

35 Jeſus wept.

36 Then ſaid the Jews, Behold how he loved him!

37 And

37 And some of them said, Could not this man, * which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even this man should not have died. * Chap. 9. 6.

38 Jesus therefore again groaning in himself, cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it.

39 Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been *dead* four days.

40 Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God.

41 Then they took away the stone *from the place* where the dead was laid. And Jesus lift up *his* eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee, that thou hast heard me.

42 And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by, I said *it*, that they may believe that thou hast sent me.

43 And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.

44 And he that was dead, came forth, bound hand and foot with grave-clothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

45 Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him.

46 But some of them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.

47 ¶ Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles.

48 If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him; and the Romans shall come, and take away both our place and nation.

49 And one of them *named* Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all,

* Chap. 18. 14. 50 * Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.

51 And this spake he, not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation:

52 And not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God, that were scattered abroad.

53 Then from that day forth they took counsel together for to put him to death.

54 Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews; but went thence unto a country near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

55 ¶ And the Jews passover was nigh at hand: and many went out of the country up to Jerusalem before the passover, to purifie themselves.

56 Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast?

57 Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that if any man knew where he were, he should shew *it*, that they might take him.

CHAP. XII.

1 Jesus excuseth Mary anointing his feet. 9 The people flock to see Lazarus. 10 The high priests consult to kill him. 12 Christ rideth into Jerusalem. 20 Greeks desire to see Jesus. 23 He foretelleth his death. 37 The Jews are generally blinded. 42 Yet many chief rulers believe, but do not confess him. 44 Therefore Jesus calleth earnestly for confession of faith.

THen Jesus, six days before the passover, came to Bethany, where Lazarus was, which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead.

2 There they made him a supper, and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him.

3 Then took Mary a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.

4 Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simons *son*, which should betray him,

5 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?

6 This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and * had the bag, and bare what was put therein. * Chap. 13. 29.

7 Then said Jesus, Let her alone: against the day of my burying hath she kept this.

8 For the poor always ye have with you; but me ye have not always.

9 Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came, not for Jesus sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

10 ¶ But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death;

11 Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

12 ¶ * On the next day, much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, * Matth. 21. 8.

13 Took branches of palm-trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna, blessed *is* the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord.

14 And Jesus when he had found a young ass, sat thereon; as it is written,

15 * Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold, thy King cometh, sitting on an asses colt. * Zech. 9. 9.

16 These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembred they that these things were written of him, and *that* they had done these things unto him.

17 The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record.

18 For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

19 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after him.

20 ¶ And there were certain Greeks among them, that came up to worship at the feast:

21 The same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus.

22 Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: and again, Andrew and Philip told Jesus.

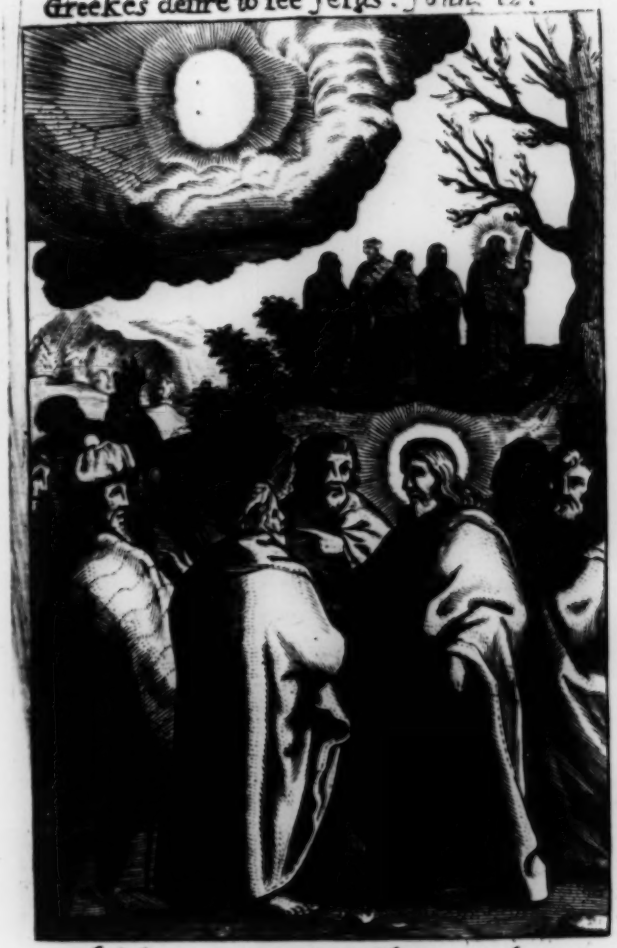
23 ¶ And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come that the Son of man should be glorified.

24 Verily verily I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground, and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

25 * He that loveth his life, shall lose it: and he that hateth his life in this world, shall keep it unto life eternal. * Matth. 10. 39.

26 If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be:

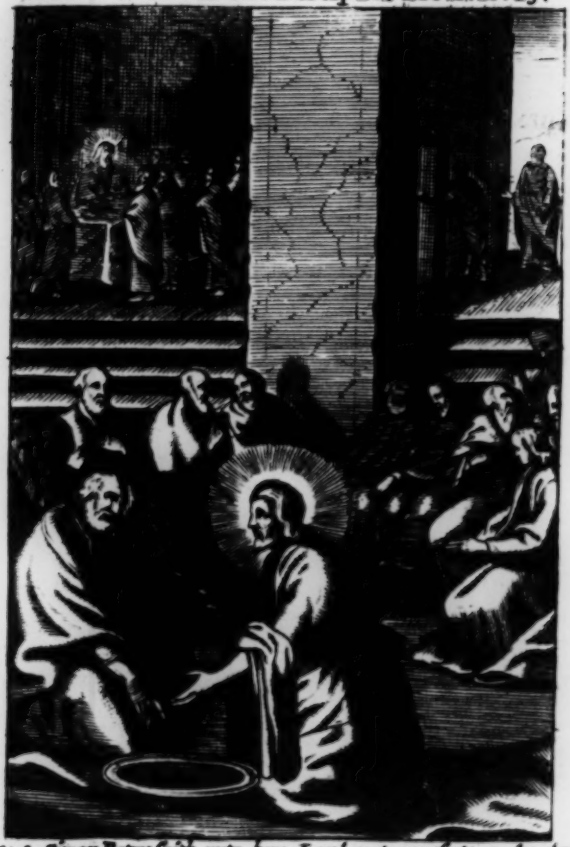
Greekes desire to see Jesus. John. 12.



20: And there were certaine Grekes among them etc:
21. The same came therefore to Phillip etc. and desired him saying Sir we would see Jesus etc:

The figgtree cursed Mat: 21: 19:

Christ washeth the Disciples feete. Io. 13.



v. 8. Simon Peter saith unto him Lord not my feet onely etc.

...e: if any man ſerve me, him will *my* Father honour.

27 Now is my ſoul troubled; and what ſhall I ſay? Father, ſave me from this hour: but for this cauſe came I unto this hour.

28 Father, glorifie thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, *ſaying*, I have both glorified *it*, and will glorifie *it* again.

29 The people therefore that ſtood by and heard *it*, ſaid that it thundered: others ſaid, An angel ſpake to him.

30 Jeſus anſwered, and ſaid, This voice came not becauſe of me, but for your ſakes.

31 Now is the judgment of this world: now ſhall the prince of this world be caſt out.

32 And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.

33 (This he ſaid, ſignifying what death he ſhould die.)

34 The people anſwered him, *We have heard out of the law, that Chriſt abideth for ever: and how ſayeſt thou, The Son of man muſt be lift up? who is this Son of man?

35 Then Jeſus ſaid unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you: walk while ye have the light, leſt darkneſs come upon you: for he that walketh in darkneſs, knoweth not whither he goeth.

36 While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light. Theſe things ſpake Jeſus and departed, and did hide himſelf from them.

37 ¶ But though he had done ſo many miracles before them, yet they believed not on him:

38 That the ſaying of Eſaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he ſpake, *Lord, who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?

39 Therefore they could not believe, becauſe that Eſaias ſaid again,

40 *He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they ſhould not ſee with *their* eyes, nor underſtand with *their* heart, and be converted, and I ſhould heal them.

41 Theſe things ſaid Eſaias, when he ſaw his glory, and ſpake of him.

42 ¶ Nevertheleſs among the chief rulers alſo, many believed on him; but becauſe of the Phariſees they did not confeſs *him*, leſt they ſhould be put out of the ſynagogue.

43 * For they loved the praiſe of men more then the praiſe of God.

44 ¶ Jeſus cried, and ſaid, He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that ſent me.

45 And he that ſeeth me, ſeeth him that ſent me.

46 * I am come a light into the world, that whoſoever believeth on me, ſhould not abide in darkneſs.

47 * And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to ſave the world.

48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: * the word that I have ſpoken, the ſame ſhall judge him in the laſt day.

49 For I have not ſpoken of my ſelf; but the Father which ſent me, he gave me a commandment what I ſhould ſay, and what I ſhould ſpeak.

50 And I know that his commandment is life everlaſting: whatſoever I ſpeak therefore, even as the Father ſaid unto me, ſo I ſpeak.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Jeſus waſheth the diſciples feet; exhorteth them to humility and charity; 18 He foretelleth and diſcovereth to John by a token, that Judas ſhould betray him; 31 commandeth them to love one another; 36 and forewarneth Peter of his denial.

NOw * before the feaſt of the paſſover, when Jeſus knew that his hour was come, that he ſhould depart out of this world, unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end. * Matth. 26. 2.

2 And ſupper being ended, (the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iſcariot, Simons *ſon*, to betray him)

3 Jeſus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God,

4 He riſeth from ſupper, and laid aſide his garments, and took a towel, and girded himſelf.

5 After that he poureth water into a baſon, and began to waſh the diſciples feet, and to wipe *them* with the towel wherewith he was girded.

6 Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter ſaith unto him, Lord, doſt thou waſh my feet?

7 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, What I do thou knoweſt not now; but thou ſhalt know hereafter.

8 Peter ſaith unto him, Thou ſhalt never waſh my feet. Jeſus anſwered him, If I waſh thee not, thou haſt no part with me.

9 Simon Peter ſaith unto him, Lord, not my feet onely, but alſo *my* hands and *my* head.

10 Jeſus ſaith to him, He that is waſhed, needeth not ſave to waſh *his* feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all.

11 For he knew who ſhould betray him; therefore ſaid he, Ye are not all clean.

12 So after he had waſhed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was ſet down again, he ſaid unto them, Know ye what I have done to you?

13 Ye call me Maſter, and Lord: and ye ſay well; for ſo I am.

14 If I then *your* Lord and Maſter, have waſhed your feet, ye alſo ought to waſh one anothers feet.

15 For I have given you an example, that ye ſhould do as I have done to you.

16 * Verily verily I ſay unto you, The ſervant is not greater then his lord, neither he that is ſent, greater then he that ſent him. * Matth. 10. 24. Chap. 15. 20.

17 If ye know theſe things, happy are ye if ye do them.

18 ¶ I ſpeak not of you all; I know whom I have choſen: but that the ſcripture may be fulfilled, * He that eateth bread with me, hath lift up his heel againſt me. * Pſal. 41. 9.

19 ‡ Now I tell you before it come, that when it is come to paſs, ye may believe that I am *he*. ‡ Or, *From henceforth.*

20 * Verily verily I ſay unto you, He that receiveth whomſoever I ſend, receiveth me: and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that ſent me. * Matth. 10. 40.

21 * When Jeſus had thus ſaid, he was troubled in ſpirit, and teſtified, and ſaid, Verily verily I ſay unto you, that one of you ſhall betray me. * Matth. 26. 21.

22 Then the diſciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he ſpake.

23 Now there was leaning on Jeſus boſom, one of his diſciples whom Jeſus loved.

24 Simon Peter therefore beckned to him, that he ſhould aſk who it ſhould be of whom he ſpake.

25 He then lying on Jeſus breaſt, ſaith unto him, Lord, who is it?

26 Jesus answered, He it is to whom I shall
‡ Or, morsel. give a ‡ sop, when I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot, *the son* of Simon.

27 And after the sop, Satan entred into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly.

28 Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him.

29 For some *of them* thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy *those things* that we have need of against the feast: or that he should give something to the poor.

30 He then having received the sop, went immediately out: and it was night.

31 ¶ Therefore when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

32 If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorifie him in himself, and shall straightway glorifie him.

33 Little children, yet a little while I am with
* Chap. 7. 34. * Levit. 19. 18. Ch. 15. 17. Ephes. 5. 2. 1 Joh. 4. 21. you. Ye shall seek me: * and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say unto you.

34 * A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another.

35 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

36 ¶ Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow me afterwards.

37 Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I
* Matth. 26. 33. follow thee now? I will * lay down my life for thy sake.

38 Jesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily verily I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.

CHAP. XIV.

1 *Christ comforteth his disciples with the hope of heaven.* 6 *Professeth himself the way, the truth, and the life, and one with the Father:* 13 *assureth their prayers in his name to be effectual:* 15 *requesteth love and obedience:* 16 *promiseth the holy Ghost the Comforter;* 27 *and leaveth his peace with them.*

LEt not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me.

2 In my Fathers house are many mansions; if *it were* not so, I would have told you: I go to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto my self, that where I am, *there* ye may be also.

4 And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

5 Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest, and how can we know the way?

6 Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, and the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father but by me.

7 If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

8 Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us.

9 Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? He that hath seen me, hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou *then*, Shew us the Father?

10 Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you, I speak not of my self: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doth the works.

11 Believe me that I *am* in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works sake.

12 Verily verily I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also, and greater *works* than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.

13 * And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, * Matth. 7. 7. that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son.

14 If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do *it*.

15 ¶ If ye love me, keep my commandments.

16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;

17 Even the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him; but ye know him, for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

18 I will not leave you ‡ comfortless; I will ‡ Or, orphans. come to you.

19 Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more: but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also.

20 At that day ye shall know, that I *am* in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.

21 He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me, shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest my self to him.

22 Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thy self unto us, and not unto the world?

23 Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.

24 He that loveth me not, keepeth not my sayings: and the word which you hear, is not mine, but the Fathers which sent me.

25 These things have I spoken unto you, being *yet* present with you.

26 But the Comforter, *which is* the holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

27 Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.

28 Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come *again* unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoyce, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater then I.

29 And now I have told you before it come to pass, that when it is come to pass, ye might believe.

30 Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me.

31 But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence.

CHAP. XV.

1 *The consolation and mutual love between Christ and his members under the parable of the vine.* 18 *A comfort in the hatred and persecution of the world.* 26 *The office of the holy Ghost, and of the Apostles.*

I Am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

2 * Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, * Matth. 15. 13. he taketh away; and every *branch* that beareth fruit,

fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

3 *Now are ye clean through the word which I have ſpoken unto you.

4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of it ſelf, except it abide in the vine: no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

5 I am the vine, ye *are* the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the ſame bringeth forth much fruit: for ‡ without me ye can do nothing.

6 If a man abide not in me, he is caſt forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and caſt *them* into the fire, and they are burned.

7 If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye ſhall aſk what ye will, and it ſhall be done unto you.

8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit, ſo ſhall ye be my diſciples.

9 As the Father hath loved me, ſo have I loved you: continue ye in my love.

10 If ye keep my commandments, ye ſhall abide in my love: even as I have kept my Fathers commandments, and abide in his love.

11 Theſe things have I ſpoken unto you that my joy might remain in you, and *that* your joy might be full.

12 * This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you.

13 Greater love hath no man then this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.

14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatſoever I command you.

15 Henceforth I call you not ſervants; for the ſervant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father, I have made known unto you.

16 Ye have not choſen me, but I have choſen you, and * ordained you, that ye ſhould go and bring forth fruit, and *that* your fruit ſhould remain: that whatſoever ye ſhall aſk of the Father in my name, he may give it you.

17 Theſe things I command you, that ye love one another.

18 If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before *it hated* you.

19 If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but becauſe ye are not of the world, but I have choſen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

20 Remember the word that I ſaid unto you, * The ſervant is not greater then the lord. If they have perſecuted me, they will alſo perſecute you: if they have kept my ſaying, they will keep yours alſo.

21 But all theſe things will they do unto you for my names ſake, becauſe they know not him that ſent me.

22 If I had not come, and ſpoken unto them, they had not had ſin: but now they have no ‡ cloke for their ſin.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father alſo.

24 If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had ſin: but now have they both ſeen, and hated both me and my Father.

25 But *this cometh to paſs*, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, * They hated me without a cauſe.

26 * But when the Comforter is come, whom I will ſend unto you from the Father, *even* the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he ſhall teſtifie of me.

27 And ye alſo ſhall bear witneſs, becauſe ye have been with me from the beginning.

CHAP. XVI.

1 *Chriſt comforteth his diſciples againſt tribulation by the promiſe of the holy Ghoſt, and by his reſurrection and aſcenſion,* 23 *aſſureth their prayers made in his name to be acceptable to his Father.* 33 *Peace in Chriſt, and in the world afflictions.*

THeſe things have I ſpoken unto you, that ye ſhould not be offended.

2 They ſhall put you out of the ſynagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whoſoever killeth you will think that he doeth God ſervice.

3 And theſe things will they do unto you, becauſe they have not known the Father, nor me.

4 But theſe things have I told you, that when the time ſhall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And theſe things I ſaid not unto you at the beginning; becauſe I was with you.

5 But now I go my way to him that ſent me, and none of you aſketh me, Whither goeſt thou?

6 But becauſe I have ſaid theſe things unto you, ſorrow hath filled your heart.

7 Nevertheleſs, I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will ſend him unto you.

8 And when he is come, he will ‡ reprove the world of ſin, and of righteouſneſs, and of judgment:

9 Of ſin, becauſe they believe not on me;

10 Of righteouſneſs, becauſe I go to my Father, and ye ſee me no more;

11 Of judgment, becauſe the prince of this world is judged.

12 I have yet many things to ſay unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.

13 Howbeit, when the Spirit of truth is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he ſhall not ſpeak of himſelf; but whatſoever he ſhall hear, *that* ſhall he ſpeak, and he will ſhew you things to come.

14 He ſhall glorifie me; for he ſhall receive of mine, and ſhall ſhew it unto you.

15 All things that the father hath, are mine: therefore ſaid I, that he ſhall take of mine, and ſhall ſhew it unto you.

16 A little while and ye ſhall not ſee me: and again, a little while and ye ſhall ſee me, becauſe I go to the Father.

17 Then ſaid *ſome* of his diſciples among themſelves, What is this that he ſaith unto us, A little while, and ye ſhall not ſee me: and again, a little while, and ye ſhall ſee me: and, Becauſe I go to the Father?

18 They ſaid therefore, What is this that he ſaith, A little while? we cannot tell what he ſaith.

19 Now Jeſus knew that they were deſirous to aſk him, and ſaid unto them, Do ye enquire among your ſelves of that I ſaid, A little while and ye ſhall not ſee me: and again, a little while and ye ſhall ſee me?

20 Verily verily I ſay unto you, that ye ſhall weep and lament, but the world ſhall rejoyce: and ye ſhall be ſorrowful, but your ſorrow ſhall be turned into joy.

21 A woman when ſhe is in travail, hath ſorrow, becauſe her hour is come: but aſſoon as ſhe is delivered of the child, ſhe remembreth no more the anguiſh, for joy that a man is born into the world.

22 And ye now therefore have ſorrow, but I will ſee you again; and your heart ſhall rejoyce, and your joy no man taketh from you.

23 And in that day ye shall ask me nothing: * Matth. 7. 7. * Verily verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you.

24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.

25 These things have I spoken unto you in ‡ proverbs: the time cometh when I shall no more speak unto you in ‡ proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father. ‡ Or, parables. ‡ Or, parables.

26 At that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you:

27 For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God.

28 I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father.

29 His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no ‡ proverb. ‡ Or, parable.

30 Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God.

31 Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe?

32 * Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. * Matth. 26. 31. ‡ Or, his own home.

33 These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer, I have overcome the world.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Christ prayeth to his Father to glorifie him, 6 to preserve his apostles, 11 in unity, 17 and truth: 20 to glorifie them, and all other believers with him in heaven.

THese words spake Jesus, and lift up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorifie thy Son, that thy Son also may glorifie thee.

2 * As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him. * Matth. 28. 18.

3 And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the onely true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent.

4 I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.

5 And now, O Father, glorifie thou me with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

6 I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word.

7 Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me, are of thee.

8 For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me. * Chap. 16. 27.

9 I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me, for they are thine.

10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine, and I am glorified in them

11 And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name, those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we *are*.

12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me, I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition: * that the scripture might be fulfilled. * Psal. 109. 8.

13 And now come I to thee, and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

14 I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil.

16 They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

17 Sanctifie them through thy truth: thy word is truth.

18 As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world.

19 And for their sakes I sanctifie my self, that they also might be ‡ sanctified through *or in* truth. ‡ Or, truly sanctified.

20 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word:

21 That they all may be one, as thou Father *art* in me, and I in thee; that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.

22 And the glory which thou gavest me, I have given them: that they may be one, even as we are one.

23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

24 * Father, I will that they also whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. * Chap. 12. 26.

25 O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee; but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me.

26 And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare *it*: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me, may be in them, and I in them.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Judas betrayeth Jesus. 6 The officers fall to the ground. 10 Peter smiteth off Malchus ear. 12 Jesus is taken and led unto Annas and Caiaphas. 15 Peters denial. 19 Jesus examined before Caiaphas. 28 His arraignment before Pilate: 36 His kingdom. 40 The Jews ask Barabbas to be let loose.

WHen Jesus had spoken these words, * he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entred, and his disciples. * Matth. 26. 36.

2 And Judas also which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jesus oft-times resorted thither with his disciples.

3 * Judas then having received a band *of men*, and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns, and torches, and weapons. * Matth. 26. 47.

4 Jesus therefore knowing all things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them, Whom seek ye?

5 They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am *he*. And Judas also which betrayed him, stood with them.

6 As soon then as he had said unto them, I am *he*, they went backward and fell to the ground.

7 Then asked he them again, Whom seek ye? and they said, Jesus of Nazareth.

8 Jesus answered, I have told you that I am *he*: if therefore ye seek me, let these go their way:

9 That the saying might be fulfilled, which he

Christ is led before Annas. Iohn. 18.

v. 13. And led him away to Annas first etc. v. 25
And Simon Peter stood and warmed himselfe. etc.

Pilate saith unto them Behold ỹ Man. Io: 19

v. 6. They cryed out, saying Crucifie him etc..

he ſpake,* Of them which thou gaveſt me, have I loſt none.

10 Then Simon Peter having a ſword, drew it, and ſmote the high prieſts ſervant, and cut off his right ear. The ſervants name was Malchus.

11 Then ſaid Jeſus unto Peter, Put up thy ſword into the ſheath: the cup which my Father hath given me, ſhall I not drink it?

12 Then the band, and the captain, and officers of the Jews took Jeſus, and bound him:

13 And led him away to Annas firſt (for he was father in law to Caiaphas which was the high prieſt that ſame year.) ‡

14 * Now Caiaphas was he which gave counſel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man ſhould die for the people.

15 ¶ * And Simon Peter followed Jeſus, and *ſo did* another diſciple. That diſciple was known unto the high prieſt, and went in with Jeſus into the palace of the high prieſt.

16 But Peter ſtood at the door without. Then went out that other diſciple which was known unto the high prieſt, and ſpake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter.

17 Then ſaith the damſel that kept the door, unto Peter, Art not thou alſo *one* of this mans diſciples? He ſaith, I am not.

18 And the ſervants and officers ſtood there, who had made a fire of coals, (for it was cold) and they warmed themſelves: and Peter ſtood with them, and warmed himſelf.

19 ¶ The high prieſt then aſked Jeſus of his diſciples, and of his doctrine.

20 Jeſus anſwered him, I ſpake openly to the world; I ever taught in the ſynagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews always reſort, and in ſecret have I ſaid nothing.

21 Why aſkeſt thou me? aſk them which heard me, what I have ſaid unto them: behold, they know what I ſaid.

22 And when he had thus ſpoken, one of the officers which ſtood by, ſtroke Jeſus ‡ with the palm of his hand, ſaying, Anſwereſt thou the high prieſt ſo?

23 Jeſus anſwered him, If I have ſpoken evil, bear witneſs of the evil: but if well, why ſmiteſt thou me?

24 (* Now Annas had ſent him bound unto Caiaphas the high prieſt)

25 And Simon Peter ſtood and warmed himſelf: * They ſaid therefore unto him, Art not thou alſo one of his diſciples? He denied it, and ſaid, I am not.

26 One of the ſervants of the high prieſt (being his kinſman whoſe ear Peter cut off) ſaith, Did not I ſee thee in the garden with him?

27 Peter then denied again, and immediately the crock crew.

28 ¶ * Then led they Jeſus from Caiaphas, unto ‡ the hall of judgment: and it was early, * and they themſelves went not into the judgement-hall, leſt they ſhould be defiled: but that they might eat the paſſover.

29 Pilate then went out unto them, and ſaid, What accuſation bring ye againſt this man?

30 They anſwered and ſaid unto him, If he were not a malefactour, we would not have delivered him up unto thee.

31 Then ſaid Pilate unto them, Take ye him, and judge him according to your law. The Jews therefore ſaid unto him, It is not lawful for us to put any man to death:

32 * That the ſaying of Jeſus might be fulfilled, which he ſpake, ſignifying what death he ſhould die.

33 * Then Pilate entred into the judgement-hall again, and called Jeſus, and ſaid unto him, Art thou the king of the Jews?

34 Jeſus anſwered him, Sayeſt thou this thing of thy ſelf, or did others tell it thee of me?

35 Pilate anſwered, Am I a Jew? Thine own nation, and the chief prieſts have delivered thee unto me: What haſt thou done?

36 Jeſus anſwered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my ſervants fight, that I ſhould not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.

37 Pilate therefore ſaid unto him, Art thou a king then? Jeſus anſwered, Thou ſayeſt that I am a king. To this end I was born, and for this cauſe came I into the world, that I ſhould bear witneſs unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth, heareth my voice.

38 Pilate ſaith unto him, What is truth? And when he had ſaid this, he went out again unto the Jews, and ſaith unto them, I find in him no fault at all.

39 * But ye have a cuſtom, that I ſhould releaſe unto you one at the paſſover: will ye therefore that I releaſe unto you the king of the Jews? * Matth. 27. 15.

40 * Then cried they all again, ſaying, Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber. * Act. 3 14.

CHAP. XIX.

1 Chriſt is ſcourged, crowned with thorns & beaten. 4 Pilate in deſirous to releaſe him, but being overcome with the outrage of the Jews, he delivered him to be crucified. 23 They caſt lots for his garments. 25 He commendeth his mother to John. 28 He dieth. 31 His ſide is pierced. 38 He is buried by Joſeph and Nicodemus.

THen * Pilate therefore took Jeſus, and ſcourged *him*. * Matth. 27. 26.

2 And the ſouldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple robe,

3 And ſaid, Hail king of the Jews: and they ſmote him with their hands.

4 Pilate therefore went forth again, and ſaith unto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that I find no fault in him.

5 Then came Jeſus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And *Pilate* ſaith unto them, Behold the man.

6 When the chief prieſts therefore and officers ſaw him, they cried out, ſaying, Crucifie *him*, crucifie *him*. Pilate ſaith unto them, Take ye him, and crucifie *him*: for I find no fault in him.

7 The Jews anſwered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, becauſe he made himſelf the Son of God.

8 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that ſaying, he was the more afraid;

9 And went again into the judgment-hall, and ſaith unto Jeſus, Whence art thou? But Jeſus gave him no anſwer.

10 Then ſaith Pilate unto him, Speakeſt thou not unto me? knoweſt thou not, that I have power to crucifie thee, and have power to releaſe thee?

11 Jeſus anſwered, Thou couldeſt have no power at all againſt me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater ſin.

12 And from thenceforth Pilate ſought to releaſe him: but the Jews cried out, ſaying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Ceſars friend: whoſoever maketh himſelf a king, ſpeaketh againſt Ceſar.

13 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that ſaying, he brought Jeſus forth, and ſat down in the judgment-ſeat, in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the preparation of the paſſover, and about the ſixth hour: and he ſaith unto the Jews, Behold your king.

15 But they cried out, Away with *him*, away with *him*, crucifie him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucifie your king? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Cesar.

* Matth. 27.31. 16 * Then delivered he him therefore unto them to be crucified. And they took Jesus and led him away.

17 And he bearing his cross, went forth into a place called *the place* of a scull, which is called in the Hebrew, Golgotha:

18 Where they crucified him, & two other with him, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.

19 ¶ And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the cross. And the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS.

20 This title then read many of the Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city: and it was written in Hebrew, *and* Greek, *and* Latine.

21 Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The king of the Jews; but that he said, I am king of the Jews.

22 Pilate answered, What I have written, I have written.

* Matth. 27.35. 23 ¶ * Then the souldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments (and made four parts, to every souldier a part) and also *his* coat: now the coat was without seam, ‡ woven from the top throughout.

‡ Or, *wrought.*

24 They said therefore among themselves, Let us not rent it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, * They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots. These things therefore the souldiers did.

* Psal. 22.18.

25 ¶ Now there stood by the cross of Jesus, his mother, and his mothers sister, Mary *the wife* of ‡ Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene.

‡ Or, *Clopas.*

26 When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold thy son.

27 Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother. And from that hour that disciple took her unto his own *home.*

28 ¶ After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, * that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst.

* Psal. 69.21.

29 Now there was set a vessel full of vineger: and they filled a spunge with vineger, and put it upon hyssope, and put it to his mouth.

30 When Jesus therefore had received the vineger, he said, It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

31 The Jews therefore because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath-day (for that sabbath-day was an high day) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and *that* they might be taken away.

32 Then came the souldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him.

33 But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs.

34 But one of the souldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

* Exod. 12.46. Numb. 9.12. Psa. 34.20. * Zech. 12.10. * Matth. 27.57. 35 And he that saw it, bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe.

36 For these things were done, * that the scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken.

37 And again another scripture saith, * They shall look on him whom they pierced.

38 ¶ * And after this, Joseph of Arimathea, (being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews) besought Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus: and Pilate gave him leave: He came therefore and took the body of Jesus.

39 And there came also Nicodemus (which at the first came to Jesus by night) and brought a mixture of myrrhe and aloes, about an hundred pound *weight.*

40 Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes, with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.

41 Now in the place where he was crucified, there was a garden; and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid.

42 There laid they Jesus therefore, because of the Jews preparation-*day*, for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

CHAP. XX.

1 Mary cometh to the sepulchre: 3 so do Peter and John, ignorant of the resurrection. 11 Jesus appeareth to Mary Magdalene, 19 and to his disciples. 24 The incredulity and confession of Thomas. 30 The scripture is sufficient to salvation.

THE * first *day* of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early when it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre. * Matth. 28.1. Mark 16.1.

2 Then she runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the *other disciple whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him. * Chap. 13.23. & 21.20.

3 Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre.

4 So they ran both together: and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.

5 And he stooping down *and looking in*, saw the linen clothes lying; yet went he not in.

6 Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lie;

7 And the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it self.

8 Then went in also that other disciple which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and believed.

9 For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead.

10 Then the disciples went away again unto their own home.

11 ¶ But Mary stood without at the sepulchre, weeping: and as she wept, she stooped down *and looked* into the sepulchre,

12 And seeth two angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had layen:

13 And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.

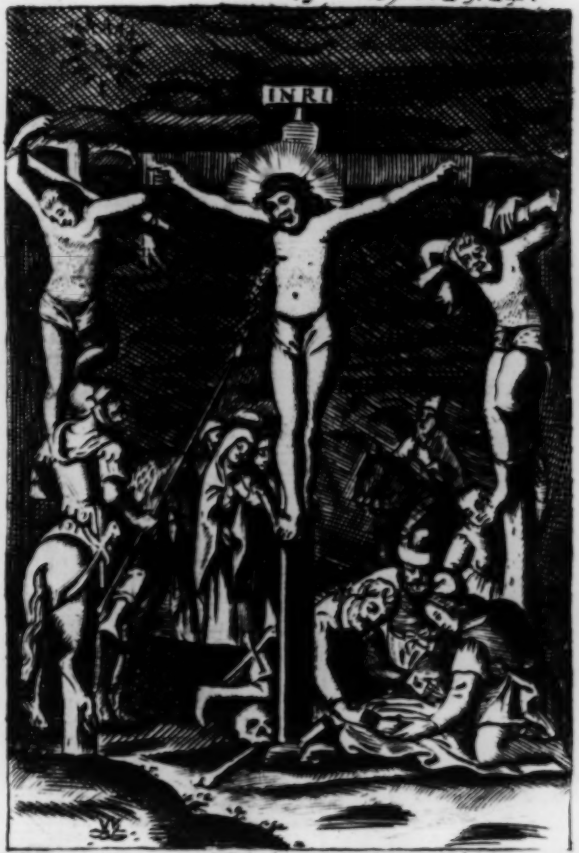
14 And when she had thus said, she turned her self back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

15 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have born him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

16 Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turned her self, and saith unto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

17 Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, & say unto them, I ascend unto my Father

Christ is crucified. *John. 19. v. 23. 24.*

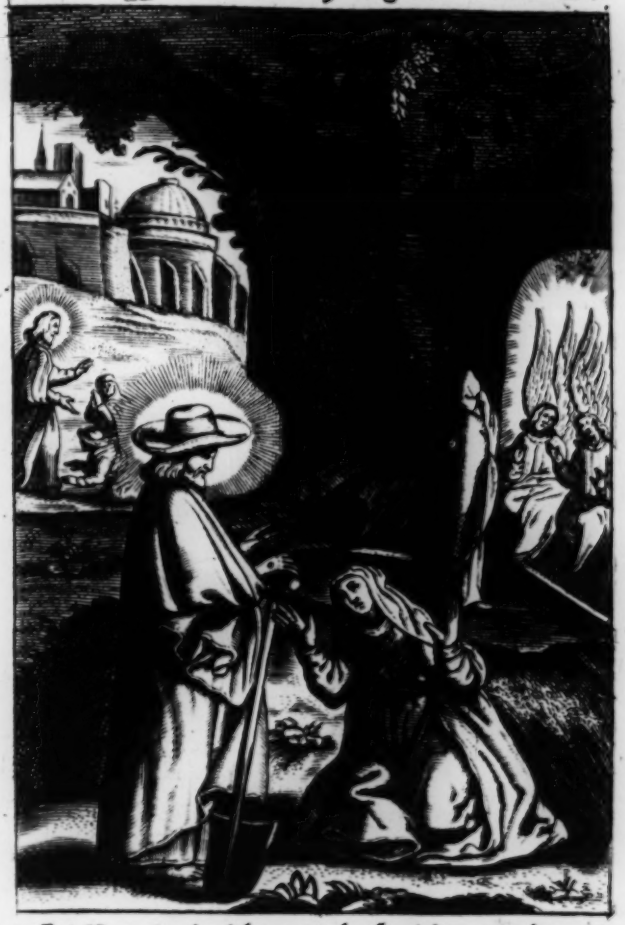


Then the souldiers when they had crucified Jesus took his garments etc
They said let us not rent it. but cast lots for it etc:

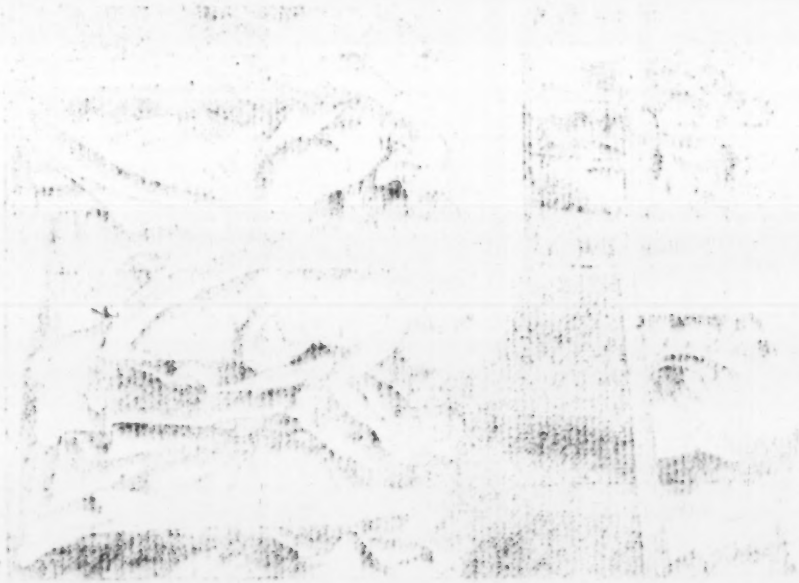
Christ is buried. Iohn. 19.

v. 38. *Ioseph of Arimathea he came and tooke the body of Iesus etc:*

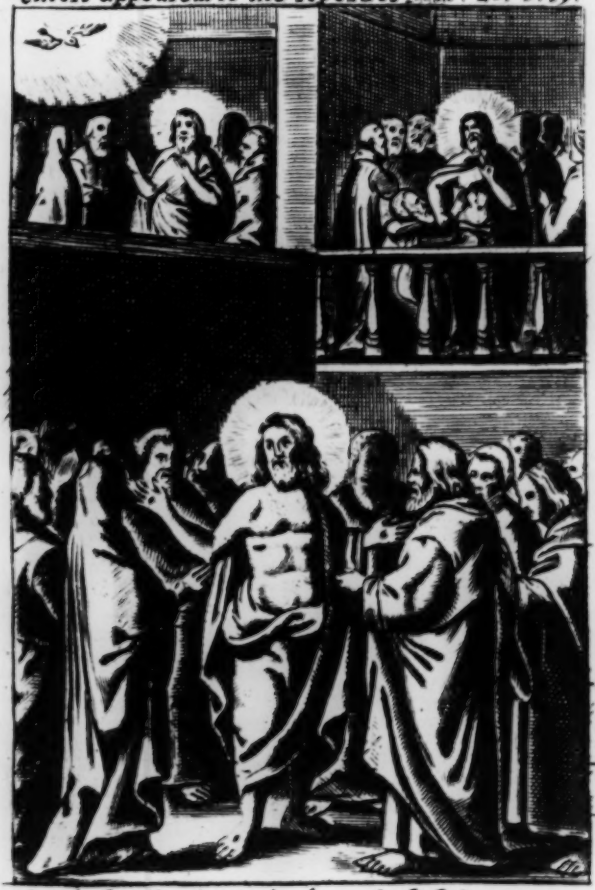
Christ appeareth to Mary Magdalen Iohn. 20.



11. But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping etc:
12. And seeth two Angels in white sitting etc:
15. Jesus saith unto her Woman etc: Shee supposing him to be the Gardiner saith unto him Sir if thou have born etc.



Christ appeareth to his Apostles Joan: 20. v. 19.



Then the same day at evening, being the first day etc:

christ appear's at ye Sea of Tiberias. John: 21.

4. Jesus stood on the shore etc: 7: Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord etc: v: 12. Jesus saith unto them Come and dine etc: v. 13. Jesus then cometh and taketh bread and fish likewise etc:

ther and your Father, and *to* my God and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples, that she had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken these things unto her.

19 ¶ * Then the same day at evening, being the first *day* of the week, when the doors were shut, where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace *be* unto you.

20 And when he had so said, he shewed unto them *his* hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord.

21 Then said Jesus to them again, Peace *be* unto you: as *my* Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

22 And when he had said this, he breathed on *them*, and saith unto them, Receive ye the holy Ghost.

23 * Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; *and* whose soever *sins* ye retain, they are retained.

24 ¶ But Thomas one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, *I* will not believe.

26 ¶ And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: *then* came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace *be* unto you.

27 Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side: and be not faithless, but believing.

28 And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God.

29 Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed *are* they that have not seen, and *yet* have believed.

30 ¶ * And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book:

31 But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ the Son of God, and that believing ye might have life through his name.

CHAP. XXI.

1 *Christ appearing again to his disciples, was known of them by the great draught of fishes:* 12 *He dineth with them,* 15 *earnestly commandeth Peter to feed his lambs and sheep:* 18 *foretelleth him of his death,* 22 *rebuketh his curiosity touching John.* 25 *The conclusion.*

AFter these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and on this wise shewed he *himself*:

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the *sons* of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth and entred into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus.

5 Then Jesus saith unto them, ‡ Children, have ye any meat? they answered him, No.

6 And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved, saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt *his* fishers coat *unto him* (for he was naked) and did cast himself into the sea.

8 And the other disciples came in a little ship (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits) dragging the net with fishes.

9 Assoon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread.

10 Jesus saith unto them, Bring of the fish which ye have now caught.

11 Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Jesus saith unto them, Come *and* dine. And none of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord.

13 Jesus then cometh, and taketh bread, and giveth them, and fish likewise.

14 This is now the third time that Jesus shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

15 ¶ So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me more then these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambs.

16 He saith to him again the second time, Simon *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

17 He saith unto him the third time, Simon *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

18 Verily verily I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst thy self, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry *thee* whither thou wouldest not.

19 This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorifie God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me.

20 Then Peter turning about, seeth the disciple * whom Jesus loved, following; which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee? * Chap. 13. 23. & 20. 2.

21 Peter seeing him, saith to Jesus, Lord, and what *shall* this man *do*?

22 Jesus saith unto him, If *I* will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee? Follow thou me.

23 Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die: but, If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee?

24 This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true.

25 * And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world it self could not contain the books that should be written. Amen. * Chap. 20. 30.

¶ The ACTS of the Apostles.

CHAP. I.

Christ preparing his apostles to the beholding of his ascension, gathereth them together into the mount Olivet, commandeth them to expect in Jerusalem the sending down of the holy Ghost, promiseth after few days to send it: by vertue whereof they should be witnesses unto him, even to the utmost parts of the earth. 9 After his ascension they are warned by two angels to depart, and to set their minds upon his second coming: 12 they accordingly return, and giving themselves to prayer, choose Matthias apostle in the place of Judas.

THE former treatise have I made, O Theophilus, of all that Jesus began both to do and teach,

2 Until the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the holy Ghost had given commandments unto the apostles whom he had chosen.

3 To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion, by many infallible proofs, being seen of them fourty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God.

‡ Or, *eating together with them.*

4 And ‡ being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, * which, *saith he*, ye have heard of me.

* Luke 24.49. * Matth. 3.11.

5 * For John truly baptized with water, but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost, not many days hence.

6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?

7 And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power.

* Chap. 2.1. ‡ Or, *the power of the holy Ghost coming upon you.*

8 * But ye shall receive ‡ power after that the holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me, both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

* Luke 24.51.

9 * And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up, and a cloud received him out of their sight.

10 And while they looked stedfastly toward heaven, as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel:

11 Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come, in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.

12 Then returned they unto Jerusalem, from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a sabbath-days journey.

13 And when they were come in, they went up into an upper room, where abode both Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, James *the son* of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas *the brother* of James.

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brethren.

15 ¶ And in those days Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said, (the number of the names together were about an hundred and twenty)

* Psal. 41.9.

16 Men *and* brethren, This scripture must needs have been fulfilled, * which the holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas, which was guide to them that took Jesus:

17 For he was numbred with us, and had obtained part of this ministery.

* Matth. 27.3.

18 * Now this man purchased a field with the reward of iniquity, and falling headlong he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out.

19 And it was known unto all the dwellers at Jerusalem; insomuch as that field is called in their proper tongue, Aceldama, that is to say, The field of blood.

* Psal. 69.25. * Psal. 109.8. ‡ Or, *office, or charge.*

20 For it is written in the book of psalms, * Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein: and, * His ‡ bishoprick let another take.

21 Wherefore of these men which have companied with us, all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us:

22 Beginning from the baptism of John, unto that same day that he was taken up from us, must one *be ordained to* be a witness with us of his resurrection.

23 And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, and said, Thou Lord, which knowest the hearts of all men, shew whether of these two thou hast chosen,

25 That he may take part of this ministery and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place.

26 And they gave forth their lots: and the lot fell upon Matthias, and he was numbred with the eleven apostles.

CHAP. II.

1 The apostles filled with the holy Ghost, and speaking divers languages, are admired by some, and derided by others: 14 whom Peter disproving, and shewing that the apostles spake by the power of the holy Ghost, that Jesus was risen from the dead, ascended into heaven, had poured down the same holy Ghost, and was the Messias, a man known to them, to be approved of God by his miracles, wonders, and signs, and not crucified without his determinate counsel and foreknowledge: 37 He baptizeth a great number that were converted: 41 who afterwards devoutly, and charitably converse together: the apostles working many miracles, and God daily increasing his church.

AND when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

2 And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting.

3 And there appeared unto them cloven tongues, like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them.

4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven.

† Gr. *when this voice was made.* ‡ Or, *troubled in mind.*

6 Now † when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were ‡ confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language.

7 And they were all amazed, and marvelled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speak, Galilæans?

8 And how hear we every man in our own tongue wherein we were born?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia,

10 Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and Proselytes,

11 Cretes

The sending of the Holy Ghost *Acts. 2 v. 1.*

And when the day of Pentecost was fully come etc: v: 3. There appear: ed unto them cLoven tongues like as of fire etc.

Peter & John Heale the Lame man. Acts. 3.

v. 7. And he tooke him by the right hand. and. lift him up. etc:

11 Cretes & Arabians, we do hear them ſpeak in our tongues the wonderful works of God.

12 And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, ſaying one to another, What meaneth this?

13 Others mocking ſaid, Theſe men are full of new wine.

14 But Peter ſtanding up with the eleven, lift up his voice, and ſaid unto them, Ye men of Judea, and all ye that dwell at Jeruſalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my words.

15 For theſe are not drunken, as ye ſuppoſe, ſeeing it is but the third hour of the day.

16 But this is that which was ſpoken by the prophet Joel,

Joel 2. 17 * And it ſhall come to paſs in the laſt days (ſaith God) I will pour out of my ſpirit upon all flesh: and your ſons and your daughters ſhall propheſie, and your young men ſhall ſee viſions, and your old men ſhall dream dreams:

18 And on my ſervants, and on my maid-maidens, I will pour out in thoſe days of my ſpirit, and they ſhall propheſie;

19 And I will ſhew wonders in heaven above, and ſigns in the earth beneath; bloud, and fire, and vapour of ſmoke.

Pſal. 21. 20 * The ſun ſhall be turned into darkneſs, and the moon into bloud, before that great and notable day of the Lord come.

Rom. 10. 13. 21 * And it ſhall come to paſs, *that* whoſoever ſhall call on the name of the Lord, ſhall be ſaved.

22 Ye men of Iſrael, hear theſe words; Jeſus of Nazareth a man approved of God, among you, by miracles and wonders and ſigns which God did by him in the midſt of you, as ye your ſelves alſo know:

23 Him being delivered by the determinate counſel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and ſlain:

24 Whom God hath raiſed up, having looſed the pains of death: becauſe it was not poſſible that he ſhould be holden of it.

Pſal. 16. 8. 25 For David ſpeaketh concerning him, * I foreſaw the Lord always before my face, for he is on my right hand, that I ſhould not be moved.

26 Therefore did my heart rejoyce, and my tongue was glad: moreover alſo, my fleſh ſhall reſt in hope.

27 Becauſe thou wilt not leave my ſoul in hell, neither wilt thou ſuffer thy holy One to ſee corruption.

28 Thou haſt made known to me the ways of life; thou ſhalt make me full of joy with thy countenance.

29 Men *and* brethren, ‡ let me freely ſpeak unto you * of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his ſepulchre is with us unto this day:

30 Therefore being a prophet, * and knowing that God had ſworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the fleſh, he would raiſe up Chriſt, to ſit on his throne:

31 He ſeeing this before, ſpake of the reſurrection of Chriſt, * that his ſoul was not left in hell, neither his fleſh did ſee corruption.

32 This Jeſus hath God raiſed up, whereof we all are witneſſes.

33 Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promiſe of the holy Ghoſt, he hath ſhed forth this, which ye now ſee and hear.

34 For David is not aſcended into the heavens; but he ſaith himſelf, * The LORD ſaid unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

35 Until I make thy foes thy footſtool.

36 Therefore let all the houſe of Iſrael know aſſuredly, that God hath made that ſame Jeſus whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Chriſt.

37 ¶ Now when they heard *this*, they were pricked in their heart, and ſaid unto Peter, and to the reſt of the apoſtles, Men *and* brethren, what ſhall we do?

38 Then Peter ſaid unto them, Repent and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jeſus Chriſt, for the remiſſion of ſins, and ye ſhall receive the gift of the holy Ghoſt.

39 For the promiſe is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God ſhall call.

40 And with many other words did he teſtifie and exhort, ſaying, Save your ſelves from this untoward generation.

41 ¶ Then they that gladly received his word, were baptized: and the ſame day there were added *unto them* about three thouſand ſouls.

42 And they continued ſtedfaſtly in the apoſtles doctrine and fellowſhip, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

43 And fear came upon every ſoul: and many wonders and ſigns were done by the apoſtles.

44 And all that believed were together, and had all things common,

45 And ſold their poſſeſſions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need.

46 And they continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread ‡ from houſe to houſe, did eat their meat with gladneſs and ſingleneſs of heart,

‡ Or, *at home.*

47 Praiſing God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily ſuch as ſhould be ſaved.

CHAP. III

1 Peter preaching to the people that came to ſee a lame man reſtored to his feet, 12 profeſſeth the cure not to have been wrought by his or Johns own power, or holineſs, but by God and his ſon Jeſus, and through faith in his name; 13 withall reprehending them for crucifying Jeſus. 17 Which becauſe they did it through ignorance, and that thereby were fulfilled Gods determinate counſel, and the ſcriptures, 19 he exhorteth them by repentance and faith to ſeek remiſſion of their ſins, and ſalvation in the ſame Jeſus.

NOw Peter and John went up together into the temple, at the hour of prayer, *being* the ninth *hour*.

2 And a certain man lame from his mothers womb was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple, which is called Beautiful, to aſk alms of them that entred into the temple.

3 Who ſeeing Peter and John about to go into the temple, aſked an alms.

4 And Peter faſtning his eyes upon him, with John, ſaid, Look on us.

5 And he gave heed unto them, expecting to receive ſomething of them.

6 Then Peter ſaid, Silver and gold have I none; but ſuch as I have, give I thee: in the name of Jeſus Chriſt of Nazareth riſe up and walk.

7 And he took him by the right hand, and lift *him* up; and immediately his feet and ancle-bones received ſtrength.

8 And he leaping up, ſtood and walked, and entred with them into the temple, walking, and leaping, and praiſing God.

9 And all the people ſaw him walking and praiſing God.

10 And they knew that it was he which ſat for alms at the Beautiful gate of the temple: and they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him.

11 And as the lame man which was healed, held Peter and John, all the people ran together unto them in the porch that is called Solomons, greatly wondring.

12 ¶ And when Peter saw *it*, he answered unto the people, Ye men of Israel, why marvel ye at this? or why look ye so earnestly on us, as though by our own power or holiness we had made this man to walk?

13 The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers hath glorified his Son Jesus; whom ye delivered up, and denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let *him* go.

* Matth. 27. 20. 14 * But ye denied the holy One, and the Just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you:

‡ Or, *author*. 15 And killed the ‡ prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses.

16 And his name through faith in his name hath made this man strong, whom ye see and know: yea, the faith which is by him, hath given him this perfect soundness in the presence of you all.

17 And now brethren, I wot that through ignorance ye did *it*, as *did* also your rulers.

18 But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.

19 ¶ Repent ye therefore and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the LORD,

20 And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you:

21 Whom the heaven must receive, until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began.

* Deut. 18. 15. Chap. 7. 37 22 For Moses truly said unto the fathers, * A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you, of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.

23 And it shall come to pass, *that* every soul which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people.

24 Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel, and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these days.

25 Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham, * And in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed.

* Gen. 12. 3.

26 Unto you first, God having raised up his Son Jesus, sent him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities.

CHAP. IV.

1 *The rulers of the Jews offended with Peters sermon,* 4 *(though thousands of the people were converted that heard the word) imprison him and John.* 5 *After, upon examination, Peter boldly avouching the lame man to be healed by the Name of Jesus, and that by the same Jesus onely we must be eternally saved,* 13 *they command him and John to preach no more in that Name: adding also threatning,* 23 *whereupon the church fleeth to prayer,* 31 *And God, by moving the place where they were assembled, testifieth that he heard their prayer, confirming the church with the gift of the holy Ghost, and with mutual love and charity.*

‡ Or, *ruler* AND as they spake unto the people, the priests and the ‡ captain of the temple, and the Sadducees came upon them,

2 Being grieved that they taught the people, and preached through Jesus the resurrection from the dead.

3 And they laid hands on them, and put them in hold unto the next day: for it was now eventide.

4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the word, believed; and the number of the men was about five thousand.

5 ¶ And it came to pass on the morrow, that their rulers, and elders, and scribes,

6 And Annas the high priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high priest, were gathered together at Jerusalem.

7 And when they had set them in the midst, they asked, By what power, or by what name have ye done this?

8 Then Peter filled with the Holy Ghost, said unto them, Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel,

9 If we this day be examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made whole;

10 Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole.

11 * This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner. * Psal. 118. 22. Matth. 21. 42.

12 Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved.

13 ¶ Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled, and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.

14 And beholding the man which was healed standing with them, they could say nothing against it.

15 But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the councel, they conferred among themselves,

16 Saying, What shall we do to these men? for that indeed a notable miracle hath been done by them, *is* manifest to all them that dwell in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny *it*.

17 But that it spread no further among the people, let us straitly threaten them, that they speak henceforth to no man in this name.

18 And they called them, and commanded them not to speak at all, nor teach in the name of Jesus.

19 But Peter and John answered and said unto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God, to hearken unto you more then unto God, judge ye.

20 For we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard.

21 So when they had further threatned them, they let them go, finding nothing how they might punish them, because of the people: for all men glorified God for that which was done.

22 For the man was above fourty years old, on whom this miracle of healing was shewed.

23 And being let go, they went to their own company, and reported all that the chief priests and elders had said unto them.

24 And when they heard that, they lift up their voice to God with one accord, and said, Lord, thou *art* God which hast made heaven and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is:

25 Who by the mouth of thy servant David hast said, * Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things? * Psal. 2.

1. But a Certain man named Ananias with Saphira his wife sould a possession. 2. And kept backpart off the price etc: 3. but Peter said Ananias why hath Satan filled thine heart etc: 5. and Ananias hearing these words, fell down and gave up the ghost. etc:

26 The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ.

27 For of a truth against thy holy child Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel were gathered together,

28 For to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done.

29 And now, Lord, behold their threatnings: and grant unto thy servants, that with all boldness they may speak thy word,

30 By stretching forth thine hand to heal: and that signs and wonders may be done by the name of thy holy child Jesus.

31 ¶ And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldness.

32 And the multitude of them that believed, were of one heart, and of one soul: neither said any *of them*, that ought of the things which he possessed, was his own, but they had all things common.

33 And with great power gave the apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and great grace was upon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessours of lands, or houses, sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold,

35 And laid *them* down at the apostles feet: and distribution was made unto every man according as he had need.

36 And Joses, who by the apostles was surnamed Barnabas (which is, being interpreted, The son of consolation) a Levite, *and* of the country of Cyprus,

37 Having land, sold *it*, and brought the [illegible]ney, and laid *it* at the apostles feet.

CHAP. V.

After that [illegible] and Sapphira [illegible] for their [illegible] down [illegible] apostles had [illegible] crease of [illegible] are [illegible] impri-soned [illegible] angel [illegible] ding [illegible] 21 [illegible] af-ter [illegible] temple, [illegible] danger [illegible] maliel, a [illegible] they be kept [illegible] which they [illegible] preaching.

BUt a certain man named An[illegible] with Sapphira his wife, sold a posses[illegible]

2 And kept back *part* of the [illegible], his wife also being privy *to it*, and br[illegible] a certain part, and laid *it* at the apostles [illegible]

3 But Peter said, Ananias, [illegible] Satan filled thine heart ‡ to lie to the [illegible] Ghost, and to keep back *part* of the price of the land?

4 Whiles it remained, was it [illegible] thine own? and after it was sold, was it [illegible] thine own power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.

5 And Ananias hearing these words, fell down and gave up the ghost: and great fear came on all them that heard these things.

6 And the yong men arose, wound him up, and carried *him* out, and buried *him*.

7 And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.

8 And Peter answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much. And she said, Yea, for so much.

9 Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband *are* at the door, and shall carry thee out.

10 Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yielded up the ghost: and the young men came in and found her dead, and carrying *her* forth, buried *her* by her husband.

11 And great fear came upon all the church, and upon as many as heard these things.

12 ¶ And by the hands of the apostles were many signs and wonders wrought among the people: (and they were all with one accord in Solomons porch.

13 And of the rest durst no man joyn himself to them: but the people magnified them.

14 And believers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women.)

15 Insomuch that they brought forth the sick ‡ into the streets, and laid *them* on beds and couches, that at the least, the shadow of Peter passing by, might overshadow some of them.

16 There came also a multitude *out* of the cities round abo[illegible] Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and the[illegible] vexed with unclean spirits: and [illegible]ed every one.

17 ¶ Then [illegible]ose up, and all they that were [illegible] which is the sect of the Saddu[illegible] with ‡ indignation, and [illegible] on the apostles, and [illegible] prison.

18 [illegible] angel of the Lord by night open[illegible]-doors, and brought them forth, and [illegible]

20 [illegible], stand and speak in the temple to the [illegible]ple, all the words of this life.

21 And when they heard *that*, they entred into the temple early in the morning, and taught. But the high priest came, and they that were with him, and called the councel together, and all the senate of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison to have them brought.

22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned, and told,

23 Saying, The prison truly found we shut with all safety, and the keepers standing without before the doors; but when we had opened, we found no man within.

24 Now when the high priest, and the captain of the temple, and the chief priests heard these things, they doubted of them whereunto this would grow.

25 Then came one, and told them, saying, Behold, the men whom ye put in prison, are standing in the temple, and teaching the people.

26 Then went the captain with the officers, and brought them without violence: (for they feared the people, lest they should have been stoned)

27 And when they had brought them, they set *them* before the councel: and the high priest asked them,

28 Saying, * Did not we straitly command you, that you should not teach in this name? and behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this mans blood upon us.

29 ¶ Then Peter and the *other* apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather then men.

30 The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree.

31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand, *to be* a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance

‡ Or, *in every street.*

‡ Or, *envy.*

* Chap. 4. 18.

ance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.

33 And we are his witnesses of these things; and *so is* also the holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey him.

34 ¶ When they heard *that*, they were cut *to the heart*, and took counsel to slay them.

35 Then stood there up one in the councel, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a doctour of law, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the apostles forth a little space,

36 And said unto them, Ye men of Israel, take heed to your selves, what ye intend to do as touching these men.

37 For before these days rose up Theudas, boasting himself to be some body; to whom a number of men, about four hundred, joyned themselves: who was slain, and all, as many as ‡ obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nought.

‡ Or, believed.

38 After this man rose up Judas of Galilee, in the days of the taxing, and drew away much people after him: he also perished, and all, even as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.

39 And now I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsel, or this work be of men, it will come to nought:

40 But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it; lest haply ye be found even to fight against God.

41 And to him they agreed: and when they had called the apostles, and beaten *them*, they commanded that they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go.

42 ¶ And they departed from the presence of the councel, rejoycing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his name.

43 And daily in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ.

CHAP. VI.

1 *The apostles desirous to have the poor regarded for their bodily sustenance, as also carefull themselves to dispense the word of God, the food of the soul, 3 appoint the office of deaconship to seven chosen men: 5 of whom, Stephen, a man full of faith, and of the holy Ghost, is one: 12 who is taken of those whom he confounded in disputing, 13 and after falsly accused of blasphemy against the law and the temple.*

AND in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministration.

2 Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables.

3 Wherefore brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business.

4 But we will give our selves continually to prayer, and to the ministery of the word.

5 ¶ And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch.

6 Whom they set before the apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid *their* hands on them.

7 And the word of God increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.

8 And Stephen full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.

9 ¶ Then there arose certain of the synagogue, which is called *the synagogue* of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, & of them of Cilicia, and of Asia, disputing with Stephen.

10 And they were not able to resist the wisdom and the spirit by which he spake.

11 Then they suborned men which said, We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses, and *against* God.

12 And they stirred up the people, and the elders, and the scribes, and came upon *him*, and caught him, and brought *him* to the councel,

13 And set up false witnesses, which said, This man ceaseth not to speak blasphemous words against this holy place, and the law.

14 For we have heard him say, that this Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, & shall change the ‡ customs which Moses delivered us.

‡ Or, rite.

15 And all that sat in the councel, looking stedfastly on him, saw his face as it had been the face of an angel.

CHAP. VII.

1 *Stephen permitted to answer to the accusation of blasphemy, 2 sheweth that Abraham worshipped God rightly, and how God chose the fathers, 20 before Moses was born, and before the tabernacle and temple were built: 37 that Moses himself witnessed of Christ: 44 and that all outward ceremonies were ordained, according to the heavenly pattern, to last but for a time: 51 reprehending their rebellion, and murdering of Christ, the just one, whom the prophets foretold should come into the world: 54 whereupon they stone him to death; who commendeth his soul to Jesus, and humbly prayeth for them.*

THen said the high priest, Are these things so?

2 And he said, Men, brethren, and fathers, hearken, The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran,

3 And said unto him, * Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee.

* Gen. 12. 1.

4 Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran: and from thence, when his father was dead, he removed him into this land, wherein ye now dwell.

5 And he gave him none inheritance in it, no not so much as to set his foot on: yet he promised that he would give it to him for a possession, and to his seed after him, when as yet he had no child.

6 And God spake on this wise, that his seed should sojourn in a strange land, and that they should bring them into bondage, and entreat *them* evil four hundred years.

7 And the nation to whom they shall be in bondage, will I judge, said God: and after that shall they come forth, and serve me in this place.

8 *And he gave him the covenant of circumcision: *and so Abraham begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day: * and Isaac *begat* Jacob, and * Jacob *begat* the twelve patriarchs.

*Gen. 17. 9 *Gen. 21. 3 * Gen. 25. 26.

9 * And the patriarchs moved with envy, sold Joseph into Egypt: but God was with him,

* Gen. 29. 31, &c.

10 And delivered him out of all his afflictions, *and gave him favour and wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt; and he made him governour over Egypt, and all his house.

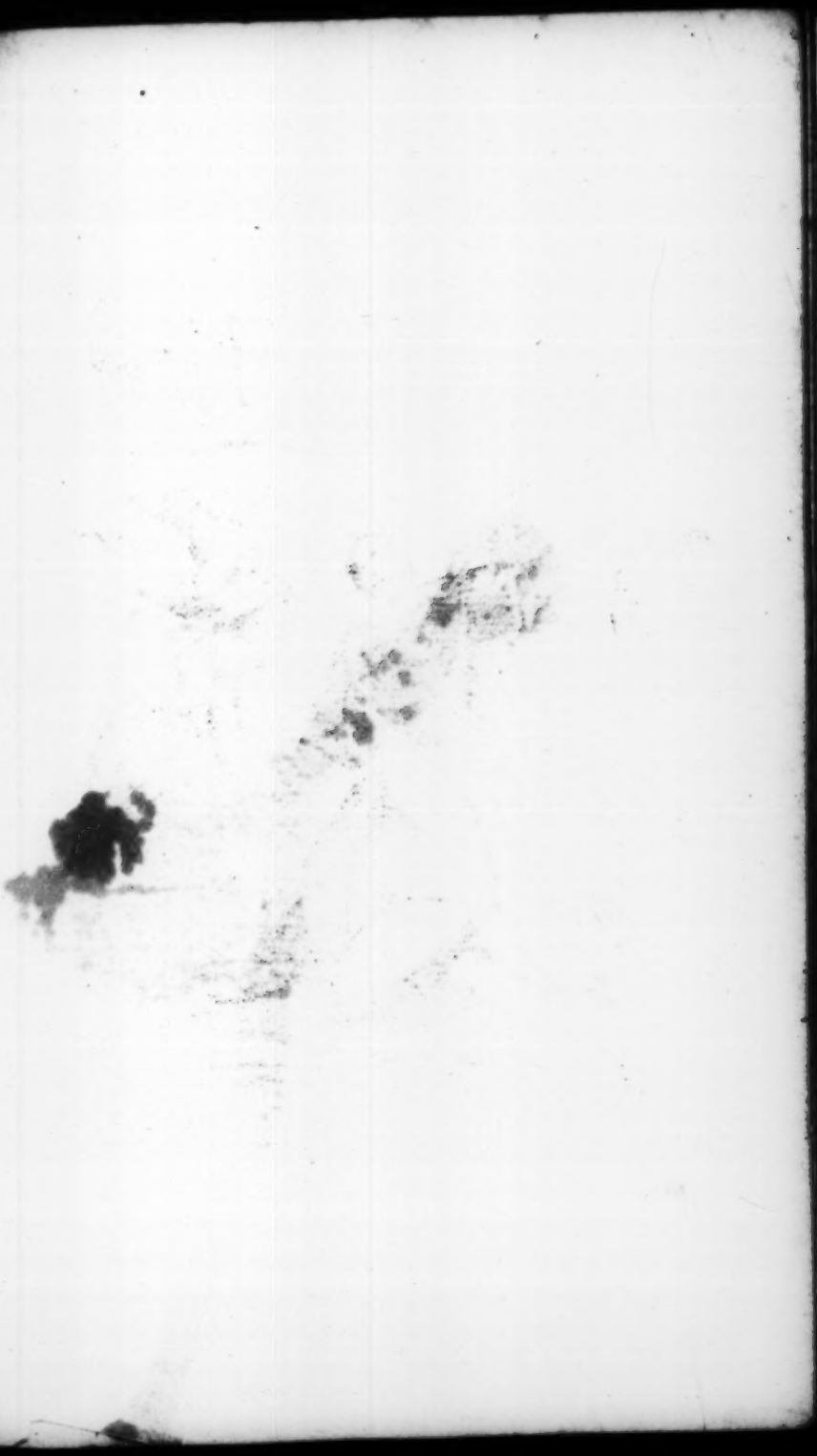
* Gen. 37. 28. * Gen. 41. 37.

11 Now there came a dearth over all the land of Egypt and Chanaan, and great affliction; and our fathers found no sustenance.

12 *But when Jacob heard that there was corn in Egypt, he sent out our fathers first.

*Gen 42. 1 * Gen. 45. 4.

13 * And at the second time Joseph was made known



St. Stephen Stoned Acts: 7. v: 55. etc.

But Stephen being full of the Holy Ghost looked up etc.
v. 59. And they stoned Stephen [illegible] upon God. etc.

known to his brethren; and Joseph's kindred was made known unto Pharaoh.

14 Then sent Joseph, and called his father Jacob to him, and all his kindred, threescore and fifteen souls.

15 * So Jacob went down into Egypt, * and died, he and our fathers,

16 And were carried over into Sychem, and laid in the sepulchre that Abraham bought for a sum of money of the sons of Emmor *the father* of Sychem.

17 But when the time of the promise drew nigh, which God had sworn to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt,

18 Till another king arose, which knew not Joseph.

19 The same dealt subtilly with our kindred, and evil entreated our fathers, so that they cast out their young children, to the end they might not live.

20 * In which time Moses was born, and * was ‡ exceeding fair, and nourished up in his father's house three moneths:

21 And when he was cast out, Pharaohs daughter took him up, and nourished him for her own son.

22 And Moses was learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and in deeds.

23 And when he was full fourty years old, it came into his heart to visit his brethren the children of Israel.

24 * And seeing one *of them* suffer wrong, he defended *him*, and avenged him that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian:

25 For he supposed his brethren would have understood, how that God by his hand would deliver them; but they understood not.

26 * And the next day he shewed himself unto them as they strove, and would have set them at one again, saying, Sirs, ye are brethren; why do ye wrong one to another?

27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge over us?

28 Will thou kill me as thou didst the Egyptian yesterday?

29 Then fled Moses at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sons.

30 * And when fourty years were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of mount Sina, an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.

31 When Moses saw *it*, he wondred at the sight: and as he drew near to behold *it*, the voice of the Lord came unto him,

32 *Saying*, I *am* the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold.

33 Then said the Lord to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feet: for the place where thou standest is holy ground.

34 I have seen, I have seen the affliction of my people which is in Egypt, and I have heard their groaning, and am come down to deliver them. And now come, I will send thee into Egypt.

35 This Moses whom they refused, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge? the same did God send *to be* a ruler and a deliverer by the hand of the angel which appeared to him in the bush.

36 He brought them out, after that he had * shewed wonders and signs in the land of Egypt, and in the Red sea, * and in the wilderness fourty years.

37 ¶ This is that Moses which said unto the children of Israel, * A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, ‡ like unto me; him shall ye hear. * Deut. 18. 5. ‡ Or, *as*

38 * This is he that was in the church in the wilderness, with the angel which spake to him in the mount Sina, and *with* our fathers: who received lively oracles to give unto us. *my self.* * Exod. 19. 3.

39 To whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust *him* from them, and in their hearts turned back again into Egypt,

40 * Saying unto Aaron, Make us gods to go before us: for *as for* this Moses which brought us out of the land of Egypt, we wot not what is become of him. * Exod. 32. 1.

41 And they made a calf in those days, and offered sacrifice unto the idol, and rejoyced in the works of their own hands.

42 Then God turned, and gave them up to worship the host of heaven; as it is written in the book of the prophets, * O ye house of Israel, have ye offered to me slain beasts, and sacrifices, by the space of fourty years in the wilderness? * Amos 5. 25.

43 Yea, ye took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of your god Remphan, figures which ye made to worship them: and I will carry you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witness in the wilderness, as he had appointed, speaking unto Moses, * that he should make it according to the fashion that he had seen. * Exod. 25. 40.

45 Which also our fathers that came after, brought in with Jesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drave out before the face of our fathers, unto the days of David.

46 Who found favour before God, and desired to find a tabernacle for the God of Jacob.

47 * But Solomon built him an house. * 1 Chron. 17. 12.

48 Howbeit * the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands; as saith the prophet, * Chap. 17. 24.

49 * Heaven *is* my throne, and earth *is* my footstool: what house will ye build me? saith the Lord: or what *is* the place of my rest? * Isa. 66. 1, 2.

50 Hath not my hand made all these things?

51 ¶ Ye stiff-necked, and uncircumcised in heart and ears, ye do always resist the holy Ghost: as your fathers *did*, so *do* ye.

52 Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slain them which shewed before of the coming of the Just one, of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers:

53 Who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept *it*.

54 ¶ When they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with *their* teeth.

55 But he being full of the holy Ghost, looked up stedfastly into heaven, & saw the glory of God, & Jesus standing on the right hand of God,

56 And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God.

57 Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord,

58 And cast *him* out of the city, and stoned *him*: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young mans feet, whose name was Saul.

59 And they stoned Stephen, calling upon *God*, and saying, Lord Jesus receive my spirit.

60 And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

CHAP. VIII.

By occasion of the persecution in Jerusalem, the church being planted in Samaria, by Philip the deacon,

deacon, who preached, did miracles, and baptized many, among the reſt Simon the ſorcerer, a great ſeducer of the people. 14 *Peter and John come to confirm, and enlarge the church: where by prayer, and impoſition of hands, giving the holy Ghoſt,* 18 *when Simon would have bought the like power of them,* 20 *Peter ſharply reproving his hypocriſie and covetouſneſs, and exhorting him to repentance, together with John preaching the word of the Lord, return to Jeruſalem:* 26 *but the angel ſendeth Philip to teach, and baptize the Ethiopian eunuch.*

AND Saul was conſenting unto his death. And at that time there was a great perſecution againſt the church which was at Jeruſalem; and they were all ſcattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria, except the apoſtles.

2 And devout men carried Stephen *to his burial*, and made great lamentation over him.

3 As for Saul, he made havock of the church, entring into every houſe, and haling men and women, committed *them* to priſon.

4 Therefore they that were ſcattered abroad, went every where preaching the word.

5 Then Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and preached Chriſt unto them.

6 And the people with one accord gave heed unto thoſe things which Philip ſpake, hearing, and ſeeing the miracles which he did.

7 For unclean ſpirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many that were poſſeſſed *with them*: and many taken with palſies, and that were lame, were healed.

8 And there was great joy in that city.

9 But there was a certain man called Simon, which before-time in the ſame city uſed ſorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that himſelf was ſome great one.

10 To whom they all gave heed from the leaſt to the greateſt, ſaying, This man is the great power of God.

11 And to him they had regard, becauſe that of long time he had bewitched them with ſorceries.

12 But when they believed Philip, preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jeſus Chriſt, they were baptized both men and women.

13 Then Simon himſelf believed alſo: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondred, beholding the miracles and ſigns which were done.

14 Now when the apoſtles which were at Jeruſalem, heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they ſent unto them Peter & John.

15 Who when they were come down, prayed for them that they might receive ỹ holy Ghoſt.

16 (For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: onely they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jeſus)

17 Then laid they *their* hands on them, and they received the holy Ghoſt.

18 And when Simon ſaw that through laying on of the apoſtles hands, the holy Ghoſt was given, he offered them money,

19 Saying, Give me alſo this power, that on whomſoever I lay hands, he may receive the holy Ghoſt.

20 But Peter ſaid unto him, Thy money periſh with thee, becauſe thou haſt thought that the gift of God may be purchaſed with money.

21 Thou haſt neither part nor lot in this matter: for thy heart is not right in the ſight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickedneſs, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.

23 For I perceive that thou art in the gall of bitterneſs, and *in* the bond of iniquity.

24 Then anſwered Simon, and ſaid, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of theſe things which ye have ſpoken come upon me.

25 And they when they had teſtified & preached the word of the Lord, returned to Jeruſalem, and preached the goſpel in many villages of the Samaritanes.

26 And the angel of the Lord ſpake unto Philip, ſaying, Ariſe, and go toward the ſouth, unto the way that goeth down from Jeruſalem unto Gaza, which is deſert.

27 And he aroſe, and went: and behold, a man of Ethiopia, an eunuch of great authority under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treaſure, and had come to Jeruſalem for to worſhip,

28 Was returning, and ſitting in his chariot, read Eſaias the prophet.

29 Then the Spirit ſaid unto Philip, Go near, and joyn thy ſelf to this chariot.

30 And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the prophet Eſaias, and ſaid, Underſtandeſt thou what thou readeſt?

31 And he ſaid, How can I, except ſome man ſhould guide me? and he deſired Philip that he would come up, and ſit with him.

32 The place of the ſcripture which he read was this, * He was led as a ſheep to the ſlaughter, and like a lamb dumb before his ſhearer, ſo opened he not his mouth: * Iſa. 53.

33 In his humiliation his judgement was taken away: and who ſhall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.

34 And the eunuch anſwered Philip, and ſaid, I pray thee, of whom ſpeaketh the prophet this? of himſelf, or of ſome other man?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the ſame ſcripture, and preached unto him Jeſus

36 And as they went on *their* way, they came unto a certain water: and ỹ eunuch ſaid, See, *here is* water, what doth hinder me to be baptized?

37 And Philip ſaid, If thou believeſt with all thine heart, thou mayeſt. And he anſwered and ſaid, I believe that Jeſus Chriſt is the Son of God

38 And he commanded the chariot to ſtand ſtill: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch: & he baptized him.

39 And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip that the eunuch ſaw him no more: and he went on his way rejoycing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus: and paſſing through, he preached in all the cities, till he came to Ceſarea.

CHAP. IX.

1 *Saul going towards Damaſcus,* 4 *is ſtricken down to the earth,* 10 *is called to the apoſtleſhip,* 18 *and is baptized by Ananias.* 20 *He preacheth Chriſt boldly.* 23 *The Jews lay wait to kill him:* 29 *ſo do the Grecians: but he eſcapeth both.* 31 *The church having reſt, Peter healeth Eneas of the palſie,* 36 *and reſtoreth Tabitha to life.*

AND Saul yet breathing out threatnings and ſlaughter againſt the diſciples of the Lord, went unto the high prieſt,

2 And deſired of him letters to Damaſcus, to the ſynagogues, that if he found any of this way, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound unto Jeruſalem.

3 And as he journeyed, he came near Damaſcus: and ſuddenly there ſhined round about him a light from heaven,

4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice ſaying unto him, Saul, Saul, why perſecuteſt thou me?

Philip and the Eunuch. *Acts.* 8.

29. Then the Spirit said unto Philip *go neer and Joyn thy selfe to this Charet: 30. And* Philip *ran. etc: 38. And he commanded the Charet to stand still etc: And he baptized him etc:*

Saul Converted called Paul: *Acts.13.9:*

Acts 8: v: 1. And Saul yet breathing out threatnings & slaughter
3: And as he journeyed, he came near Damascus and suddenly there
shined round about him a light from heaven.
4: And he fell to ye earth and heard a voice. etc:

5 And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: *it is* hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

6 And he trembling and astonished, said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord *said* unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.

7 And the men which journeyed with him stood speechless, hearing a voice, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the earth; and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man: but they led him by the hand, and brought *him* into Damascus.

9 And he was three days without sight, and neither did eat nor drink.

10 ¶ And there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named Ananias, and to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I *am here*, Lord.

11 And the Lord *said* unto him, Arise, and go into the street, which is called Straight, and enquire in the house of Judas, for *one* called Saul, of Tarsus: for behold, he prayeth,

12 And hath seen in a vision a man named Ananias, coming in, and putting *his* hand on him, that he might receive his sight.

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he hath done to thy saints at Jerusalem:

14 And here he hath authority from the chief priests, to bind all that call on thy name.

15 But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way: for he is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel.

16 For I will shew him how great things he must suffer for my names sake.

17 And Ananias went his way, and entred into the house; and putting his hands on him, said, Brother Saul, the Lord (*even* Jesus that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest) hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy sight, and be filled with the holy Ghost.

18 And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales: and he received sight forthwith, and arose and was baptized.

19 And when he had received meat, he was strengthened. Then was Saul certain days with the disciples which were at Damascus.

20 And straightway he preached Christ in the synagogues, that he is the Son of God.

21 But all that heard *him* were amazed, and said, Is not this he that destroyed them which called on this name in Jerusalem, and came hither for that intent, that he might bring them bound unto the chief priests?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Jews which dwelt at Damascus, proving that this is very Christ.

23 ¶ And after that many days were fulfilled, the Jews took counsel to kill him:

24 * But their laying await was known of Saul: and they watched the gates day and night, to kill him.

25 Then the disciples took him by night, and let *him* down by the wall in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Jerusalem, he assayed to joyn himself to the disciples: but they were all afraid of him, and believed not that he was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas took him, and brought *him* to the apostles, and declared unto them how he had seen the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascus in the name of Jesus.

28 And he was with them coming in, and going out at Jerusalem.

29 And he spake boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him.

30 *Which* when the brethren knew, they brought him down to Cesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus.

31 Then had the churches rest throughout all Judea, and Galilee, and Samaria, and were edified, and walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comfort of the holy Ghost, were multiplied.

32 ¶ And it came to pass, as Peter passed throughout all *quarters*, he came down also to the saints which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And there he found a certain man named Eneas, which had kept his bed eight years, and was sick of the palsie.

34 And Peter said unto him, Eneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediately.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda, and Saron, saw him, and turned to the Lord.

36 ¶ Now there was at Joppa a certain disciple named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: this woman was full of good works, and alms-deeds which she did.

37 And it came to pass in those days, that she was sick and died: whom when they had washed, they laid *her* in an upper chamber.

38 And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Joppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent unto him two men, desiring *him* that he would not ‡ delay to come to them.

‡ Or, be grieved.

39 Then Peter arose, and went with them. When he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber: and all the widows stood by him weeping, and shewing the coats & garments which Dorcas made while she was with them.

40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled down and prayed, and turning *him* to the body, said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes: and when she saw Peter, she sat up.

41 And he gave her his hand, and lift her up; and when he had called the saints and widows, presented her alive.

42 And it was known throughout all Joppa: and many believed in the Lord.

43 And it came to pass that he tarried many days in Joppa with one Simon a tanner.

CHAP. X.

1 *Cornelius a devout man,* 5 *being commanded by an angel, sendeth for Peter:* 11 *who by a vision,* 15, 20 *is taught not to despise the Gentiles.* 34 *As he preacheth Christ to Cornelius and his company,* 44 *the holy Ghost falleth on them,* 48 *and they are baptized.*

THere was a certain man in Cesarea, called Cornelius, a centurion of the band called the Italian *band*,

2 *A* devout *man*, and one that feared God with all his house, which gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God alway.

3 He saw in a vision evidently, about the ninth hour of the day, an angel of God coming in to him, and saying unto him, Cornelius.

4 And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said unto him, Thy prayers and thine alms are come up for a memorial before God.

5 And now send men to Joppa, and call for *one* Simon, whose surname is Peter:

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea-side: he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do.

7 And when the angel which spake unto Cornelius, was departed, he called two of his house-

hold

hold servants, and a devout souldier of them that waited on him continually.

8 And when he had declared all *these* things unto them, he sent them to Joppa.

9 ¶ On the morrow, as they went on their journey, and drew nigh unto the city, Peter went up upon the house-top to pray, about the sixth hour.

10 And he became very hungry, and would have eaten: but while they made ready, he fell into a trance,

11 And saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet, knit at the four corners, and let down to the earth:

12 Wherein were all manner of four-footed beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air.

13 And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter; kill, and eat.

14 But Peter said, Not so, Lord: for I have never eaten any thing that is common or unclean.

15 And the voice *spake* unto him again the second time, What God hath cleansed, *that* call not thou common.

16 This was done thrice: and the vessel was received up again into heaven.

17 Now while Peter doubted in himself what this vision which he had seen should mean; behold, the men which were sent from Cornelius, had made enquiry for Simons house, and stood before the gate,

18 And called, and asked whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, were lodged there.

19 ¶ While Peter thought on the vision, the spirit said unto him, Behold, three men seek thee.

20 Arise therefore, and get thee down, and go with them, doubting nothing: for I have sent them.

21 Then Peter went down to the men which were sent unto him from Cornelius; and said, Behold, I am he whom ye seek: what *is* the cause wherefore ye are come?

22 And they said, Cornelius the centurion, a just man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Jews, was warned from God by an holy angel, to send for thee into his house, and to hear words of thee.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged *them*. And on the morrow Peter went away with them, and certain brethren from Joppa accompanied him.

24 And the morrow after they entred into Cesarea: and Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen and near friends.

25 And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and worshipped *him*.

26 But Peter took him up, saying, Stand up: I my self also am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, he went in, and found many that were come together.

28 And he said unto them, Ye know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew, to keep company, or come unto one of another nation: but God hath shewed me, that I should not call any man common or unclean.

29 Therefore came I *unto you* without gainsaying, assoon as I was sent for: I ask therefore for what intent ye have sent for me.

30 And Cornelius said, Four days ago I was fasting until this hour, and at the ninth hour I prayed in my house, and behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing,

31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine alms are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

32 Send therefore to Joppa, and call hither Simon whose surname is Peter; he is lodged in the house of *one* Simon a tanner, by the sea-side; who when he cometh, shall speak unto thee.

33 Immediately therefore I sent to thee; and thou hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to hear all things that are commanded thee of God.

34 ¶ Then Peter opened *his* mouth and said, * Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: * Deut. 10. 17. Rom. 2. 11.

35 But in every nation, he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him. 1 Pet. 1. 17.

36 The word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ (he is Lord of all)

37 That word (*I say*) you know, which was published throughout all Judea, and began from Galilee, after the baptism which John preached:

38 How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost, and with power; who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil: for God was with him.

39 And we are witnesses of all things which he did, both in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem; whom they slew and hanged on a tree:

40 Him God raised up the third day, and shewed him openly,

41 Not to all the people, but unto witnesses, chosen before of God, *even* to us, who did eat and drink with him after he rose from the dead.

42 And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testifie that it is he which was ordained of God *to be* the Judge of quick and dead.

43 * To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him, shall receive remission of sins. * Jer. 31. 34. Mic. 7. 18.

44 ¶ While Peter yet spake these words, the holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

45 And they of the circumcision which believed, were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speak with tongues, and magnifie God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the holy Ghost, as well as we?

48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain days.

CHAP. XI.

1 Peter being accused for going in to the Gentiles, 5 maketh his defence, 18 which is accepted. 19 The gospel being spread into Phenice, and Cyprus and Antioch, Barnabas is sent to confirm them. 26 The disciples there are first called Christians. 27 They send relief to the brethren in Judea in time of famine.

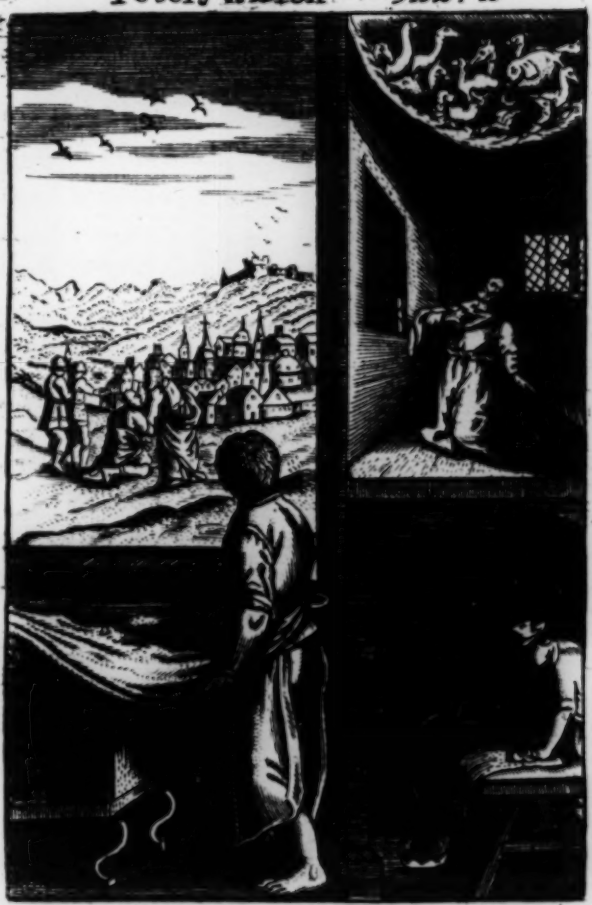
AND the apostles and brethren that were in Judea, heard that the Gentiles had also received the word of God.

2 And when Peter was come up to Jerusalem, they that were of the circumcision contended with him,

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men uncircumcised, and didst eat with them.

4 But Peter rehearsed *the matter* from the beginning,

Peters Uision Acts: 10



9. Peter went vp vpon the house to pray etc: 10: And he became very hungry etc: he fell into a trance; 11: And saw heaven opened and a certaine vessel descending etc:

Peter delivered by an Angel. Acts. 12.

v. 7. And behold, the Angel of the Lord came upon him and a light shined in the Prison, etc.

ginning, and expounded it by order unto them, saying,

5 I was in the city of Joppa praying; and in a trance I saw a vision, A certain vessel descend, as it had been a great sheet, let down from heaven by four corners; and it came even to me.

6 Upon the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and saw four-footed beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air.

7 And I heard a voice saying unto me, Arise, Peter; slay and eat.

8 But I said, Not so, Lord: for nothing common or unclean hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voice answered me again from heaven, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

10 And this was done three times: and all were drawn up again into heaven.

11 And behold, immediately there were three men already come unto the house where I was, sent from Cesarea unto me.

12 And the Spirit bade me go with them, nothing doubting. Moreover, these six brethren accompanied me, and we entred into the mans house:

13 And he shewed us how he had seen an angel in his house, which stood and said unto him, Send men to Joppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter:

14 Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou and all thy house shall be saved.

15 And as I began to speak, the holy Ghost fell on them, * as on us at the beginning.

16 Then remembred I the word of the Lord, how that he said, * John indeed baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost.

17 Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as he did unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ, what was I that I could withstand God?

18 When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.

19 ¶ * Now they which were scattered abroad upon the persecution that arose about Stephen, travelled as far as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the word to none, but unto the Jews onely.

20 And some of them were men of Cyprus, and Cyrene, which when they were come to Antioch, spake unto the Grecians, preaching the Lord Jesus.

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number believed, and turned unto the Lord.

22 ¶ Then tidings of these things came unto the ears of the church which was in Jerusalem: and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as Antioch.

23 Who when he came, and had seen the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they would cleave unto the Lord.

24 For he was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost, and of faith: and much people was added unto the Lord.

25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seek Saul.

26 And when he had found him, he brought him unto Antioch. And it came to pass, that a whole year they assembled themselves ‡ with the church, and taught much people; and the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.

27 ¶ And in these days came prophets from Jerusalem unto Antioch.

28 And there stood up one of them named Agabus, and signified by the spirit, that there should be great dearth throughout all the world: which came to pass in the days of Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the disciples, every man according to his ability, determined to send relief unto the brethren which dwelt in Judea.

30 Which also they did, and sent it to the elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAP. XII.

1 King Herod persecuteth the Christians, killeth James, and imprisoneth Peter, whom an angel delivereth upon the prayers of the Church. 20 In his pride taking to himself the honour due to God, he is stricken by an angel, and dieth miserably: 24 After his death the word of God prospereth.

NOw about that time, Herod the king ‡stretched forth *his* hands to vex certain of the church. ‡ Or, began

2 And he killed James the brother of John with the sword.

3 And because he saw it pleased the Jews, he proceeded further, to take Peter also. (Then were the days of unleavened bread.)

4 And when he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four quaternions of souldiers to keep him, intending after Easter to bring him forth to the people.

5 Peter therefore was kept in prison; but ‡prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him. ‡ Or, instant and earnest prayer was made.

6 And when Herod would have brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping between two souldiers, bound with two chains; and the keepers before the door kept the prison.

7 And behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from *his* hands.

8 And the angel said unto him, Gird thy self, and bind on thy sandals: And so he did. And he saith unto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.

9 And he went out, and followed him, and wist not that it was true which was done by the angel; but thought he saw a vision.

10 When they were past the first and the second ward, they came unto the iron gate that leadeth unto the city, which opened to them of his own accord: and they went out, and passed on through one street, and forthwith the angel departed from him.

11 And when Peter was come to himself, he said, Now I know of a surety, that the Lord hath sent his angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and *from* all the expectation of the people of the Jews.

12 And when he had considered *the thing*, he came to the house of Mary the mother of John, whose surname was Mark, where many were gathered together praying.

13 And as Peter knocked at the door of the gate, a damsel came ‡ to hearken, named Rhoda. ‡ Or, to ask who was there.

14 And when she knew Peters voice, she opened not the gate for gladness, but ran in, and told how Peter stood before the gate.

15 And they said unto her, Thou art mad. But she constantly affirmed that it was even so. Then said they, It is his angel.

16 But Peter continued knocking: and when they

they had opened *the door*, and saw him, they were astonished.

17 But he beckning unto them with the hand to hold their peace, declared unto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, Go, shew these things unto James, and to the brethren. And he departed, and went into another place.

18 Now assoon as it was day, there was no small stir among the souldiers, what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded that *they* should be put to death. And he went down from Judea to Cesarea, and *there* abode.

‡ Or, *bare an hostile mind, intending war.* † Gr. *that was over the kings bed-chamber.*

20 ¶ And Herod ‡ was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, and having made Blastus † the kings chamberlain their friend, desired peace; because their countrey was nourished by the kings *countrey*.

21 And upon a set day, Herod arayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them.

22 And the people gave a shout, *saying*, *It is* the voice of a god, and not of a man.

23 And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, & gave up the ghost.

24 ¶ But the word of God grew and multiplied.

‡ Or, *charge.* Chap. 11. 29, 30.

25 And Barnabas and Saul returned from Jerusalem, when they had fulfilled *their* ‡ ministery, and took with them John whose surname was Mark.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas are chosen to go to the Gentiles. 7 Of Sergius Paulus, and Elymas the sorcerer. 14 Paul preacheth at Antioch, that Jesus is Christ. 42 The Gentiles believe, 45 but the Jews gainsay and blaspheme: 46 Whereupon they turn to the Gentiles. 48 As many as were ordained to life, believed.

NOw there were in the church that was at Antioch, certain prophets and teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, ‡ which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul.

‡ Or, *Herods foster-brother.*

2 As they ministred to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the work whereunto I have called them.

3 And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent *them* away.

4 ¶ So they being sent forth by the holy Ghost, departed unto Seleucia; and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews: and they had also John to *their* minister.

6 And when they had gone through the isle unto Paphos, they found a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name *was* Bar-jesus:

7 Which was with the deputy of the countrey, Sergius Paulus, a prudent man; who called for Barnabas and Saul, and desired to hear the word of God.

8 But Elymas the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turn away the deputy from the faith.

9 Then Saul (who also *is called* Paul) filled with the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him,

10 And said, O full of all subtilty and all mischief, thou child of the devil, thou enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to pervert the right ways of the LORD?

11 And now, behold, the hand of the Lord *is* upon thee, and thou shalt be blind, not seeing the sun for a season. And immediately there fell on him a mist and a darkness; and he went about seeking some to lead him by the hand.

12 Then the deputy, when he saw what was done, believed, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.

13 Now when Paul and his company loosed from Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphylia: and John departing from them, returned to Jerusalem.

14 ¶ But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on the sabbath-day, and sat down.

15 And after the reading of the law and the prophets, the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them, saying, Ye men *and* brethren, if ye have any word of exhortation for the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stood up, and beckning with *his* hand, said, Men of Israel, and ye that fear God, give audience.

17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people, * when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, * and with an high arm brought he them out of it.

* Exo. 1. 7.
* Exo. 13. 14.

18 And about the time of fourty years † suffered he their manners in the wilderness.

† Gr. *τροποφορησεν*

19 And when he had destroyed seven nations in the land of Canaan,* he divided their land to them by lot.

* Deut. 7. 1.

20 And after that * he gave *unto them* judges, about the space of four hundred and fifty years, until Samuel the prophet.

§ Or, *Perhaps*

21 * And afterward they desired a king: and God gave unto them Saul the son of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, by the space of fourty years.

† Gr. *εδωκεν*

22 And when he had removed him,* he raised up unto them David to be their king; to whom also he gave testimony, and said, * I have found David the *son* of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, which shall fulfill all my will.

§ Or, *as a witness beareth, Judes child.*

* Deut. 12. 2 Mac. 7. 37. according to the Sept. & so Christ. * Josh. 14. 2. * Jud. 3. * 1 Sam. 8. 5. * 1 Sam. 16. 13. * Psal. 89. 20. * Isa. 44. * Matth. 3. 1. * John 1. 20. * Matth. 27. 22. * Matth. 28. 6.

23 * Of this mans seed hath God according to *his* promise, raised unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus:

24 * When John had first preached before his coming, the baptism of repentance to all the people of Israel.

25 And as John fulfilled his course, he said, * Whom think ye that I am? I am not *he*. But behold, there cometh one after me, whose shoes of *his* feet I am not worthy to loose.

26 Men *and* brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you feareth God, to you is the word of this salvation sent.

27 For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the voices of the prophets, which are read every sabbath-day, they have fulfilled *them* in condemning *him*.

28 * And though they found no cause of death *in him*, yet desired they Pilate that he should be slain.

29 And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him, they took *him* down from the tree, and laid *him* in a sepulchre.

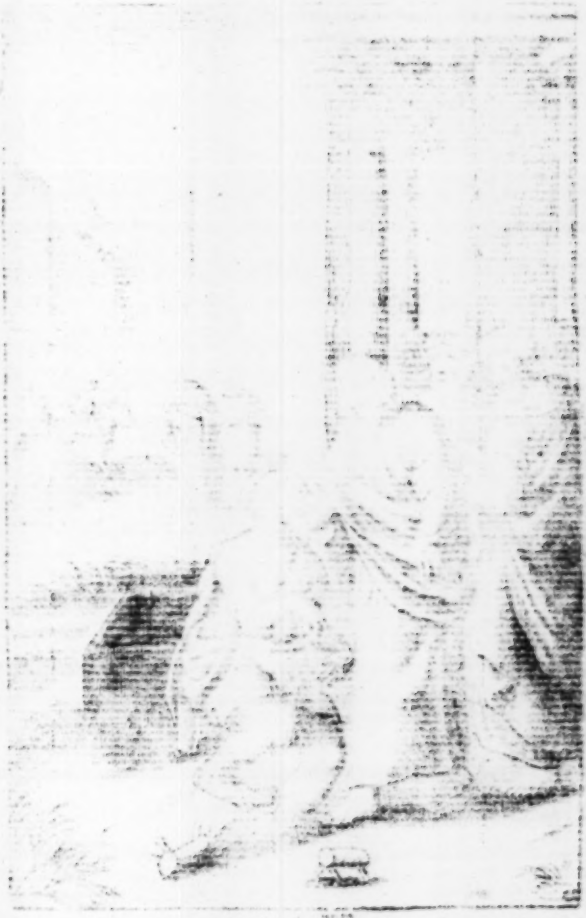
30 * But God raised him from the dead:

31 And he was seen many days of them which came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are his witnesses unto the people.

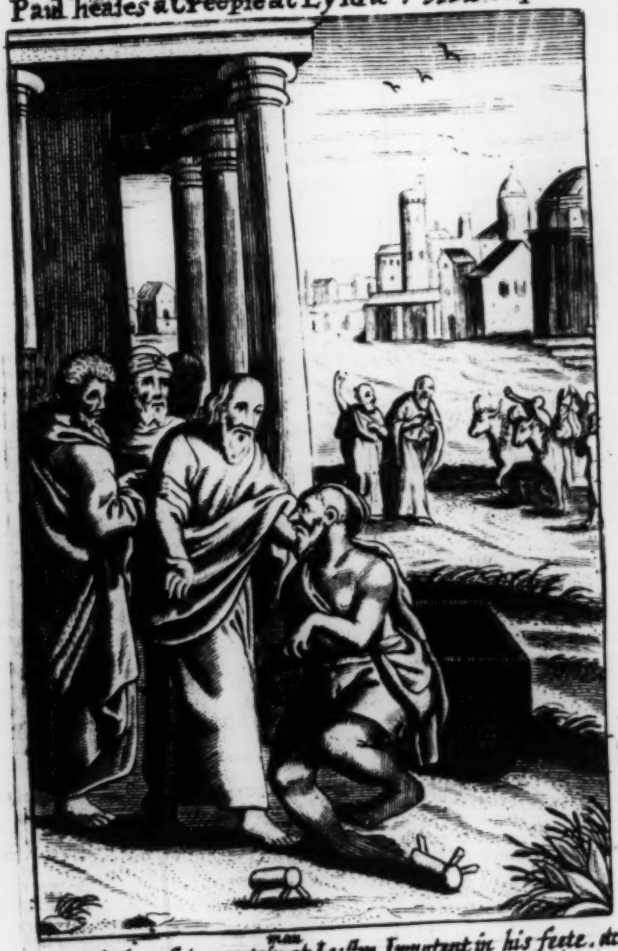
32 And we declare unto you glad tidings, how that the promise which was made unto the fathers,

33 God hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that he hath raised up Jesus again;

¶ 23



Paul heales a Creople at Lystra . Acts . 14 .



8 And there sat a certain at Lystra Impotent in his feete . etc:
9 The same heard Paul speake etc: 10: who said with a loud
voyce stand upright on thy feete etc: 13: Then ye priest of
Jupiter etc: brought Oxen, and Garlands . etc :

33 as it is also written in the second psalm, * Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee.

34 And as concerning that he raised him up from the dead, now no more to return to corruption, he said on this wise, * I will give you the sure † mercies of David.

35 Wherefore he saith also in another *psalm*, * Thou shalt not suffer thine holy one to see corruption.

36 For David † after he had served his own generation by the will of God, * fell on sleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption.

37 But he whom God raised again, saw no corruption.

38 ¶ Be it known unto you therefore, men *and* brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins:

39 And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.

40 Beware therefore, lest that come upon you which is spoken of in * the prophets,

41 Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I work a work in your days, a work which you shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you.

42 And when the Jews were gone out of the synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words might be preached to them † the next sabbath.

43 Now when the congregation was broken up, many of the Jews, and religious proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas; who speaking to them, perswaded them to continue in the grace of God.

44 ¶ And the next sabbath-day came almost the whole city together, to hear the word of God.

45 But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and spake against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming.

46 Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and judge your selves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles.

47 For so hath the Lord commanded us, *saying*, * I have set thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for salvation unto the ends of the earth.

48 And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life, believed.

49 And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region.

50 But the Jews stirred up the devout and honourable women, and the chief men of the city, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts.

51 * But they shook off the dust of their feet against them, and came unto Iconium.

52 And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the holy Ghost.

CHAP. XIV.

1 Paul and Barnabas are persecuted from Iconium. 8 At Lystra Paul healeth a cripple, whereupon they are reputed as gods. 19 Paul is stoned. 21 They pass through divers churches, confirming the disciples in faith and patience. 25 Returning to Antioch, they report what God had done with them.

AND it came to pass in Iconium, that they went both together into the synagogue of the Jews, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Jews, & also of the Greeks believed.

2 But the unbelieving Jews stirred up the Gentiles, and made their minds evil-affected against the brethren.

3 Long time therefore abode they speaking boldly in the Lord, which gave testimony unto the word of his grace, and granted signs and wonders to be done by their hands.

4 But the multitude of the city was divided: and part held with the Jews, and part with the apostles.

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and also of the Jews, with their rulers, to use *them* despightfully, and to stone them,

6 They were ware of *it*, and fled unto Lystra and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and unto the region that lieth round about:

7 And there they preached the gospel.

8 ¶ And there sat a certain man at Lystra, impotent in his feet, being a cripple from his mothers womb, who never had walked.

9 The same heard Paul speak: who stedfastly beholding him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed,

10 Said with a loud voice, Stand up right on thy feet. And he leaped and walked.

11 And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lift up their voices, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men.

12 And they called Barnabas, Jupiter: and Paul Mercurius, because he was the chief speaker.

13 Then the priest of Jupiter which was before their city, brought oxen and garlands unto the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the people.

14 *Which* when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard *of*, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying out,

15 And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? We also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you, that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, * which made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein:

16 * Who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways.

17 Nevertheless he left not himself without witness, in that he did good, and gave us rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness.

18 And with these sayings scarce restrained they the people, that they had not done sacrifice unto them.

19 ¶ And there came thither certain Jews from Antioch and Iconium, who perswaded the people, * and having stoned Paul, drew *him* out of the city, supposing he had been dead.

20 Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, he rose up, and came into the city: and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And when they had preached the gospel to that city, and had taught many, they returned again to Lystra, and to Iconium, and Antioch,

22 Confirming the souls of the disciples, *and* exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God.

23 And when they had ordained them elders in every church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they believed.

24 And after they had passed throughout Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the word in Perga, they went down into Attalia:

25 And thence ſailed to Antioch, from whence they had been recommended to the grace of God, for the work which they fulfilled.

27 And when they were come and had gathered the church together, they rehearſed all that God had done with them, and how he had opened the door of faith unto the Gentiles.

28 And there they abode long time with the diſciples.

CHAP. XV.

1 *Great diſſenſion ariſeth touching circumciſion.* 6 *The Apoſtles conſult about it,* 22 *and ſend their determination by letters to the churches.* 36 *Paul and Barnabas, thinking to viſit the brethren together, fall at ſtrife, and depart aſunder.*

AND certain men which came down from Judea, taught the brethren, *and ſaid,* * Except ye be circumciſed after the manner of Moſes, ye cannot be ſaved.

* Gal. 5.2.

2 When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no ſmall diſſenſion and diſputation with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certain other of them, ſhould go up to Jeruſalem unto the apoſtles and elders about this queſtion.

3 And being brought on their way by the church, they paſſed through Phenice, and Samaria, declaring the converſion of the Gentiles: and they cauſed great joy unto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Jeruſalem, they were received of the church, and *of* the apoſtles and elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them.

5 But there roſe up certain of the ſect of the Phariſees which believed, ſaying, That it was needful to circumciſe them, and to command *them* to keep the law of Moſes.

6 ¶ And the apoſtles and elders came together for to conſider of this matter.

7 And when there had been much diſputing, Peter roſe up and ſaid unto them, * Men *and* brethren, ye know how that a good while ago, God made choice among us, that the Gentiles by my mouth ſhould hear the word of the goſpel, and believe.

* Chap. 10. 20. & 11. 13.

8 And God which knoweth the hearts, bare them witneſs, giving them the holy Ghoſt, even as *he did* unto us:

9 And put no difference between us and them, * purifying their hearts by faith.

* Chap. 10. 43.

10 Now therefore why tempt ye God, * to put a yoke upon the neck of the diſciples, which neither our fathers, nor we were able to bear?

1 Cor. 1. 2. * Matth. 23. 4.

11 But we believe that through the grace of the Lord Jeſus Chriſt, we ſhall be ſaved even as they.

12 ¶ Then all the multitude kept ſilence, and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what miracles and wonders God had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

13 ¶ And after they had held their peace, James anſwered, ſaying, Men *and* brethren, hearken unto me:

14 Simeon hath declared how God at the firſt did viſit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name.

15 And to this agree the words of the prophets; as it is written,

16 * After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down: and I will build again the ruines thereof, and I will ſet it up:

* Amos 9. 11.

17 That the reſidue of men might ſeek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles, upon whom my name is called, ſaith the Lord, who doeth all theſe things.

18 Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world.

19 Wherefore my ſentence is, that we trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles are turned to God:

20 But that we write unto them, that they abſtain from pollutions of idols, and *from* fornication, and *from* things ſtrangled, and *from* blood.

21 For Moſes of old time hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the ſynagogues every ſabbath-day.

22 Then pleaſed it the apoſtles and elders, with the whole church, to ſend choſen men of their own company to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas; *namely* Judas ſurnamed Barſabas, and Silas, chief men among the brethren:

23 And wrote letters by them after this manner, The apoſtles, and elders, and brethren ſend greeting unto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia.

24 Foraſmuch as we have heard, that certain which went out from us have troubled you with words, ſubverting your ſouls, ſaying, *Ye muſt* be circumciſed, and keep the law; to whom we gave no *ſuch* commandment:

25 It ſeemed good unto us, being aſſembled with one accord, to ſend choſen men unto you, with our beloved Barnabas and Paul;

26 Men that have hazarded their lives, for the name of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

27 We have ſent therefore Judas and Silas, who ſhall alſo tell *you* the ſame things by mouth.

28 For it ſeemed good to the holy Ghoſt, and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden then theſe neceſſary things;

29 That ye abſtain from meats offered to idols, and from blood, and from things ſtrangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keep your ſelves, ye ſhall do well. Fare ye well.

30 So when they were diſmiſſed, they came to Antioch: and when they had gathered the multitude together, they delivered the epiſtle.

31 *Which* when they had read, they rejoyced for the ‡ conſolation.

‡ Or, exhortation.

32 And Judas and Silas being prophets alſo themſelves, exhorted the brethren with many words, and confirmed *them.*

33 And after they had tarried *there* a ſpace, they were let go in peace from the brethren unto the apoſtles.

34 Notwithſtanding it pleaſed Silas to abide there ſtill.

35 Paul alſo and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with many others alſo.

36 ¶ And ſome days after, Paul ſaid unto Barnabas, Let us go again and viſit our brethren, in every city where we have preached the word of the Lord, *and ſee* how they do.

37 And Barnabas determined to take with them John, whoſe ſurname was Mark.

38 But Paul thought not good to take him with them, who departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work.

39 And the contention was ſo ſharp between them, that they departed aſunder one from the other: and ſo Barnabas took Mark, and ſailed unto Cyprus;

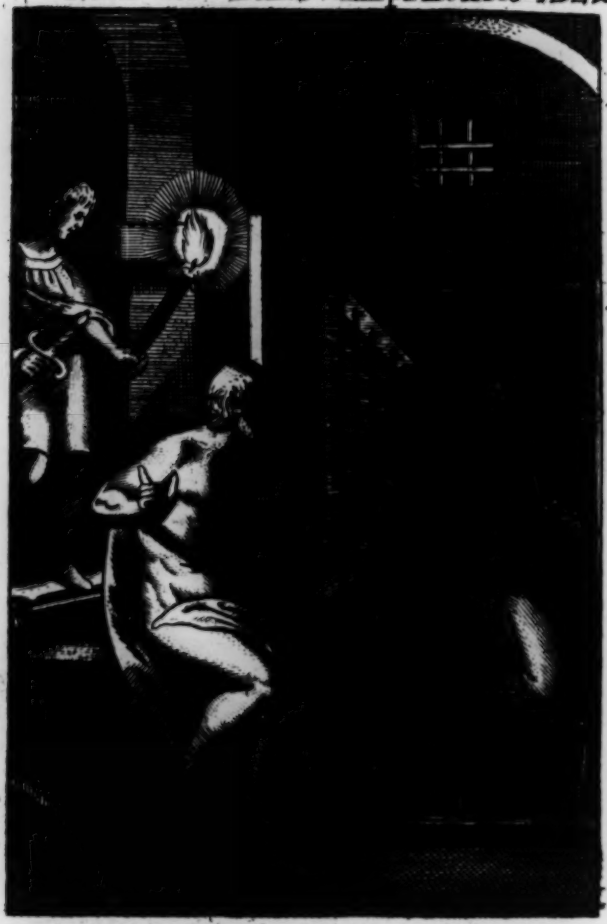
40 And Paul choſe Silas, and departed, being recommended by the brethren unto the grace of God.

41 And he went through Syria and Cilicia, confirming the churches.

CHAP. XVI.

Paul having circumciſed Timothy, 7 *and being called by the Spirit from one country to another,* 14 *converteth Lydia,* 16 *caſteth out a ſpirit of divination,* 19 *For which cauſe he*

Paul and Silas Imprisoned Act:16



25. And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, etc:
27. And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleep, and seing the prison doors open, he drew out his sword and would have killed himselfe etc: 28: but Paul cried with a loud voice &c

he and Silas are whipped and imprisoned. 26 *The prison-doors are opened.* 31 *The jailour is converted,* 37 *and they are delivered as Romans.*

THen came he to Derbe and Lystra: and behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timotheus, the son of a certain woman, which was a Jewess, and believed; but his father was a Greek:

2 Which was well reported of by the brethren that were at Lystra and Iconium.

3 Him would Paul have to go forth with him; and took and circumcised him, because of the Jews which were in those quarters: for they knew all that his father was a Greek.

4 And as they went through the cities, they delivered them the decrees for to keep, that were ordained of the apostles and elders which were at Jerusalem.

5 And so were the churches established in the faith, and increased in number daily.

6 Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia,

7 After they were come to Mysia, they assayed to go into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not.

8 And they passing by Mysia, came down to Troas.

9 And a vision appeared to Paul in the night: There stood a man of Macedonia, & prayed him, saying, Come over into Macedonia, and help us.

10 And after he had seen the vision, immediately we endeavoured to go into Macedonia, assuredly gathering, that the Lord had called us for to preach the gospel unto them.

11 Therefore loosing from Troas, we came with a straight course to Samothracia, and the next *day* to Neapolis;

12 And from thence to Philippi, which is ‡ the chief city of that part of Macedonia, *and* a colony: and we were in that city abiding certain days.

13 And on the sabbath we went out of the city by a river side, where prayer was wont to be made; and we sat down, and spake unto the women which resorted *thither.*

14 ¶ And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, which worshipped God, heard *us*: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended unto the things which were spoken of Paul.

15 And when she was baptized, and her household, she besought *us*, saying, If ye have judged me to be faithful to the Lord, come into my house and abide *there.* And she constrained us.

16 ¶ And it came to pass, as we went to prayer, a certain damsel, possessed with a spirit ‡ of divination, met us, which brought her masters much gain by soothsaying:

17 The same followed Paul, and us, and cried, saying, These men are the servants of the most high God, which shew unto us the way of salvation.

18 And this did she many days. But Paul being grieved, turned and said to the spirit, I command thee in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And he came out the same hour.

19 ¶ And when her masters saw that the hope of their gains was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drew *them* into the ‡ market-place, unto the rulers,

20 And brought them to the magistrates, saying, These men being Jews, do exceedingly trouble our city,

21 And teach customs which are not lawful for us to receive, neither to observe, being Romans.

22 And the multitude rose up together against them: and the magistrates rent off their clothes, and commanded to beat *them.*

23 And when they had laid many stripes upon them, they cast *them* into prison, charging the jailour to keep them safely

24 Who having received such a charge, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks.

25 ¶ And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed and sang praises unto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: and immediately all the doors were opened, and every one's bands were loosed.

27 And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleep, and seeing the prison-doors open, he drew out his sword, and would have killed himself, supposing that the prisoners had been fled.

28 But Paul cried with a loud voice, saying, Do thy self no harm; for we are all here.

29 Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and fell down before Paul and Silas;

30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved?

31 And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.

32 And they spake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house.

33 And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed *their* stripes; and was baptized, he and all his, straightway.

34 And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoyced, believing in God with all his house.

35 And when it was day, the magistrates sent the sergeants, saying, Let those men go.

36 And the keeper of the prison told this saying to Paul, The magistrates have sent to let you go: now therefore depart, and go in peace.

37 But Paul said unto them, They have beaten us openly uncondemned, being Romans, and have cast us into prison; and now do they thrust us out privily? nay verily; but let them come themselves and fetch us out.

38 And the sergeants told these words unto the magistrates: and they feared when they heard that they were Romans.

39 And they came and besought them, and brought *them* out, and desired *them* to depart out of the city.

40 And they went out of the prison, and entred into *the house of* Lydia: and when they had seen the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

CHAP. XVII.

1 *Paul preacheth at Thessalonica:* 4 *where some believe, and others persecute him.* 10 *He is sent to Berea, and preacheth there.* 13 *Being persecuted at Thessalonica,* 15 *he cometh to Athens and disputeth, and preacheth the living God to them unknown,* 34 *whereby many are converted unto Christ.*

NOw when they had passed through Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews.

2 And Paul, as his manner was, went in unto them, and three sabbath-days reasoned with them out of the scriptures,

3 Opening and alledging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from

» Rom. 16. 21.

» chap. 15. 28.

‡ Or, the first.

‡ Or, of Python.

‡ Or, street.

* 2 Cor. 11. 25. 1 Thess. 2. 2.

* Vers. 43.

the dead: and that this Jesus whom I preach unto you, is Christ.

4 And some of them believed, and consorted with Paul and Silas: and of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and of the chief women not a few.

5 ¶ But the Jews which believed not, moved with envy, took unto them certain lewd fellows of the baser sort, and gathered a company, and set all the city on an uproar, and assaulted the house of Jason, and sought to bring them out to the people.

6 And when they found them not, they drew Jason, and certain brethren, unto the rulers of the city, crying, These that have turned the world upside down, are come hither also;

7 Whom Jason hath received: and these all do contrary to the decrees of Cesar, saying, That there is another king, *one* Jesus.

8 And they troubled the people, and the rulers of the city, when they heard these things.

9 And when they had taken security of Jason, and of the other, they let them go.

10 ¶ And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night unto Berea: who coming *thither*, went into the synagogue of the Jews.

11 These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them believed: also of honourable women which were Greeks, and of men not a few.

13 But when the Jews of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and stirred up the people.

14 And then immediately the brethren sent away Paul, to go as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

15 And they that conducted Paul, brought him unto Athens: and receiving a commandment unto Silas and Timotheus, for to come to him with all speed, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when he saw the city ‡ wholly given to idolatry.

‡ Or, *full of idols.*

17 Therefore disputed he in the synagogue with the Jews, and with the devout persons, and in the market daily with them that met with him.

18 Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoicks, encountred him: and some said, What will this ‡ babler say? other some, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods: because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection.

‡ Or, *base fellow.*

19 And they took him, and brought him unto ‡ Areopagus, saying, May we know what this new doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is?

‡ Or, *Mars hill.* It was the highest court in Athens.

20 For thou bringest certain strange things to our ears: we would know therefore what these things mean.

21 (For all the Athenians, and strangers which were there, spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell or to hear some new thing.)

‡ Or, *the court of the Areopagites*

22 ¶ Then Paul stood in the mids of ‡ Mars-hill, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious.

‡ Or, *gods that you serve.* 2 Thess. 2. 4. * Chap. 7. 48.

23 For as I passed by, and beheld your ‡ devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you.

24 * God that made the world, and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands:

25 Neither is worshipped with mens hands, * as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things;

* Psal. 50. 8.

26 And hath made of one blood, all nations of men, for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation:

27 That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one of us:

28 For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring.

29 Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, * we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone graven by art and mans device.

* Is. 40. 18.

30 And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent:

31 Because he hath appointed a day in the which he will judge the world in righteousness, by *that* man whom he hath ordained; whereof he hath ‡ given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

‡ Or, *offered faith.*

32 ¶ And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked: and others said, We will hear thee again of this matter.

33 So Paul departed from among them.

34 Howbeit, certain men clave unto him, and believed: among the which *was* Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

CHAP. XVIII.

3 Paul laboureth with his hands, and preacheth at Corinth to the Gentiles. 9 The Lord encouraged him in a vision. 12 He is accused before Gallio, the deputy, but is dismissed. 18 Afterwards passing from city to city, he strengtheneth the disciples. 24 Apollos being more perfectly instructed by Aquilla and Priscilla, 28 preacheth Christ with great efficacy.

AFter these things, Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth;

2 And found a certain Jew named * Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come from Italy, with his wife Priscilla, (because that Claudius had commanded all Jews to depart from Rome) and came unto them.

* Rom. 16. 3.

3 And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought (for by their occupation they were tent-makers.)

4 And he reasoned in the synagogue every sabbath, and perswaded the Jews, & the Greeks.

5 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed in spirit, and testified to the Jews, that Jesus was Christ.

6 And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, * he shook *his* raiment, and said unto them, Your blood *be* upon your own heads, I *am* clean: from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles.

* Matth. 10. 14.

7 ¶ And he departed thence, and entred into a certain mans house, named Justus, one that worshipped God, whose house joyned hard to the synagogue.

8 * And Crispus the chief ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord with all his house: and many of the Corinthians, hearing, believed, and were baptized.

* 1 Cor. 1. 14.

9 Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Be not afraid, but speak, and hold not thy peace:

10 For I am with thee: and no man shall set on thee, to hurt thee: for I have much people in this city.

11 And

21 And he † continued *there* a year and six moneths, teaching ỹ word of God among them.

12 ¶ And when Gallio was the deputy of Achaia, the Jews made insurrection with one accord against Paul, and brought him to the judgment-seat,

13 Saying, This fellow perswadeth men to worship God contrary to the law.

14 And when Paul was now about to open his mouth, Gallio said unto the Jews, If it were a matter of wrong, or wicked lewdness, O ye Jews, reason would that I should bear with you:

15 But if it be a question of words and names, and of your law, look ye *to it*; for I will be no judge of such matters.

16 And he drave them from the judgment-seat.

17 Then all the Greeks took Sosthenes, the chief ruler of the synagogue, and beat him before the judgment-seat: and Gallio cared for none of those things.

18 ¶ And Paul *after this* tarried *there* yet a good while, and then took his leave of the brethren, and sailed thence into Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aquila: having shorn *his* head in Cenchrea: for he had a vow.

19 And he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but he himself entred into the synagogue, and reasoned with the Jews.

20 When they desired *him* to tarry longer time with them, he consented not:

21 But bade them farewel, saying, I must by all means keep this feast that cometh, in Jerusalem: but I will return again unto you, * if God will. And he sailed from Ephesus.

22 And when he had landed at Cesarea, and gone up and saluted the church, he went down to Antioch.

23 And after he had spent some time *there*, he departed, and went over all the country of Galatia and Phrygia in order, strengthening all the disciples.

24 ¶ * And a certain Jew named Apollos, born at Alexandria, an eloquent man, *and* mighty in the scriptures, came to Ephesus.

25 This man was instructed in the way of the Lord; and being fervent in the spirit, he spake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing only the baptism of John.

26 And he began to speak boldly in the synagogue. Whom when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they took him unto them, and expounded unto him the way of God more perfectly.

27 And when he was disposed to pass into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receive him: who when he was come, helped them much which had believed through grace.

28 For he mightily convinced the Jews, *and* that publickly, shewing by the scriptures, that Jesus was Christ.

CHAP. XIX.

6 The holy Ghost is given by Pauls hands. 9 The Jews blaspheme his doctrine, which is confirmed by miracles. 13 The Jewish exorcists 16 are beaten by the devil. 19 Conjuring books are burnt. 24 Demetrius, for love of gain, raiseth an uproar against Paul, 35 which is appeased by the town-clerk.

AND it came to pass, that while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts, came to Ephesus: and finding certain disciples,

2 He said unto them, Have ye received the holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any holy Ghost.

3 And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto Johns baptism.

4 Then said Paul, * John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, That they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. * Matt. 13. 1.

5 When they heard *this*, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

6 And when Paul had laid *his* hands upon them, the holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

7 And all the men were about twelve.

8 And he went into the synagogue and spake boldly for the space of three moneths, disputing and perswading the things concerning the kingdom of God.

9 But when divers were hardned and believed not, but spake evil of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, disputing daily in the schoole of one Tyrannus.

10 And this continued by the space of two years; so that all they which dwelt in Asia, heard the word of the Lord Jesus, both Jews and Greeks.

11 And God wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul:

12 So that from his body were brought unto the sick, handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them.

13 ¶ Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits, the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth.

14 And there were seven sons of *one* Sceva a Jew, *and* chief of the priests, which did so.

15 And the evil spirit answered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the evil spirit was, leapt on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded.

17 And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus; and fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified.

18 And many that believed came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds.

19 Many also of them which used curious arts, brought their books together, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand *pieces* of silver.

20 So mightily grew the word of God, and prevailed.

21 ¶ After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the spirit, when he had passed through Macedonia, and Achaia, to go to Jerusalem, saying, After I have been there, I must also see Rome.

22 So he sent into Macedonia two of them that ministred unto him, Timotheus, & Erastus *but* he himself stayed in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no small stir about that way.

24 For a certain man named Demetrius, a silver-smith, which made silver shrines for Diana, brought no small gain unto the craftsmen.

25 Whom he called together with the workmen of like occupation, and said, Sirs, ye know that by this craft we have our wealth:

26 Moreover, ye see and hear, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath perswaded and turned away much people, saying, that they be no gods which are made with hands:

27 So that not only this our craft is in danger

to be set at nought; but also that the temple of the great goddess Diana should be despised, and her magnificence should be destroyed, whom all Asia, and the world worshippeth.

28 And when they heard *these sayings*, they were full of wrath, and cried out, saying, Great *is* Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the whole city was filled with confusion: and having caught Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Pauls companions in travel, they rushed with one accord into the theatre.

30 And when Paul would have entred in unto the people, the disciples suffered him not.

31 And certain of the chief of Asia, which were his friends, sent unto him, desiring *him* that he would not adventure himself into ỹ theatre.

32 Some therefore cried one thing, and some another: for the assembly was confused, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together.

33 And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Jews putting him forward. And Alexander beckned with the hand, and would have made his defence unto the people.

34 But when they knew that he was a Jew, all with one voice about the space of two hours, cried out, Great *is* Diana of the Ephesians.

35 And when the town clerk had appeased the people, he said, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is there that knoweth not how that the city of the Ephesians is † a worshipper of the great goddess Diana, and of the *image* which fell down from Jupiter?

† Gr. *the temple-keeper.*

36 Seeing then that these things cannot be spoken against, ye ought to be quiet, and to do nothing rashly.

37 For ye have brought hither these men, which are neither robbers of churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddess.

38 Wherefore if Demetrius and the craftsmen which are with him, have a matter against any man, ‡ the law is open, and there are deputies; let them implead one another.

‡ Or, *the court-days are kept.*

39 But if ye enquire any thing concerning other matters, it shall be determined in a ‡ lawful assembly.

‡ Or, *ordinary.*

40 For we are in danger to be called in question for this days uprore, there being no cause whereby we may give an account of this concourse.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he dismissed the assembly.

CHAP. XX.

1 Paul goeth to Macedonia. 7 He celebrateth the Lords Supper, and preacheth. 9 Eutychus having fallen down dead, 10 is raised to life. 17 At Miletus he calleth the elders together, telleth them what shall befall to himself, 28 committeth Gods flock to them, 29 warneth them of false teachers, 32 commendeth them to God, 36 prayeth with them, and goeth his way.

AND after the uprore was ceased, Paul called unto him the disciples, and embraced *them*, and departed for to go into Macedonia.

2 And when he had gone over those parts, and had given them much exhortation, he came into Greece,

3 And *there* abode three moneths: and when the Jews laid wait for him, as he was about to sail into Syria, he purposed to return through Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia, Sopater of Berea; and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus, and Secundus; and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus; and of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus.

5 These going before, tarried for us at Troas.

6 And we sailed away from Philippi, after the days of unleavened bread, and came unto them to Troas in five days, where we abode seven days

7 And upon the first *day* of the week, when the disciples came together * to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow, and continued his speech until midnight.

* Chap. 2. 46.

8 And there were many lights in the upper chamber where they were gathered together.

9 And there sat in a window a certain young man name Eutychus, being fallen into a deep sleep: and as Paul was long preaching, he sunk down with sleep, and fell down from the third loft, and was taken up dead.

10 And Paul went down, and fell on him, and embracing *him*, said, Trouble not your selves; for his life is in him.

11 When he therefore was come up again, and had broken bread, and eaten, and talked a long while, even till break of day, so he departed.

12 And they brought the young man alive, and were not a little comforted.

13 ¶ And we went before to ship, and sailed unto Assos, there intending to take in Paul: for so had he appointed, minding himself to go afoot

14 And when he met with us at Assos, we took him in, and came to Mitylene.

15 And we sailed thence, and came the next *day* over against Chios; and the next *day* we arrived at Samos, and tarried at Trogyllium; and the next *day* we came to Miletus.

16 For Paul had determined to sail by Ephesus, because he would not spend ỹ time in Asia: for he hasted, if it were possible for him, to be at Jerusalem the day of Pentecost.

17 ¶ And from Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called the elders of the church.

18 And when they were come to him, he said unto them, Ye know, from the first day that I came into Asia, after what manner I have been with you at all seasons,

19 Serving the Lord with all humility of mind, and with many tears, and temptations which befel me by the lying in wait of ỹ Jews:

20 *And* how I kept back nothing ỹ was profitable *unto you*, but have shewed you, and have taught you publickly, and from house to house,

21 Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.

22 And now behold, I go bound in the spirit unto Jerusalem, not knowing the things that shall befall me there:

23 Save that the holy Ghost witnesseth in every city, saying, that bonds & afflictions ‡ abide me

‡ Or, *wait for me.*

24 But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto my self, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministery, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testifie the gospel of the grace of God.

25 And now behold, I know that ye all, among whom I have gone preaching the kingdom of God, shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the bloud of all men.

27 For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God.

28 ¶ Take heed therefore unto your selves, and to all the flock, over the which the holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own bloud.

29 For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock.

30 Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.

31 There-

31 Therefore watch, and remember, that by the ſpace of three years, I ceaſed not to warn every one night and day with tears.

32 And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are ſanctified.

33 I have coveted no mans ſilver, or gold, or apparel.

34 Yea, you your ſelves know, * that theſe hands have miniſtred unto my neceſſities, and to them that were with me.

35 I have ſhewed you all things, how that ſo labouring ye ought to ſupport the weak; and to remember the words of the LORD Jeſus, how he ſaid, It is more bleſſed to give then to receive.

36 ¶ And when he had thus ſpoken, he kneeled down and prayed with them all.

37 And they all wept ſore, and fell on Pauls neck, and kiſſed him,

38 Sorrowing moſt of all for the words which he ſpake, that they ſhould ſee his face no more. And they accompanied him unto the ſhip.

CHAP. XXI.

Paul will not by any means be diſſwaded from going to Jeruſalem. 9 Philips daughters propheteſſes. 17 Paul cometh to Jeruſalem: 27 where he is apprehended, and in great danger, 31 but by the chief captain is reſcued, and permitted to ſpeak to the people.

AND it came to paſs, that after we were gotten from them, and had launched, we came with a ſtraight courſe unto Coos, and the day following unto Rhodes, and from thence unto Patara.

2 And finding a ſhip ſailing over unto Phenicia, we went aboard, and ſet forth.

3 Now when we had diſcovered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and ſailed into Syria, and landed at Tyre: for there the ſhip was to unlade her burden.

4 And finding diſciples, we tarried there ſeven days: who ſaid to Paul through the Spirit, that he ſhould not go up to Jeruſalem.

5 And when we had accompliſhed thoſe days, we departed and went our way, and they all brought us on our way, with wives and children, till *we were* out of the city: and we kneeled down on the ſhore, and prayed.

6 And when we had taken our leave one of another, we took ſhip; and they returned home again.

7 And when we had finiſhed *our* courſe from Tyre, we came to Ptolemais, and ſaluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

8 And the next *day* we that were of Pauls company departed, and came unto Ceſarea; and we entred into the houſe of Philip the evangeliſt, (* which was *one* of the ſeven) and abode with him.

9 And the ſame man had four daughters, virgins, which did propheſie.

10 And as we tarried *there* many days, there came down from Judea a certain prophet, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come unto us, he took Pauls girdle, and bound his own hands and feet, and ſaid, Thus ſaith the holy Ghoſt, So ſhall the Jews at Jeruſalem bind the man that oweth this girdle, and ſhall deliver *him* into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when we heard theſe things, both we and they of that place, beſought him not to go up to Jeruſalem.

13 Then Paul anſwered, What mean ye to weep, and to break mine heart? for I am ready not to be bound onely, but alſo to die at Jeruſalem for the name of the Lord Jeſus.

14 And when he would not be perſwaded, we ceaſed, ſaying, The will of the Lord be done.

15 And after thoſe days we took up our carriages, and went up to Jeruſalem.

16 There went with us alſo *certain* of the diſciples of Ceſarea, and brought with them one Mnaſon of Cyprus, an old diſciple, with whom we ſhould lodge.

17 And when we were come to Jeruſalem, the brethren received us gladly.

18 And the *day* following Paul went in with us unto James; and all the elders were preſent.

19 And when he had ſaluted them, he declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his miniſtry.

20 And when they heard *it*, they glorified the Lord, and ſaid unto him, Thou ſeeſt, brother, how many thouſands of Jews there are which believe, and they are all zealous of the law.

21 And they are informed of thee, that thou teacheſt all the Jews which are among the Gentiles to forſake Moſes, ſaying, that they ought not to circumciſe *their* children, neither to walk after the cuſtoms.

22 What is it therefore? the multitude muſt needs come together: for they will hear that thou art come.

23 Do therefore this that we ſay to thee: we have four men which have a vow on them;

24 Them take and purifie thy ſelf with them, and be at charges with them, that they may * ſhave *their* heads: and all may know that thoſe things whereof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing, but *that* thou thy ſelf alſo walkeſt orderly, and keepeſt the law. * Numb. 6. 18. Chap. 18. 18.

25 As touching the Gentiles which believe, * we have written and concluded, that they obſerve no ſuch thing, ſave onely that they keep themſelves from things offered to idols, and from bloud, and from ſtrangled, and from fornication. * Chap. 15. 20.

26 Then Paul took the men, and the next day purifying himſelf with them, entred into the temple, *to ſignifie the accompliſhment of the days of purification, until that an offering ſhould be offered for every one of them. * Numb. 6. 13.

27 And when the ſeven days were almoſt ended, the Jews which were of Aſia, when they ſaw him in the temple, ſtirred up all the people, and laid hands on him,

28 Crying out, Men of Iſrael, help: this is the man that teacheth all men every where againſt the people, and the law, and this place: and farther, brought Greeks alſo into the temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 (For they had ſeen before with him in the city, Trophimus an Epheſian, whom they ſuppoſed that Paul had brought into the temple)

30 And all the city was moved, and the people ran together: and they took Paul and drew him out of the temple: and forthwith the doors were ſhut.

31 And as they went about to kill him, tidings came unto the chief captain of the band, that all Jeruſalem was in an uproar.

32 Who immediately took ſouldiers and centurions, and ran down unto them: and when they ſaw the chief captain and the ſouldiers, they left beating of Paul.

33 Then the chief captain came near and took him, and commanded *him* to be bound with two chains; and demanded who he was, and what he had done.

34 And ſome cried one thing, ſome another, among the multitude: and when he could not know the certainty for the tumult, he commanded him to be carried into the caſtle.

35 And when he came upon the ſtairs, ſo it was that he was born of the ſouldiers, for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him.

37 And as Paul was to be led into the caſtle, he ſaid unto the chief captain, May I ſpeak unto thee? Who ſaid, Canſt thou ſpeak Greek?

* Chap. 5. 36. 38 * Art not thou that Egyptian which before theſe days madeſt an uproar, and leddeſt out into the wilderneſs four thouſand men that were murderers?

39 But Paul ſaid, I am a man which am a Jew of Tarſus, *a city* in Cilicia, a citizen of no mean city: and I beſeech thee, ſuffer me to ſpeak unto the people.

40 And when he had given him licenſe, Paul ſtood on the ſtairs, and beckened with the hand unto the people: and when there was made a great ſilence, he ſpake unto them in the Hebrew tongue, ſaying,

CHAP. XXII.

1 *Paul declareth at large, how he was converted to the faith, 17 and called to his apoſtleſhip. 22 At the very mentioning of the Gentiles, the people exclaim on him. 24 He ſhould have been ſcourged; 25 but claiming the priviledge of a Roman, he eſcapeth.*

MEn, brethren, and fathers, hear ye my defence *which I make* now unto you.

2 (And when they heard that he ſpake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more ſilence: and he ſaith)

* Chap. 21. 39. 3 * I am verily a man which am a Jew, born in Tarſus *a city* in Cilicia, yet brought up in this city, at the feet of Gamaliel, *and* taught according to the perfect manner of the law of the fathers, and was zealous towards God, as ye all are this day.

* Chap. 8. 3. 4 * And I perſecuted this way unto the death, binding and delivering into priſons both men and women.

5 As alſo the high prieſt doth bear me witneſs, and all the eſtate of the elders: from whom alſo I received letters unto the brethren, and went to Damaſcus, to bring them which were there, bound unto Jeruſalem, for to be puniſhed.

6 And it came to paſs, that as I made my journey, and was come nigh unto Damaſcus about noon, ſuddenly there ſhone from heaven a great light round about me.

7 And I fell unto the ground, and heard a voice ſaying unto me, Saul, Saul, why perſecuteſt thou me?

8 And I anſwered, Who art thou, Lord? And he ſaid unto me, I am Jeſus of Nazareth whom thou perſecuteſt.

9 And they that were with me ſaw indeed the light, and were afraid; but they heard not the voice of him that ſpake to me.

10 And I ſaid, What ſhall I do, Lord? And the Lord ſaid unto me, Ariſe, and go into Damaſcus, and there it ſhall be told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to do.

11 And when I could not ſee for the glory of that light, being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damaſcus.

12 And one Ananias, a devout man according to the law, having a good report of all the Jews which dwelt *there*,

13 Came unto me, and ſtood, and ſaid unto me, Brother Saul, receive thy ſight. And the ſame hour I looked up upon him.

14 And he ſaid, The God of our fathers hath choſen thee, that thou ſhouldeſt know his will, and ſee that Juſt one, and ſhouldeſt hear the voice of his mouth.

15 For thou ſhalt be his witneſs unto all men, of what thou haſt ſeen and heard.

16 And now why tarrieſt thou? ariſe, and be baptized, and waſh away thy ſins, calling on the name of the Lord.

17 And it came to paſs, that when I was come again to Jeruſalem, even while I prayed in the temple, I was in a trance;

18 And ſaw him ſaying unto me, Make haſte and get thee quickly out of Jeruſalem: for they will not receive thy teſtimony concerning me.

19 And I ſaid, Lord, they know that I impriſoned, and beat in every ſynagogue them that believed on thee.

* Chap. 7. 58. 20 * And when the bloud of thy martyr Stephen was ſhed, I alſo was ſtanding by, and conſenting unto his death, and kept the raiment of them that ſlew him.

21 And he ſaid unto me, Depart: for I will ſend thee far hence unto the Gentiles.

22 And they gave him audience unto this word, and *then* lift up their voices, and ſaid, Away with ſuch a fellow from the earth: for it is not fit that he ſhould live.

23 And as they cried out, and caſt off *their* clothes, and threw duſt into the air,

24 The chief captain commanded him to be brought into the caſtle, and bade that he ſhould be examined by ſcourging: that he might know wherefore they cried ſo againſt him.

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul ſaid unto the centurion that ſtood by, Is it lawful for you to ſcourge a man that is a Roman, and uncondemned?

26 When the centurion heard *that*, he went and told the chief captain, ſaying, Take heed what thou doeſt; for this man is a Roman.

27 Then the chief captain came, and ſaid unto him, Tell me, art thou a Roman? He ſaid, Yea.

28 And the chief captain anſwered, With a great ſum obtained I this freedom. And Paul ſaid, But I was *free*-born.

29 Then ſtraightway they departed from him which ſhould have † examined him: and the chief captain alſo was afraid after he knew that he was a Roman, and becauſe he had bound him.

† Or, tortured him.

30 On the morrow, becauſe he would have known the certainty wherefore he was accuſed of the Jews, he looſed him from *his* bands, and commanded the chief prieſts and all their counſel to appear, and brought Paul down, and ſet him before them.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 *As Paul pleadeth his cauſe, 2 Ananias commandeth them to ſmite him. 7 Diſſenſion among his accuſers. 11 God encourageth him. 14 The Jews laying wait for Paul 20 is declared unto the chief captain. 27 He ſendeth him to Felix the governour.*

AND Paul earneſtly beholding the counſel, ſaid, Men *and* brethren, I have lived in all good conſcience before God, until this day.

2 And the high prieſt Ananias commanded them that ſtood by him, to ſmite him on the mouth.

3 Then ſaid Paul unto him, God ſhall ſmite thee, thou whited wall: for ſitteſt thou to judge me after the law, and commandeſt me to be ſmitten contrary to the law?

4 And they that ſtood by, ſaid, Revileſt thou God's high prieſt?

5 Then ſaid Paul, I wiſt not, brethren, that he was the high prieſt: For it is written, * Thou ſhalt not ſpeak evil of the ruler of thy people. * Exod. 22. 28.

6 But

1. And Paul earnestly beholding the Councill said, Men & brethren I have lived in all good conscience. etc: 2: And the High Preist Ananias commanded them that stood by him to smite him etc: 3. Then said Paul unto him God shall smite thee thou whited wall. etc:

6 But when Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Pharisees, he cried out in the councel, Men *and* brethren, * I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee: * of the hope and resurrection of the dead, I am called in question.

Phil. 3. 5. Chap. 21.

7 And when he had so said, there arose a dissention between the Pharisees and the Sadducees: and the multitude was divided.

8 * For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither angel nor spirit; but the Pharisees confess both.

Matth. 23.

9 And there arose a great cry: and the scribes *that were* of the Pharisees part arose, and strove, saying, We find no evil in this man: but if a spirit or an angel hath spoken to him, let us not fight against God.

10 And when there arose a great dissention, the chief captain fearing lest Paul should have been pulled in pieces of them, commanded the souldiers to go down, and to take him by force from among them, and to bring him into the castle.

11 And the night following, the Lord stood by him, and said, Be of good cheer, Paul: for as thou hast testified of me in Jerusalem, so must thou bear witness also at Rome.

12 And when it was day, certain of the Jews banded together, and bound themselves ‡ under a curse, saying, that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed Paul.

‡ Or, took an oath of execution.

13 And they were more then fourty which had made this conspiracy.

14 And they came to the chief priests and elders, and said, We have bound our selves under a great curse, that we will eat nothing until we have slain Paul.

15 Now therefore ye with the councel, signifie to the chief captain, that he bring him down unto you to morrow, as though ye would enquire something more perfectly concerning him: and we, or ever he come near, are ready to kill him.

16 And when Pauls sisters son heard of their lying in wait, he went and entred into the castle, and told Paul.

17 Then Paul called one of the centurions unto him, and said, Bring this young man unto the chief captain: for he hath a certain thing to tell him.

18 So he took him, and brought him to the chief captain, and said, Paul the prisoner called me unto him, and prayed me to bring this young man unto thee, who hath something to say unto thee.

19 Then the chief captain took him by the hand, and went *with him* aside privately, and asked *him*, What is that thou hast to tell me?

20 And he said, The Jews have agreed to desire thee, that thou wouldest bring down Paul to morrow into the councel, as though they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly.

21 But do not thou yield unto them: for there lie in wait for him of them moe then fourty men, which have bound themselves with an oath, that they will neither eat nor drink till they have killed him: and now are they ready, looking for a promise from thee.

22 So the chief captain *then* let the young man depart, and charged *him*, *See thou* tell no man, that thou hast shewed these things to me.

23 And he called unto him two centurions, saying, Make ready two hundred soldiers to go to Cesarea, and horsmen threescore and ten, and spearmen two hundred, at the third hour of the night.

24 And provide *them* beasts, that they may set Paul on, and bring *him* safe unto Felix the governour.

25 And he wrote a letter after this manner:

26 Claudius Lysias, unto the most excellent governour Felix, *sendeth* greeting.

27 This man was taken of the Jews, and should have been killed of them: then came I with an army, and rescued him, having understood that he was a Roman.

28 And when I would have known the cause wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their councel:

29 Whom I perceived to be accused of questions of their law, but to have nothing laid to his charge worthy of death or of bonds.

30 And when it was told me, how that the Jews laid wait for the man, I sent straightway to thee, and gave commandment to his accusers also, to say before thee what *they had* against him. Farewell.

31 Then the souldiers, as it was commanded them, took Paul and brought *him* by night to Antipatris.

32 On the morrow they left the horsmen to go with him, and returned to the castle.

33 Who when we came to Cesarea, and delivered the epistle to the governour, presented Paul also before him.

34 And when the governour had read *the letter*, he asked of what province he was. And when he understood that he was of Cilicia;

35 I will hear thee, said he, when thine accusers are also come. And he commanded him to be kept in Herods judgment-hall.

CHAP. XXIV.

1 *Paul being accused by Tertullus the oratour, 10 answereth for his life and doctrine. 24 He preacheth Christ to the governour and his wife. 26 The governour hopeth for a bribe, but in vain. 27 At last going out of his office, he leaveth Paul in prison.*

AND after five days, Ananias the high priest descended with the elders, and *with* a certain oratour *named* Tertullus, who informed the governour against Paul.

2 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse *him*, saying, Seeing that by thee we enjoy great quietness, and that very worthy deeds are done unto this nation by thy providence,

3 We accept *it* always, and in all places, most noble Felix, with all thankfulness.

4 Notwithstanding, that I be not further tedious unto thee, I pray thee, that thou wouldest hear us of thy clemency a few words.

5 For we have found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mover of sedition among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ringleader of the sect of the Nazarenes:

6 Who also hath gone about to profane the temple: whom we took, and would have judged according to our law.

7 But the chief captain Lysias came upon us, and with great violence took *him* away out of our hands,

8 Commanding his accusers to come unto thee: by examining of whom, thy self mayest take knowledge of all these things, whereof we accuse him.

9 And the Jews also assented, saying, That these things were so.

10 Then Paul, after that the governour had beckened unto him to speak, answered, Forasmuch as I know that thou hast been of many years a judge unto this nation, I do the more cheerfully answer for my self:

11 Because that thou mayest understand, that there

there are yet but twelve days since I went up to Jerusalem for to worship.

12 And they neither found me in the temple disputing with any man, neither raising up the people, neither in the synagogues, nor in the city:

13 Neither can they prove the things whereof they now accuse me.

14 But this I confess unto thee, that after the way which they call heresie, so worship I the God of my fathers, believing all things which are written in the law and the prophets.

15 And have hope towards God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust.

16 And herein do I exercise my self to have always a conscience void of offence toward God, and toward men.

17 Now after many years, I came to bring alms to my nation, and offerings.

* Chap. 21. 27. 18 * Whereupon certain Jews from Asia found me purified in the temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult.

19 Who ought to have been here before thee, and object, if they had ought against me.

20 Or else let these same *here* say, if they have found any evil-doing in me, while I stood before the council,

* Chap. 23. 6. 21 Except it be for this one voice, that I cried standing among them, * Touching the resurrection of the dead, I am called in question by you this day.

22 And when Felix heard these things, having more perfect knowledge of *that* way, he deferred them, and said, When Lysias the chief captain shall come down, I will know the uttermost of your matter.

23 And he commanded a centurion to keep Paul, and to let *him* have liberty, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister, or come unto him.

24 And after certain days, when Felix came with his wife Drusilla, which was a Jewess, he sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ.

25 And as he reasoned of righteousness, temperance, and judgment to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Go thy way for this time; when I have a convenient season, I will call for thee.

26 He hoped also that money should have been given him of Paul, that he might loose him: wherefore he sent for him the oftner, and communed with him.

27 But after two years, Porcius Festus came into Felix room: and Felix willing to shew the Jews a pleasure, left Paul bound.

CHAP. XXV.

2 The Jews accuse Paul before Festus. 8 He answereth for himself, 11 and appealeth unto Cesar. 14 Afterwards Festus openeth his matter to king Agrippa, 23 and he is brought forth. 25 Festus cleareth him to have done nothing worthy of death.

NOw when Festus was come into the province, after three days he ascended from Cesarea to Jerusalem.

2 Then the high priest, and the chief of the Jews informed him against Paul, and besought him,

3 And desired favour against him, that he would send for him to Jerusalem, laying wait in the way to kill him.

4 But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Cesarea, and that he himself would depart shortly *thither*.

5 Let them therefore, said he, which among you are able, go down with *me*, and accuse this man, if there be any wickedness in him.

6 And when he had tarried among them ‡more then ten days, he went down unto Cesarea, and the next day sitting in the judgment-seat, commanded Paul to be brought.

‡ Or, as some copies read, no more then eight or ten days.

7 And when he was come, the Jews which came down from Jerusalem, stood round about, and laid many and grievous complaints against Paul, which they could not prove;

8 While he answered for himself, Neither against the law of the Jews, neither against the temple, nor yet against Cesar, have I offended any thing at all.

9 But Festus willing to do the Jews a pleasure, answered Paul, and said, Wilt thou go up to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these things before me?

10 Then said Paul, I stand at Cesars judgment-seat, where I ought to be judged: to the Jews have I done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.

11 For if I be an offender, or have committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof these accuse me, no man may deliver me unto them. I appeal unto Cesar.

12 Then Festus when he had conferred with the council, answered, Hast thou appealed unto Cesar? unto Cesar shalt thou go.

13 And after certain days, king Agrippa and Bernice came unto Cesarea to salute Festus.

14 And when they had been there many days, Festus declared Pauls cause unto ỹ king, saying, There is a certain man left in bonds by Felix:

15 About whom, when I was at Jerusalem, the chief priests and the elders of the Jews informed *me*, desiring *to have* judgment against him.

16 To whom I answered, It is not the manner of the Romans to deliver any man to die, before that he which is accused, have the accusers face to face, and have licence to answer for himself concerning the crime laid against him.

17 Therefore when they were come hither, without any delay on the morrow I sat on the judgment-seat, and I commanded the man to be brought forth.

18 Against whom when the accusers stood up, they brought none accusation of such things as I supposed:

19 But had certain questions against him of their own superstition, and of one Jesus, which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive.

20 And because ‡ I doubted of such manner of questions, I asked *him* whether he would go to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these matters.

‡ Or, I was doubtful how to enquire of.

21 But when Paul had appealed to be reserved unto the ‡ hearing of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept till I might send him to Cesar.

‡ Or, judgment.

22 Then Agrippa said unto Festus, I would also hear the man my self. To morrow, said he, thou shalt hear him.

23 And on the morrow when Agrippa was come, and Bernice, with great pomp, and was entred into the place of hearing, with the chief captains, and principal men of the city, at Festus commandment Paul was brought forth.

24 And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all men which are here present with us, ye see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Jews have dealt with me, both at Jerusalem, and also here, crying that he ought not to live any longer.

25 But when I found that he had committed nothing worthy of death, and that he himself hath appealed to Augustus, I have determined to send him.

26 Of whom I have no certain thing to write unto my lord. Wherefore I have brought him forth before you, and specially before thee, O king

Paul before Agrippa . Acts. 25.

23. And on the morrow when Agrippa was come and Bernice with great Pomp etc: at Festus commandement Paul was brought forth . Chap: 26: 1 Then Agrippa said unto Paul etc:

king Agrippa, that after examination had, I might have somewhat to write.

27 For it seemeth to me unreasonable to send a prisoner, and not withall to signifie the crimes laid against him.

CHAP. XXVI.

1 Paul in the presence of Agrippa, declareth his life from his childhood, 12 and how miraculously he was converted, and called to his apostleship. 24 Festus chargeth him to be mad, whereunto he answereth modestly. 28 Agrippa is almost perswaded to be a christian. 31 The whole company pronounceth him innocent.

THen Agrippa said unto Paul, Thou art permitted to speak for thy self. Then Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himself:

2 I think my self happy, king Agrippa, because I shall answer for my self this day before thee, touching all the things whereof I am accused of the Jews:

3 Especially, because I know thee to be expert in all customs and questions which are among the Jews: wherefore I beseech thee to hear me patiently.

4 My manner of life from my youth, which was at the first among mine own nation at Jerusalem, know all the Jews,

5 Which knew me from the beginning, (if they would testifie) that after the most straitest sect of our religion, I lived a Pharisee.

6 And now I stand, and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God unto our fathers:

7 Unto which *promise* our twelve tribes instantly serving *God* day and night, hope to come: for which hopes sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews.

8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead?

9 I verily thought with my self, that I ought to do many things contrary to the name of Jesus of Nazareth.

10 * Which thing also I did in Jerusalem: and many of the saints did I shut up in prison, having received authority from the chief priests; and when they were put to death, I gave my voice against *them*.

11 And I punished them oft in every synagogue, and compelled *them* to blaspheme; and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted *them* even unto strange cities.

12 * Whereupon as I went to Damascus, with authority and commission from the chief priests;

13 At midday, O king, I saw in the way a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me, and them which journeyed with me.

14 And when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? *It is* hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

15 And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest.

16 But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee:

17 Delivering thee from the people, and *from* the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee,

18 To open their eyes, and to turn *them* from darkness to light, and *from* the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

19 Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not disobedient unto the heavenly vision:

20 But shewed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Judea, and *then* to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance.

21 For these causes the Jews caught me in the temple, and went about to kill *me*.

22 Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things then those which the prophets and Moses did say should come:

23 That Christ should suffer, *and* that he should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as he thus spake for himself, Festus said with a loud voice, Paul, thou art beside thy self: much learning doth make thee mad.

25 But he said, I am not mad, most noble Festus; but speak forth the words of truth and soberness.

26 For the king knoweth of these things, before whom I also speak freely: for I am perswaded that none of these things are hidden from him; for this thing was not done in a corner.

27 King Agrippa, believest thou the prophets? I know that thou believest.

28 Then Agrippa said unto Paul, Almost thou perswadest me to be a Christian.

29 And Paul said, I would to God, that not onely thou, but also all that hear me this day, were both almost, and altogether such as I am, except these bonds.

30 And when he had thus spoken, the king rose up, and the governour, and Bernice, and they that sat with them.

31 And when they were gone aside, they talked between themselves, saying, This man doeth nothing worthy of death, or of bonds.

32 Then said Agrippa unto Festus, This man might have been set at liberty, if he had not appealed unto Cesar.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Paul shipping toward Rome, 10 foretelleth of the danger of the voyage, 11 but is not believed. 14 They are tossed to and fro with tempest, 41 and suffer shipwrack; 22, 34, 44 yet all come safe to land.

AND when it was determined that we should sail into Italy, they delivered Paul and certain other prisoners, unto one named Julius, a centurion of Augustus band.

2 And entring into a ship of Adramyttium, we launched, meaning to sail by the coasts of Asia, one Aristarchus a Macedonian, of Thessalonica, being with us.

3 And the next *day* we touched at Sidon. And Julius courteously entreated Paul, and gave *him* liberty to go unto his friends to refresh himself.

4 And when we had launched from thence, we sailed under Cyprus, because the winds were contrary.

5 And when we had sailed over the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Myra *a city* of Lycia.

6 And there the centurion found a ship of Alexandria sailing into Italy; and he put us therein.

7 And when we had sailed slowly many days, and scarce were come over against Cnidus, the wind not suffering us, we sailed under ‡ Crete, over against Salmone:

‡ Or, *Candia.*

8 And hardly passing it, came unto a place which is called, The fair havens, nigh whereunto was the city *of* Lasea.

9 Now

9 Now when much time was ſpent, and when ſailing was now dangerous, becauſe the faſt was now already paſt, Paul admoniſhed *them*,

10 And ſaid unto them, Sirs, I perceive that this voyage will be with ‡ hurt and much damage, not onely of the lading and ſhip, but alſo of our lives.

‡ Or, injury.

11 Nevertheleſs, the centurion believed the maſter and the owner of the ſhip, more then thoſe things which were ſpoken by Paul.

12 And becauſe the haven was not commodious to winter in, the more part adviſed to depart thence alſo, if by any means they might attain to Phenice, *and there* to winter; which is an haven of Crete, and lieth toward the ſouth-weſt, and north-weſt.

13 And when the ſouth-wind blew ſoftly, ſuppoſing that they had obtained *their* purpoſe, looſing *thence*, they ſailed cloſe by Crete.

14 But not long after there ‡ aroſe againſt it a tempeſtuous wind, called Euroclydon.

‡ Or, beat.

15 And when the ſhip was caught, and could not bear up into the wind, we let *her* drive.

16 And running under a certain iſland which is called Clauda, we had much work to come by the boat:

17 Which when they had taken up, they uſed helps, undergirding the ſhip; and fearing leſt they ſhould fall into the quick-ſands, ſtrake ſail, and ſo were driven.

18 And we being exceedingly toſſed with a tempeſt, the next *day* they lightned the ſhip.

19 And the third *day* we caſt out with our own hands the tackling of the ſhip.

20 And when neither ſun nor ſtars in many days appeared, and no ſmall tempeſt lay on *us*, all hope that we ſhould be ſaved, was then taken away.

21 But after long abſtinence, Paul ſtood forth in the midſt of them, and ſaid, Sirs, ye ſhould have hearkened unto me, and not have looſed from Crete, and to have gained this harm and loſs.

22 And now I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there ſhall be no loſs of *any mans* life among you, but of the ſhip.

23 For there ſtood by me this night the angel of God, whoſe I am, and whom I ſerve,

24 Saying, Fear not, Paul; thou muſt be brought before Ceſar: and lo, God hath given thee all them that ſail with thee.

25 Wherefore, Sirs, be of good cheer: for I believe God, that it ſhall be even as it was told me.

26 Howbeit we muſt be caſt upon a certain iſland.

27 But when the fourteenth night was come, as we were driven up and down in Adria about midnight, the ſhipmen deemed that they drew near to ſome country;

28 And ſounded, and found it twenty fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they ſounded again, and found it fifteen fathoms.

29 Then fearing leſt they ſhould have fallen upon rocks, they caſt four anchors out of the ſtern, and wiſhed for the day.

30 And as the ſhipmen were about to flee out of the ſhip, when they had let down the boat into the ſea, under colour as though they would have caſt anchors out of the foreſhip,

31 Paul ſaid to the centurion, and to the ſouldiers, Except theſe abide in the ſhip, ye cannot be ſaved.

32 Then the ſouldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let her fall off.

33 And while the day was coming on, Paul beſought them all to take meat, ſaying, This day is the fourteenth day that ye have tarried, and continued faſting, having taken nothing.

34 Wherefore I pray you to take *ſome* meat; for this is for your health: for there ſhall not an hair fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when he had thus ſpoken, he took bread, and gave thanks to God in preſence of them all, and when he had broken *it*, he began to eat.

36 Then were they all of good cheer, and they alſo took *ſome* meat.

37 And we were in all in the ſhip, two hundred threeſcore and ſixteen ſouls.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the ſhip, & caſt out the wheat into the ſea.

39 And when it was day, they knew not the land: but they diſcovered a certain creek with a ſhore, into the which they were minded, if it were poſſible, to thruſt in the ſhip.

40 And when they had ‡ taken up the anchors, they committed *themſelves* unto the ſea, and looſed the rudder-bands, and hoiſed up the main ſail to the wind, and made toward ſhore.

‡ Or, caſt the anchors, they left them in the ſea, &c.

41 And falling into a place where two ſeas met, they ran the ſhip aground; and the fore-part ſtuck faſt, and remained unmoveable, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the waves.

42 And the ſouldiers counſel was to kill the priſoners, leſt any of them ſhould ſwim out, and eſcape.

43 But the centurion, willing to ſave Paul, kept them from *their* purpoſe, and commanded that they which could ſwim, ſhould caſt *themſelves* firſt into the ſea, and get to land:

44 And the reſt, ſome on boards, and ſome on *broken pieces* of the ſhip: and ſo it came to paſs that they eſcaped all ſafe to land.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 Paul after his ſhipwrack is kindly entertained of the barbarians. 5 The viper on his hand harteth him not. 8 He healeth many diſeaſes in the iſland. 11 They depart towards Rome. 17 He declareth to the Jews the cauſe of his coming. 24 After his preaching ſome were perſwaded, and ſome believed not. 30 Yet he preacheth there two years.

AND when they were eſcaped, then they knew that the iſland was called Melita.

2 And the barbarous people ſhewed us no little kindneſs: for they kindled a fire, and received us every one becauſe of the preſent rain, and becauſe of the cold.

3 And when Paul had gathered a bundle of ſticks, and laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, and faſtened on his hand.

4 And when the barbarians ſaw the venemous beaſt hang on his hand, they ſaid among themſelves, No doubt this man is a murderer, whom though he hath eſcaped the ſea, yet vengeance ſuffereth not to live.

5 And he ſhook off the beaſt into the fire, and felt no harm.

6 Howbeit they looked when he ſhould have ſwollen, or fallen down dead ſuddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and ſaw no harm come to him, they changed their minds, and ſaid that he was a god.

7 In the ſame quarters were poſſeſſions of the chief man of the iſland, whoſe name was Publius, who received us and lodged us three days courteouſly.

8 And it came to paſs that the father of Publius lay ſick of a fever, and of a bloudy flux: to whom Paul entred in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him.

9 So when this was done, others alſo which had diſeaſes in the iſland came, & were healed:

10 Who

Paul Suffers Shipwracke . Acts. 27.

41. And falling into a place where two Seas met, they ran the
Ship aground, and ye fore part stuck fast &c: 43 But ye Centurion
Commanded ye they which could swim &c: Chap: 28, And when they were
escaped &c: 2 And ye Barbarous people shewed us no little kindnes &c

S. PAUL

For I am the least of the Apostles, that am not meet to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted the Church of God. 1. Cor. 15. 9.

10 Who also honoured us with many honours, and when we departed, they laded *us* with such things as were necessary.

11 And after three moneths we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the isle, whose sign was Castor and Pollux.

12 And landing at Syracuse, we tarried *there* three days.

13 And from thence we fet a compass, and came to Rhegium: and after one day the south-wind blew, and we came the next day to Puteoli:

14 Where we found brethren, and were desired to tarry with them seven days: and so we went toward Rome.

15 And from thence, when the brethren heard of us, they came to meet us as far as Appii-forum, and the Three taverns: whom when Paul saw, he thanked God, and took courage.

16 And when we came to Rome, the centurion delivered the prisoners to the captain of the guard: but Paul was suffered to dwell by himself, with a souldier that kept him.

17 And it came to pass that after three days, Paul called the chief of the Jews together. And when they were come together, he said unto them, Men *and* brethren, though I have committed nothing against the people or customs of our fathers, yet was I delivered prisoner from Jerusalem into the hands of the Romans.

18 Who when they had examined me, would have let *me* go, because there was no cause of death in me.

19 But when the Jews spake against *it*, I was constrained to appeal unto Cesar; not that I had ought to accuse my nation of.

20 For this cause therefore have I called for you, to see *you*, and to speak with *you*: because that for the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain.

21 And they said unto him, We neither received letters out of Judea concerning thee, neither any of the brethren that came, shewed or spake any harm of thee.

22 But we desire to hear of thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect, we know that every where it is spoken against.

23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into his lodging; to whom he expounded and testified the kingdom of God, perswading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and *out of* the prophets, from morning till evening.

24 And some believed the things which were spoken, and some believed not.

25 And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spake the holy Ghost, by Esaias the prophet, unto our fathers,

26 Saying, * Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive. * Isa. 6. 9. Matth. 13. 14. Mar. 4. 12. Luk. 8. 10. Joh. 12. 40. Rom. 11. 8.

27 For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and understand with *their* heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

28 Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and *that* they will hear it.

29 And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

30 And Paul dwelt two whole years in his own hired house, and received all that came in unto him,

31 Preaching the kingdom of God, & teaching those things ẅ concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

¶ The epistle of Paul the apostle, to the ROMANS.

CHAP. I.

1 *Paul commendeth his calling to the Romans,* 9 *and his desire to come to them.* 16 *What his gospel is, and the righteousness which it sheweth.* 18 *God is angry with all manner of sin.* 21 *What were the sins of the Gentiles.*

PAul a servant of Jesus Christ, called *to be* an apostle, * separated unto the gospel of God, * Acts 13. 2.

2 (Which he had promised afore by his prophets in the holy scriptures)

3 Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh,

4 And † declared *to be* the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead: † Gr. determined

5 By whom we have received grace and apostleship ‡ for obedience to the faith among all nations for his name: ‡ Or, to the obedience of faith.

6 Among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ.

7 To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called *to be* saints: Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

8 First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.

9 For God is my witness, whom I serve ‡ with my spirit in the gospel of his Son, that without ceasing I make mention of you always in my prayers, ‡ Or, in my spirit.

10 Making request (if by any means now at length I might have a prosperous journey by the will of God) to come unto you.

11 For I long to see you, that I may impart unto you some spiritual gift, to the end you may be established;

12 That is, that I may be comforted together ‡ with you, by the mutual faith both of you and me. ‡ Or, in you.

13 Now I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that oftentimes I purposed to come unto you (but was let hitherto) that I might have some fruit ‡ among you also, even as among other Gentiles. ‡ Or, in you.

14 I am debtour both to the Greeks, and to the barbarians, both to the wise, and to the unwise.

15 So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also.

16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

17 For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, * The just shall live by faith. * Hab. 2. 4. Gal. 3. 11. Heb. 10. 38.

18 For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness.

19 Because that which may be known of God is manifest ‡ in them; for God hath shewed *it* unto them. ‡ Or, to them.

20 For

20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, *even* his eternal power and godhead; ‡ so that they are without excuse:

‡ Or, *that they may be.*

21 Because that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful, but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was * darkened.

* Ephes. 4. 18.

21 Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools:

23 And changed the glory of the uncorruptible * God, into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things.

* Psal. 106. 20.

24 Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness, through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves:

25 Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more then the creatour, who is blessed for ever. Amen.

26 For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature:

27 And likewise also the men leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another, men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their errour which was meet.

‡ Or, *to acknowledge.*

28 And even as they did not like ‡ to retain God in *their* knowledge, God gave them over to ‡ a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient:

‡ Or, *a mind void of judgment.*

29 Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers,

30 Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventers of evil things, disobedient to parents,

31 Without understanding, covenant-breakers, ‡ without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful:

‡ Or, *unsociable.*

32 Who knowing the judgment of God (that they which commit such things are worthy of death) not onely do the same, but ‡ have pleasure in them that do them.

‡ Or, *consent with them.*

CHAP. II.

1 They that sin, though they condemn it in others, cannot excuse themselves, 6 and much less escape the judgment of God, 9 whether they be Jews or Gentiles. 14 The Gentiles cannot escape, 17 nor yet the Jews, 25 whom their circumcision shall not profit, if they keep not the law.

THerefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest: * for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thy self; for thou that judgest, doest the same things.

* Matth. 7. 2.

2 But we are sure that the judgment of God is according to truth, against them which commit such things.

3 And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God?

4 Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness and forbearance, and long-suffering, not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But after thy hardness and impenitent heart, * treasurest up unto thy self wrath against the day of wrath, and revelation of the righteous judgment of God?

* Jam. 5. 3.

6 * Who will render to every man according to his deeds:

* Psal. 62. 12. Matth. 16. 27. Revel. 22. 12.

7 To them who by patient continuance in well-doing, seek for glory, and honour, and immortality; eternal life:

8 But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness; indignation, and wrath;

9 Tribulation and anguish upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the † Gentile.

† Gr. *Greek.*

10 But glory, honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the † Gentile.

† Gr. *Greek.*

11 For * there is no respect of persons with God.

* Deut. 10. 17. 2 Chron. 19. 7. Job 34. 19. Acts 10. 34. Gal. 2. 6. Ephes. 6. 9. Colos. 3. 25. 1 Pet. 1. 17. * Matth. 7. 21.

12 For as many as have sinned without law, shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law, shall be judged by the law,

13 (For * not the hearers of the law *are* just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.

Jam. 1. 22.

14 For when the Gentiles which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these having not the law, are a law unto themselves:

15 Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, ‡ their conscience also bearing witness, and *their* thoughts ‡ the mean while accusing, or else excusing one another)

‡ Or, *the conscience witnessing with them.*

16 In the day when God shall judge ϒ secrets of men by Jesus Christ, according to my gospel.

‡ Or, *between themselves.*

17 Behold, thou art called a Jew, and resteſt in the law, and makeſt thy boast of God;

18 And knowest *his* will, and ‡ approvest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law,

‡ Or, *triest the things that differ.*

19 And art confident that thou thy self art a guide of the blind, a light of them which are in darkness,

20 An instructer of the foolish, a teacher of babes, which hast the form of knowledge, and of the truth in the law.

21 Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest thou not thy self? thou that preachest a man should not steal, dost thou steal?

22 Thou that sayest a man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that abhorrest idols, dost thou commit sacrilege?

23 Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking ϒ law dishonourest thou God?

24 For ϒ name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles, through you, as it is * written.

* Isa. 52. 5. Ezek. 36. 20, 23.

25 For circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the law: but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision.

26 Therefore, if the uncircumcision keep the righteousness of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision?

27 And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfil the law, judge thee, who by the letter and circumcision dost transgress the law?

28 For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither *is that* circumcision, which is outward in the flesh:

29 But he *is* a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision *is that* of the heart, in the spirit, *and* not in the letter, whose praise *is* not of men, but of God.

CHAP. III.

1 The Jews prerogative: 3 which they have not lost. 9 Howbeit the law convinceth them also of sin. 20 Therefore no flesh is justified by the law, 28 but all without difference, by faith onely; 31 and yet the law is not abolished.

What

WHat advantage then hath the Jew? or what profit *is there* of circumcision?
2 Much every way: chiefly, because that unto them were committed the oracles of God.
3 For what if some did not believe? shall their unbelief make the faith of God without effect?
4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, but
Rom. 6. * every man a liar; as it is written, * That
Ps. 51. 4 thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and mightest overcome when thou art judged.
5 But if our unrighteousness commend the righteousness of God, what shall we say? *Is* God unrighteous who taketh vengeance? (I speak as a man)
6 God forbid: for then how shall God judge the world?
7 For if the truth of God hath more abounded through my lie unto his glory; why yet am I also judged as a sinner?
8 And not *rather* as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say, Let us do evil, that good may come? whose damnation is just.
9 What then? are we better *than they*? No, in no wise: for we have before † proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin;
Rom. 3. 10 As it is written, * There is none righteous, no, not one:
11 There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.
12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable, there is none that doeth good, no not one.
Rom. 3. 13 * Their throat *is* an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; * the poison of asps *is* under their lips:
Rom. 3. 14 * Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness.
Rom. 3. 15 * Their feet *are* swift to shed blood.
16 Destruction and misery *are* in their ways:
17 And the way of peace have they not known.
Rom. 3. 18 * There is no fear of God before their eyes.
19 Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become ‡ guilty before God.
20 Therefore * by the deeds of the law, there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law *is* the knowledge of sin.
21 But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets;
Rom. 3. 22 Even the righteousness of God *which is* by faith of Jesus Christ unto all, and upon all them that believe; for there is no difference:
23 For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;
24 Being justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ:
25 Whom God hath ‡ set forth *to be* a propitiation, through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the ‡ remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God:
26 To declare, *I say*, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus.
27 Where *is* boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay; but by the law of faith.
28 Therefore we conclude, that a man is justified by faith, without the deeds of the law.
29 *Is he* the God of the Jews only? *is he* not also of the Gentiles? yes, of the Gentiles also:
30 Seeing *it is* one God, which shall justify the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith.
31 Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law.

CHAP. IV.

1 *Abrahams faith was imputed to him for righteousness,* 10 *before he was circumcised.* 13 *By faith onely he and his seed received the promise.* 16 *Abraham is the father of all that believe.* 24 *Our faith also shall be imputed to us for righteousness.*

WHat shall we say then that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh, hath found?
2 For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath *whereof* to glory, but not before God.
3 For what saith the scripture? * Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness. *Gen. 15. 6 Gal. 3. 6. Jam. 2. 23.
4 Now to him that worketh, is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.
5 But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.
6 Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works,
7 *Saying*, * Blessed *are* they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. * Psal. 32. 1.
8 Blessed *is* the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.
9 *Cometh* this blessedness then upon the circumcision *only*, or upon the uncircumcision also? For we say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness.
10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision? not in circumcision, but in uncircumcision.
11 And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith, which *he had yet* being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed to them also:
12 And the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which *he had* being *yet* uncircumcised.
13 For the promise that he should be the heir of the world, *was* not to Abraham, or to his seed through the law, but through the righteousness of faith.
14 For if they which are of the law *be* heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect.
15 Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, *there is* no transgression.
16 Therefore *it is* of faith, that *it might be* by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed, not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all,
17 (As it is written, * I have made thee a father of many nations, ‡ before him whom he believed, *even* God who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were: * Gen. 17. 5. ‡ Or, like unto him.
18 Who against hope believed in hope, that he might become the father of many nations; according to that which was spoken, * So shall thy seed be. * Gen. 15. 5.
19 And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred year old, neither yet the deadness of Sara's womb.
20 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God:
21 And

21 And being fully perſwaded, that what he had promiſed, he was able alſo to perform.
22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteouſneſs.
23 Now it was not written for his ſake alone, that it was imputed to him;
24 But for us alſo, to whom it ſhall be imputed, if we believe on him that raiſed up Jeſus our Lord from the dead,
25 Who was delivered for our offences, and was raiſed again for our juſtification.

CHAP. V.

1 Being juſtified by faith, we have peace with God, 2 and joy in our hope; 8 that ſith we were reconciled by his bloud, when we were enemies, 10 we ſhall much more be ſaved being reconciled 12 As ſin and death came by Adam, 17 ſo much more righteouſneſs and life by Jeſus Chriſt. 20 Where ſin abounded, grace did ſuperabound.

THerefore being juſtified by faith, we have peace with God, through our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
* Epheſ. 2. 18. 2 * By whom alſo we have acceſs by faith into this grace wherein we ſtand, and rejoyce in hope of the glory of God.
3 And not onely ſo, but we glory in tribulations alſo, * knowing that tribulation worketh patience;
* Jam. 1. 3. 4 And patience, experience; and experience, hope:
5 And hope maketh not aſhamed, becauſe the love of God is ſhed abroad in our hearts, by the holy Ghoſt which is given unto us.
6 For when we were yet without ſtrength, ‡ in due time Chriſt died for the ungodly.
‡ Or, *according to the time.* 7 For ſcarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man ſome would even dare to die.
8 But God commendeth his love towards us, in that while we were yet ſinners, Chriſt died for us.
9 Much more then being now juſtified by his bloud, we ſhall be ſaved from wrath through him.
10 For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son: much more being reconciled, we ſhall be ſaved by his life.
11 And not onely ſo, but we alſo joy in God, through our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, by whom we have now received the atonement.
‡ Or, *in whom.* 12 Wherefore as by one man ſin entred into the world, and death by ſin; and ſo death paſſed upon all men, ‡ for that all have ſinned.
13 For until the law ſin was in the world: but ſin is not imputed when there is no law.
14 Nevertheleſs death reigned from Adam to Moſes, even over them that had not ſinned after the ſimilitude of Adams tranſgreſſion, who is the figure of him that was to come:
15 But not as the offence, ſo alſo *is* the free gift. For if through the offence of one, many be dead; much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, *which is* by one man, Jeſus Chriſt, hath abounded unto many.
16 And not as *it was* by one that ſinned, *ſo is* the gift: for the judgment *was* by one to condemnation; but the free gift *is* of many offences unto juſtification.
‡ Or, *by one offence.* 17 For if ‡ by one mans offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace, and of the gift of righteouſneſs, ſhall reign in life by one, Jeſus Chriſt.
‡ Or, *by one offence.* 18 Therefore as ‡ by the offence of one, *judgment came* upon all men to condemnation: even ſo ‡ by the righteouſneſs of one, *the free gift came* upon all men unto juſtification of life.
‡ Or, *by one righteouſneſs.* 19 For as by one mans diſobedience many were made ſinners: ſo by the obedience of one, ſhall many be made righteous.
20 Moreover, the law entred, that the offence might abound: But where ſin abounded, grace did much more abound:
21 That as ſin hath reigned unto death, even ſo might grace reign through righteouſneſs unto eternal life, by Jeſus Chriſt our Lord.

CHAP. VI.

1 We may not live in ſin, 2 for we are dead unto it, 3 as appeareth by our baptiſm. 12 Let not ſin reign any more, 18 becauſe we have yielded our ſelves to the ſervice of righteouſneſs, 23 and for that death is the wages of ſin.

WHat ſhall we ſay then? Shall we continue in ſin, that grace may abound?
2 God forbid: how ſhall we that are dead to ſin, live any longer therein?
* Gal. 2. 27. ‡ Or, *are* * Col. 2. 12. 3 Know ye not that * ſo many of us as ‡ were baptized into Jeſus Chriſt, were baptized into his death?
4 Therefore we are * buried with him by baptiſm into death: that like as Chriſt was raiſed up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even ſo we alſo ſhould walk in newneſs of life.
5 For if we have been planted together in the likeneſs of his death, we ſhall be alſo *in the likeneſs of his* reſurrection:
6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with *him*, that the body of ſin might be deſtroyed, that henceforth we ſhould not ſerve ſin.
† Gr. *juſtified.* 7 For he that is dead, is † freed from ſin.
8 Now if we be dead with Chriſt, we believe that we ſhall alſo live with him:
9 Knowing that Chriſt being raiſed from the dead, dieth no more: death hath no more dominion over him.
10 For in that he died, he died unto ſin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.
11 Likewiſe reckon ye alſo your ſelves to be dead indeed unto ſin; but alive unto God through Jeſus Chriſt our Lord.
12 Let not ſin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye ſhould obey it in the luſts thereof.
† Gr. *arms, or weapons.* 13 Neither yield ye your members *as* † inſtruments of unrighteouſneſs unto ſin: but yield your ſelves unto God, as thoſe that are alive from the dead; and your members *as* inſtruments of righteouſneſs unto God.
14 For ſin ſhall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.
15 What then? ſhall we ſin, becauſe we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.
* John 8. 34. 2 Pet. 2. 19 16 Know ye not, that * to whom ye yield your ſelves ſervants to obey, his ſervants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of ſin unto death, or of obedience unto righteouſneſs?
† Gr. *whereto ye were delivered.* 17 But God be thanked, that ye were the ſervants of ſin; but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine † which was delivered you.
18 Being then made free from ſin, ye became the ſervants of righteouſneſs.
19 I ſpeak after the manner of men, becauſe of the infirmity of your fleſh: for as ye have yielded your members ſervants to uncleanneſs and to iniquity, unto iniquity; even ſo now yield your members ſervants to righteouſneſs, unto holineſs.
† Gr. *to righteouſneſs.* 20 For when ye were the ſervants of ſin, ye were free † from righteouſneſs.
21 What fruit had ye then in thoſe things, whereof ye are now aſhamed? for the end of thoſe things *is* death.
22 But now being made free from ſin, and become

come servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

23 For the wages of sin *is* death: but the gift of God *is* eternal life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP. VII.

1 No law hath power over a man longer then he liveth. 4 But we are dead to the law. 7 Yet is not the law sin, 12 but holy, just, good: 16 as I acknowledge who am grieved because I cannot keep it.

KNow ye not brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law) how that the law hath dominion over a man, as long as he liveth?

2 For * the woman which hath an husband, is bound by the law to *her* husband so long as he liveth: but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of *her* husband.

3 So then if while *her* husband liveth she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man.

4 Wherefore my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, *even* to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.

5 For when we were in the flesh, the †motions of sins which were by the law, did work in our members, to bring forth fruit unto death.

6 But now we are delivered from the law, ‡ that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not *in* the oldness of the letter.

7 What shall we say then? *is* the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known ‡ lust, except the law had said, * Thou shalt not covet.

8 But sin taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin *was* dead.

9 For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died.

10 And the commandment which *was ordained* to life, I found *to be* unto death.

11 For sin taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me.

12 Wherefore the law *is* holy; and the commandment holy, and just, and good.

13 Was then that which is good, made death unto me? God forbid. But sin that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful.

14 For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin.

15 For that which I do, I † allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I.

16 If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law, that *it is* good.

17 Now then, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

18 For I know, that in me (that is, in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me, but *how* to perform that which is good, I find not.

19 For the good that I would, I do not: but the evil which I would not, that, I do.

20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

21 I find then a law, that when I would do good, evil is present with me.

22 For I delight in the law of God, after the inward man.

23 But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin, which is in my members.

24 O wretched man that I am, who shall deliver me from ‡ the body of this death?

25 I thank God, through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then, with the mind I my self serve the law of God; but with the flesh, the law of sin.

‡ Or, *this body of death.*

CHAP. VIII.

1 They that are in Christ, and live according to the Spirit, are free from condemnation. 5, 13 What harm cometh of the flesh, 6, 14 and what good of the Spirit, 17 and what of being Gods children: 19 whose glorious deliverance all things long for. 29 It was beforehand decreed from God. 38 What can sever us from his love?

THere *is* therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

2 For the law of the Spirit of life, in Christ Jesus, hath made me free from the law of sin and death.

3 For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son, in the likeness of sinful flesh, and ‡ for sin condemned sin in the flesh:

4 That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

5 For they that are after the flesh, do mind the things of the flesh: but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.

6 For † to be carnally minded, *is* death; but † to be spiritually minded, *is* life and peace.

7 Because † the carnal man *is* enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

8 So then they that are in the flesh, cannot please God.

9 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

10 And if Christ *be* in you, the body *is* dead because of sin; but the Spirit *is* life, because of righteousness.

11 But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead, dwell in you; he that raised up Christ from the dead, shall also quicken your mortal bodies, ‡ by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

12 Therefore brethren, we are debters, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh.

13 For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortifie the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

15 For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the * Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

16 The Spirit it self beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God.

17 And if children, then heirs: heirs of God, and joynt-heirs with Christ: if so be that we suffer with *him*, that we may be also glorified together.

18 For I reckon, that the sufferings of this present time, *are* not worthy *to be compared* with the glory which shall be revealed in us.

19 For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God.

20 For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected *the same* in hope

‡ Or, *by a sacrifice for sin.*

† Gr. *the minding of the flesh.*

† Gr. *the minding of the Spirit.*

† Gr. *the minding of the flesh.*

‡ Or, *because of his Spirit.*

* Gal. 4. 6.

21 Because the creature it self also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption, into the glorious liberty of the children of God.

‡ Or, every creature. 22 For we know that ‡ the whole creation groneth, and travaileth in pain together, until now:

23 And not only they, but our selves also which have the first-fruits of the Spirit, even we our selves grone within our selves, waiting for the adoption, *to wit*, the * redemption of our bodys.

* Luke 21. 28.

24 For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for?

25 But if we hope for that we see not, *then* do we with patience wait for it.

26 Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit it self maketh intercession for us with gronings which cannot be uttered.

‡ Or, *that.* 27 And he that searcheth the hearts, knoweth what *is* the mind of the Spirit, ‡ because he maketh intercession for the saints, according to *the will of* God.

28 And we know that all things work together for good, to them that love God, to them who are the called according to *his* purpose.

29 For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate *to be* conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the first-born among many brethren.

30 Moreover, whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

31 What shall we then say to these things? If God *be* for us, who *can be* against us?

32 He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods elect? *It is* God that justifieth:

34 Who *is* he that condemneth? *it is* Christ that died, yea, rather that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

35 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? *shall* tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword?

* Psal. 44. 22. 36 (As it is written, * For *thy* sake we are killed all the day long: we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter)

37 Nay, in all these things we are more then conquerers, through him that loved us.

38 For I am perswaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come,

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

CHAP. IX.

1 S. *Paul is sorry for the Jews.* 7 *All the seed of Abraham were not the children of the promise.* 18 *God hath mercy upon whom he will.* 21 *The potter may do with his clay what he list.* 25 *The calling of the Gentiles, and rejecting of the Jews were foretold.* 32 *The cause why so few Jews embraced the righteousness of faith.*

I Say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the holy Ghost,

2 That I have great heaviness, and continual sorrow in my heart.

Or, *separated.* 3 For I could wish that my self were ‡ accursed from Christ, for my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh:

4 Who are Israelites; to whom *pertaineth* the adoption, and the glory, and the ‡ covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service *of God*, and the promises;

‡ Or, *testaments.*

5 Whose *are* the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ *came*, who is over all, God blessed for ever. Amen.

6 Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they *are* not all Israel, which are of Israel:

7 Neither because they are the seed of Abraham, *are they* all children: but in * Isaac shall thy seed be called.

* Gen. 21. 12.

8 That is, they which are the children of the flesh these *are* not the children of God: but *the children of the promise are counted for the seed.

* Gal. 4. 28.

9 For this *is* the word of promise, * At this time will I come, and Sara shall have a son.

* Gen. 18. 10.

10 And not only *this*, but when Rebecca also had conceived by one, *even* by our father Isaac.

11 (For *the children* being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God, according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth.)

12 It was said unto her, the * ‡ elder shall serve the ‡ younger.

* Gen. 25. 23. ‡ Or, *greater.*

13 As it is written, * Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.

‡ Or, *lesser.*

14 What shall we say then? *Is there* unrighteousness with God? God forbid.

15 For he saith to Moses * I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and *I* will have compassion on whom *I* will have compassion.

* Mal. 1. 2, 3.

16 So then *it is* not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy.

* Exod. 33. 19.

17 For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, * Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, & that my name might be declared throughout all the earth.

* Exod. 9. 16.

18 Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will *have mercy*, and whom he will he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet find fault? for who hath resisted his will?

20 ¶ Nay but, O man, who art thou that ‡ repliest against God? * shall the thing formed say to him that formed *it*, Why hast thou made me thus.

‡ Or, *answerest again*, or *disputest with God.*

21 Hath not the * potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour.

* Isa. 45. 9. * Jer. 18. 6. Wisd. 15. 7.

22 *What* if God, willing to shew *his* wrath, and to make his power known endured with much long-suffering the vessels of wrath ‡ fitted to destruction:

‡ Or, *made up.*

23 And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory;

24 Even us whom he hath called, not of the Jews onely but also of the Gentiles.

25 As he saith also in Osee, * I will call them my people, which were not my people; and her beloved, which was not beloved.

* Hos. 2. 23. 1 Pet. 2. 10.

26 * And it shall come to pass, *that* in the place where it was said unto them. Ye *are* not my people; there shall they be called the children of the living God.

* Hos. 1. 10.

27 Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, * Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved.

* Isa. 10. 22, 23.

28 For he will finish ‡ the work, and cut *it* short in righteousness: because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth.

‡ Or, *the account.*

29 And

29 And as Esaias said before, * Except the Lord of sabaoth had left us a seed, we had been as Sodoma, and been made like unto Gomorrha.

30 ¶ What shall we say then? That the Gentiles which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith:

31 But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness.

32 Wherefore? Because *they sought it*, not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law: for they stumbled at that stumbling-stone;

33 As it is written, * Behold, I lay in Sion a stumbling-stone, and rock of offence: and whosoever believeth on him, shall not be ‡ ashamed.

CHAP. X.

5 *The scripture sheweth the difference betwixt the righteousness of the law, and this of faith,* 11 *and that all, both Jew and Gentile, that believe, shall not be confounded,* 18 *and that the Gentiles shall receive the word, and believe.* 19 *Israel was not ignorant of these things.*

BRethren, my hearts desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved.

2 For I bear them record, that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they, being ignorant of Gods righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God.

4 For Christ *is* the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.

5 For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, * that the man which doeth those things shall live by them.

6 But the righteousness which is of faith, speaketh on this wise, * Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is to bring Christ down *from above*.)

7 Or who shall ascend into the deep? (that is to bring up Christ again from the dead.)

8 But what saith it? * The word is nigh thee, *even* in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is the word of faith which we preach,

9 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart, that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

10 For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

11 For the scripture saith, * Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.

12 For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all, is rich unto all that call upon him.

13 * For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord, shall be saved.

14 How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?

15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, * How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

16 But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, * Lord, who hath believed † our ‡ report?

17 So then, faith *cometh* by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

18 But I say, Have they heard? Yes verily, * their sound went out into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the world.

19 But I say, Did not Israel know? First, Moses saith, * I will provoke you to jealousie by *them that are* no people, *and* by a foolish nation I will anger you.

20 But Esaias is very bold, and saith, * I was found of them that sought me not; I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me.

21 But to Israel he saith, * All day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people.

CHAP. XI.

1 *God hath not cast off all Israel.* 7 *Some were elected, though the rest were hardened.* 16 *There is hope of their conversion.* 18. *The Gentiles may not insult upon them,* 26 *for there is a promise of their salvation.* 33 *Gods judgments are unsearchable.*

I Say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew. Wot ye not what the scripture saith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying,

3 * Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and digged down thine altars; and I am left alone, and they seek my life.

4 But what saith the answer of God unto him? * I have reserved to my self seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to *the image of* Baal.

5 Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.

6 And if by grace, then *is it* no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if *it be* of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were ‡ blinded:

8 According as it is written, * God hath given them the spirit of ‡ slumber, * eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear, unto this day.

9 And David saith, * Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumbling block, and a recompense unto them.

10 * Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow down their back alway.

11 ¶ I say then, Have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid: but *rather* through their fall salvation *is come* unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealousie.

12 Now if the fall of them *be* the riches of the world, and the ‡ diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles: how much more their fulness?

13 For I speak to you Gentiles, in as much as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office:

14 If by any means I may provoke to emulation *them which are* my flesh, and might save some of them.

15 For if the casting away of them *be* the reconciling of the world; what *shall* the receiving *of them be*, but life from the dead?

16 For if the first-fruit *be* holy, the lump *is* also *holy*: and if the root *be* holy, so *are* the branches.

17 And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou being a wild olive-tree, wert graffed in ‡ amongst them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive-tree;

18 Boast not against the branches: but if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.

19 Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be graffed in.

‡ Or, *hardened.*

‡ Or, *remorse.*

‡ Or, *decay*, or, *loss.*

‡ Or, *for them.*

20 Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not high-minded, but fear.

21 For if God spared not the natural branches, *take heed* lest he also spare not thee.

22 Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but towards thee goodness, if thou continue in *his* goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.

23 And they also, if they bide not still in unbelief, shall be graffed in: for God is able to graff them in again.

24 For if thou wert cut out of the olive-tree which is wild by nature, and wert graffed contrary to nature into a good olive-tree; how much more shall these which be the natural *branches*, be graffed into their own olive-tree?

25 For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery (lest ye should be wise in your own conceits) that ‡ blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in.

‡ Or, *hardness.*

26 And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, * There shall come out of Sion the deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob.

* Isa. 59. 20.

27 For this *is* my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins.

28 As concerning the gospel, *they are* enemies for your sake: but as touching the election, *they are* beloved for the fathers sakes.

29 For the gifts and calling of God *are* without repentance.

‡ Or, *obeyed.*

30 For as ye in times past have not ‡ believed God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief:

‡ Or, *obeyed.*

31 Even so have these also now not ‡ believed, that through your mercy they also may obtain mercy.

‡ Or, *shut them all up together.*

32 For God hath ‡ concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all.

33 O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable *are* his judgments, and his ways past finding out!

* Isa. 40. 13. Wisd. 9. 13. 1 Cor. 2. 16.

34 * For who hath known the mind of the Lord, or who hath been his counseller?

35 Or who hath first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again?

36 For of him, and through him, and to him *are* all things: to whom *be* glory for ever. Amen.

CHAP. XII.

1 *Gods mercies must move us to please God.* 3 *No man must think too well of himself,* 6 *but attend every one on that calling wherein he is placed.* 9 *Love, and many other duties are required of us.* 19 *Revenge is specially forbidden.*

I Beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, *which is* your reasonable service.

2 And be not conformed to this world: but * be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may * prove what *is* that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.

* Eph. 4. 23. * Eph. 5. 17.

3 For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think *of himself* more highly then he ought to think; but to think † soberly, according as God hath dealt * to every man the measure of faith.

† Gr. *to sobriety.*

4 For * as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office:

* Eph. 4. 7. * 1 Cor. 12. 12.

5 So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.

6 * Having then gifts, differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophesie, *let us prophesie* according to the proportion of faith:

* 1 Pet. 4. 10. 11.

7 Or ministery, *let us wait*, on our ministring; or he that teacheth, on teaching;

8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that ‡ giveth, *let him do it* ‡ with simplicity; he that ruleth, with diligence; he that sheweth mercy, with cheerfulness.

‡ Or, *imparteth.* ‡ Or, *liberally.*

9 *Let* love *be* without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil, cleave to that which is good.

10 * *Be* kindly affectioned one to another, ‡ with brotherly love, in honour preferring one another:

* Heb. 13. 1. ‡ Or, *in the love of the brethren.*

11 Not slothful in business: fervent in spirit; ‡ serving the Lord:

12 Rejoycing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer:

13 Distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality.

* Matth. 5. 44.

14 * Bless them which persecute you: bless, and curse not.

‡ Or, *be consented with mean things.*

15 Rejoyce with them that do rejoyce, and weep with them that weep.

16 *Be* of the same mind one towards another. Mind not high things, but ‡ condescend to men of low estate. * Be not wise in your own conceits.

* Prov. 3. 7. Isa. 5. 21.

17 * Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men.

* Prov. 20. 22.

18 If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live * peaceably with all men.

1 Thes. 5. 15.

19 Dearly beloved, avenge not your selves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, * Vengeance *is* mine, I will repay it, saith the Lord.

1 Pet. 3. 9. * Heb. 12. 14. * Deut. 32. 35. Heb. 10. 30.

20 * Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head.

* Prov. 25. 21.

21 Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *Subjection, and many other duties we owe to the magistrates.* 8 *Love is the fulfilling of the law.* 11 *Gluttony and drunkenness, and the works of darkness are out of season in the time of the gospel.*

LEt every soul * be subject unto the higher powers: for * there is no power but of God: the powers that be, are ‡ ordained of God.

* Tit. 3. 1. 1 Pet. 2. 13.

2 Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist, shall receive to themselves damnation.

* Wisd. 6. 3. ‡ Or, *ordered.*

3 For rulers are not a terrour to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same:

4 For he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to *execute* wrath upon him that doeth evil.

5 Wherefore *ye* must needs be subject, not onely for wrath, but also for conscience sake.

6 For, for this cause pay you tribute also: for they are Gods ministers, attending continually upon this very thing.

7 * Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute *is due*, custom to whom custom, fear to whom fear, honour to whom honour.

* Matth. 22. 21.

8 Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another, hath fulfilled the law.

9 For this, * Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not covet; and if *there be* any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, * Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

* Exod. 20. Deut. 5. * Lev. 19. 18. Matth. 22. 39.

10 Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore love *is* the fulfilling of the law.

Gal. 5. 14. James 2. 8

11 And that knowing the time, that now *it is* high time for us to awake out of sleep: for now *is* our

our *salvation* nearer then when we believed.

12 The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.

‡ Or, *honestly.*

13 Let us walk ‡ honestly as in the day; * not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying. * Luk. 21. 34.

14 But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and * make not provision for the flesh, to *fulfill* the lusts *thereof.* * Gal. 5. 16. Pet. 2. 11.

CHAP. XIV.

3 Men may not contemn nor condemn one the other for things indifferent, 13 but take heed that they give no offence in them: 15 for that the apostle proveth unlawful by many reasons.

HIm that is weak in the faith receive you, *but* ‡ not to doubtful disputations.

‡ Or, *not to judge of doubtful thoughts.*

2 For one believeth that he may eat all things: another who is weak, eateth herbs.

3 Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not; and let not him which eateth not, judge him that eateth: for God hath received him.

4 * Who art thou that judgest another mans servant? to his own master he standeth or falleth: yea, he shall be holden up: for God is able to make him stand. * Jam. 4. 12.

5 One man esteemeth one day above another: another esteemeth every day *alike.* Let every man be ‡ fully perswaded in his own mind.

‡ Or, *by assurance.*

6 He that ‡ regardeth the day, regardeth *it* unto the Lord; and he that regardeth not the day, to the Lord he doth not regard *it.* He that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for he giveth God thanks; and he that eateth not, to the Lord he eateth not, and giveth God thanks. ‡ Or, *observeth.*

7 For none of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself.

8 For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore or die, we are the Lords.

9 For to this end Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living.

10 But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? for * we shall all stand before the judgment-seat of Christ. * 2 Cor. 5. 10.

11 For it is written, * *As* I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. * Isa. 45. 23. Rom. 14. 10.

12 So then every one of us shall give an account of himself to God.

13 Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumbling-block, or an occasion to fall in *his* brothers way.

14 I know, and am perswaded by the Lord Jesus, that *there is* nothing † unclean of it self: but to him that esteemeth any thing to be † unclean, to him *it is* unclean. † Or, *common.* † Or, *common.*

15 But if thy brother be grieved with *thy* meat, now walkest thou not † charitably. * Destroy not him with thy meat, for whom Christ died. † Or, *walking charitably.* * 1 Cor. 8. 11.

16 Let not then your good be evil spoken of.

17 For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the holy Ghost.

18 For he that in these things serveth Christ, *is* acceptable to God, and approved of men.

19 Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edifie another.

20 For meat destroy not the work of God. * All things indeed *are* pure; but *it is* evil for that man who eateth with offence. * Tit. 1. 15.

21 *It is* good neither to eat * flesh, nor to drink wine, nor *any thing* whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak. * 1 Cor. 8. 13.

22 Hast thou faith? have it to thy self before God. Happy *is* he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth. ‡ Or, *discerneth and putteth a difference between meats.*

23 And he that ‡ doubteth is damned if he eat, because *he eateth* not of faith: for whatsoever *is* not of faith, is sin.

CHAP. XV.

1 The strong must bear with the weak. 2 We may may not please our selves, 3 for Christ did not so; 7 but receive one the other, as Christ did us all, 8 both Jews, 9 and Gentiles. 15 Paul excuseth his writing, 28 and promiseth to see them, 30 and requesteth their prayers.

WE then that are strong, ought to bear the infirmities of the weak, and not to please our selves.

2 Let every one of us please *his* neighbour for *his* good to edification.

3 For even Christ pleased not himself; but as it is written, * The reproaches of them that reproached thee fell on me. * Psal. 69. 9.

4 For whatsoever things were written aforetime, were written for our learning; that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures migh have hope.

5 * Now the God of patience and consolation, grant you to be like-minded one towards another, ‡ according to Christ Jesus: * 1 Cor. 1. 10. ‡ Or, *after the example of.*

6 That ye may with one mind, *and* one mouth glorifie God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

7 Wherefore receive ye one another, as Christ also received us, to the glory of God.

8 Now I say, that Jesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises *made* unto the fathers:

9 And that the Gentiles might glorifie God, for *his* mercy; as it is written, * For this cause I will confess to thee among the Gentiles, and sing unto thy name. * Psal. 18. 49.

10 And again he saith, * Rejoyce, ye Gentiles, with his people. * Deut. 32. 43.

11 And again, * Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles, and laud him all ye people. * Psal. 117. 1.

12 And again, Esaias saith, * There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust. * Isa. 11. 10.

13 Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the holy Ghost.

14 And I my self also am perswaded of you, my brethren, that ye also are full of goodness, filled with all knowledge, able also to admonish one another.

15 Nevertheless, brethren, I have written the more boldly unto you, in some sort, as putting you in mind, because of the grace that is given to me of God,

16 That I should be § minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministring the gospel of God, that the ‡ offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost. ‡ Or, *sacrificing.*

17 I have therefore whereof I may glory through Jesus Christ, in those things which pertain to God.

18 For I will not dare to speak of any of those things, which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed,

19 Through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God; so that from Jerusalem, and round about unto Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.

20 Yea, so have I strived to preach the gospel,

not where Chriſt was named, leſt I ſhould build upon another mans foundation:

* Iſa. 52. 15. 21 But as it is written, *To whom he was not ſpoken of, they ſhall ſee: and they that have not heard, ſhall underſtand.

‡ Or, *many ways, or often times.* 22 For which cauſe alſo I have been ‡ much hindred from coming to you.

23 But now having no more place in theſe parts, and having a great deſire theſe many years to come unto you;

24 Whenſoever I take my journey into Spain, I will come to you: for I truſt to ſee you in my journey, and to be brought on my way thitherward *by* you, if firſt I be ſomewhat filled † with your *company.*

† Gr. *with you.* verſ. 32. 25 But now I go unto Jeruſalem, to miniſter unto the ſaints.

26 For it hath pleaſed them of Macedonia and Achaia, to make a certain contribution for the poor ſaints which are at Jeruſalem.

27 It hath pleaſed them *verily*, and their debtours they are. For * if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their ſpiritual things, their duty is alſo to miniſter unto them in carnal things.

* 1 Cor. 9. 11. 28 When therefore I have performed this, and have ſealed to them this fruit, I will come by you into Spain.

29 And I am ſure that when I come unto you, I ſhall come in the fulneſs of the bleſſing of the goſpel of Chriſt.

30 Now I beſeech you, brethren, for the Lord Jeſus Chriſts ſake, and for the love of the Spirit, that ye ſtrive together with me, in *your* prayers to God for me;

‡ Or, *are diſobedient.* 31 That I may be delivered from them that ‡ do not believe in Judea; and that my ſervice which *I have* for Jeruſalem, may be accepted of the ſaints:

32 That I may come unto you with joy by the will of God, and may with you be refreſhed.

33 Now the God of peace *be* with you all. Amen.

CHAP. XVI.

3 Paul willeth the brethren to greet many, 17 and adviſeth them to take heed of thoſe which cauſe diſſenſion and offences, 21 and after ſundry ſalutations, endeth with praiſe and thanks to God.

I Commend unto you Phebe our ſiſter, which is a ſervant of the church which is at Cenchrea:

2 That ye receive her in the Lord, as becometh ſaints, and that ye aſſiſt her in whatſoever buſineſs ſhe hath need of you: for ſhe hath been a ſuccourer of many, and of my ſelf alſo.

* Acts 18. 2, 26. 3 Greet * Priſcilla and Aquila, my helpers in Chriſt Jeſus:

4 (Who have for my life laid down their own necks: unto whom not onely I give thanks, but alſo all the churches of the Gentiles)

5 Likewiſe *greet* the church that is in their houſe. Salute my welbeloved Epenetus, who is the firſt-fruits of Achaia unto Chriſt.

6 Greet Mary, who beſtowed much labour on us.

7 Salute Andronicus, and Junia, my kinſmen, and my fellow-priſoners, who are of note among the apoſtles, who alſo were in Chriſt before me.

8 Greet Amplias my beloved in the Lord.

9 Salute Urbane our helper in Chriſt, and Stachys my beloved.

10 Salute Apelles approved in Chriſt. Salute them which are of Ariſtobulus ‡ *houſhold.*

‡ Or, *friends.* 11 Salute Herodion my kinſman. Greet them that be of the ‡ *houſhold* of Narciſſus, which are in the Lord.

‡ Or, *friends.* 12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphoſa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved Perſis, which laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Ruſus choſen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

14 Salute Aſyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them.

15 Salute Philologus, and Julia, Nereus, and his ſiſter, and Olympas, and all the ſaints which are with them.

* 1 Cor. 16. 20. 2 Cor. 13. 12. 1 Pet. 5. 14. 16 * Salute one another with an holy kiſs. The churches of Chriſt ſalute you.

17 Now I beſeech you, brethren, mark them which cauſe diviſions and offences, contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.

18 For they that are ſuch, ſerve not our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, but their own belly; and by good words and fair ſpeeches deceive the hearts of the ſimple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would have you wiſe unto that which is good, and ‡ ſimple concerning evil.

‡ Or, *harmleſs.* ‡ Or, *tread.* * Acts 16. 1. 20 And the God of peace ſhall ‡ bruiſe Satan under your feet ſhortly. The grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt *be* with you. Amen.

21 *Timotheus my work-fellow, and Lucius, and Jaſon, and Soſipater my kinſmen, ſalute you.

22 I Tertius, who wrote *this* epiſtle, ſalute you in the Lord.

23 Gaius mine hoſt, and of the whole church, ſaluteth you. Eraſtus the chamberlain of the city ſaluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt *be* with you all. Amen.

* Eph. 3. 9. Col. 1. 26. 25 Now to him that is of power to ſtabliſh you, according to my goſpel, and the preaching of Jeſus Chriſt, (according to the revelation of the myſtery, * which was kept ſecret ſince the world began,

26 But now is made manifeſt, and by the ſcriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlaſting God, made known to all nations for obedience of faith)

27 To God onely wiſe *be* glory through Jeſus Chriſt, for ever. Amen.

¶ Written to the Romans from Corinthus, *and ſent* by Phebe ſervant of the church at Cenchrea.

¶ The firſt Epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle, to the CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

After his ſalutation, 4 and thankſgiving, 10 he exhorteth them to unity, 12 and reproveth their diſſentions. 18 God deſtroyeth the wiſdom of the wiſe, 21 by the fooliſhneſs of preaching; and 26 calleth not the wiſe, mighty, and noble, but 27, 28 the fooliſh, weak, and men of no account.

PAul called *to be* an Apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt, through the will of God, and Soſthenes *our* brother,

2 Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that *are ſanctified in Chriſt Jeſus, * called *to be* ſaints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jeſus Chriſt our Lord, both theirs and ours.

* Acts. 15. 9. * Rom. 1. 7.

3 Grace *be* unto you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

4 I thank my God always on your behalf, for ſ grace of God which is given you by Jeſus Chriſt:

5 That in every thing ye are enriched by him, in all utterance, and in all knowledge:

6 Even as the teſtimony of Chriſt was confirmed in you.

7 So

7 So that ye come behind in no gift; waiting for the † coming of our Lord Jesus Christ:
8 Who shall also confirm you unto the end, *that ye may be* blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.
9 * God *is* faithful, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.
10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and *that* there be no † divisions among you; but *that* ye be perfectly joyned together in the same mind, and in the same judgement.
11 For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them *which are of the house* of Chloe, that there are contentions among you.
12 Now this I say, that every one of you saith, I am of Paul, and I of * Apollos, and I of Cephas, and I of Christ.
13 Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?
14 I thank God, that I baptized none of you, but * Crispus and Gaius:
15 Lest any should say, that I had baptized in mine own name.
16 And I baptized also the houshold of Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other.
17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: * not with wisdom of ‡ words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect.
18 For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish, foolishness: but unto us which are saved, it is the * power of God.
19 For it is written, * I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent.
20 * Where *is* the wise? where *is* the scribe? where *is* the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world?
21 * For after that, in the wisdom of God, the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe.
22 For the * Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom:
23 But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling-block, and unto the Greeks, foolishness;
24 But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ, the power of God, and the wisdom of God.
25 Because the foolishness of God is wiser then men; and the weakness of God is stronger then men.
26 For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble *are called*.
27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world, to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world, to confound the things which are mighty;
28 And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, *yea*, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are:
29 That no flesh should glory in his presence.
30 But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption:
31 That, according as it is written, * He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

CHAP. II.

He declareth that his preaching, 1 though it bring not excellency of speech, or of 4 humane wisdom, yet consisteth in the 4, 5 power of God: and so far excelleth 6 the wisdom of this world, and 9 humane sense, as that, 14 the natural man cannot understand it.

AND I, brethren, when I came to you, * came not with excellency of speech, or of wisdom, declaring unto you the testimony of God.
2 For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified.
3 And I was with you in weakness, and in fear, and in much trembling.
4 And my speech, and my preaching * *was* not with ‡ enticing words of mans wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit, and of power:
5 That your faith should not † stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.
6 Howbeit we speak wisdom among them that are perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to nought.
7 But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, *even* the hidden *wisdom* which God ordained before the world unto our glory:
8 Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known *it*, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.
9 But as it is written, * Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entred into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.
10 But God hath revealed *them* unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.
11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.
12 Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.
13 * Which things also we speak, not in the words which mans wisdom teacheth, but which the holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.
14 But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him; neither can he know *them*, because they are spiritually discerned.
15 * But he that is spiritual, ‡ judgeth all things, yet he himself is ‡ judged of no man.
16 * For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he † may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ.

CHAP. III.

2 Milk is fit for children. 3 Strife and division, arguments of a fleshly mind. 7 He that planteth, and he that watereth, is nothing. 9 The ministers are Gods fellow-workmen. 11 Christ the onely foundation. 16 Men the temples of God, 17 which must be kept holy. 19 The wisdom of this world is foolishness with God.

AND I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, *even* as unto babes in Christ,
2 I have fed you with * milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able *to bear it*, neither yet now are ye able.
3 For ye are yet carnal: for whereas *there is* among you envying, and strife, and ‡ divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk † as men?
4 For while one saith, I am of Paul, and another, I *am* of Apollos; are ye not carnal?
5 Who then is Paul, and who *is* Apollos, but ministers by whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every man?
6 I have planted, Apollos watered: but God gave the increase.

7 So then, neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth: but God that giveth the increase.

8 Now he that planteth, and he that watereth, are one; * and every man shall receive his own reward, according to his own labour.

* Psal. 62. 12.

9 For we are labourers together with God: ye are Gods ‡ husbandry, *ye are* Gods building.

Gal 6. 5.

‡ Or, tillage.

10 According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise master-builder I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.

11 For other foundation can no man lay, than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.

12 Now if any man build upon this foundation, gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble:

13 Every mans work shall be made manifest. For the day shall declare it, because it † shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every mans work, of what sort it is.

† Gr. is revealed.

14 If any mans work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.

15 If any mans work shall be burnt, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.

16 * Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and *that* the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

* Chap. 6. 19.

17 If any man † defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy: for the temple of God is holy, which *temple* ye are.

2 Cor. 6. 16.

‡ Or, destroy.

18 Let no man deceive himself: if any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise.

19 For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God: for it is written, * He taketh the wise in their own craftiness.

* Job 5. 13.

20 And again, * The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain.

* Psal. 94. 11.

21 Therefore let no man glory in men: for all things are yours:

22 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are yours;

23 And ye *are* Christs; and Christ *is* Gods.

CHAP. IV.

1 *In what account the ministers ought to be had.* 7 *We have nothing which we have not received.* 9 *The apostles, spectacles to the world, angels, and men,* 13 *the filth and off-scouring of the world,* 15 *yet our fathers in Christ,* 16 *whom we ought to follow.*

LEt a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God.

2 Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.

3 But with me it is a very small thing that I † Gr. day. should be judged of you, or of mans † judgment: yea, I judge not mine own self.

4 For I know nothing by my self, yet am I not hereby justified: but he that judgeth me is the Lord.

5 * Therefore judge nothing before the time, * Mat. 7. 1. Rom. 2. 1. until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God.

6 And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to my self, and to Apollos, for your sakes: that ye might learn in us not to think of men above that which is written, that † Gr. against one. no one of you be puffed up for one against another.

7 For who † maketh thee to differ *from another?* and what hast thou that thou didst not receive? now if thou didst receive *it*, why dost thou glory as if thou hadst not received *it*?

8 Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have reigned as kings without us: and I would to God ye did reign, that we also might reign with you.

9 For I think that God hath set forth us the apostles last, as it were appointed to death. For we are made a † spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men.

† Gr. theatre.

10 We *are* fools for Christs sake, but ye *are* wise in Christ: we *are* weak, but ye *are* strong: ye *are* honourable, but we *are* despised.

11 Even unto this present hour, we both hunger and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling-place;

12 * And labour, working with our own hands: being reviled, we bless: being persecuted, we suffer it:

* Acts 20. 34. 1 Thes. 2. 9. 2 Thes. 3. 8.

13 * Being defamed, we intreat: we are made as the filth of the world, *and are* the off-scouring of all things unto this day.

* Matth. 5. 44.

14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloved sons I warn *you*.

15 For though you have ten thousand instructours in Christ, yet *have ye* not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel.

16 Wherefore I beseech you, be ye followers of me.

17 For this cause have I sent unto you Timotheus, who is my beloved son, and faithful in the Lord, who shall bring you into remembrance of my ways which be in Christ, as I teach every where in every church.

18 Now some are puffed up as though I would not come to you.

19 * But I will come to you shortly, * if the Lord will, and will know, not the speech of them which are puffed up, but the power.

* Acts 19. 21. * Jam. 4. 15.

20 For the kingdom of God *is* not in word, but in power.

21 What will ye? shall I come unto you with a rod, or in love, and *in* the spirit of meekness?

CHAP. V.

1 *The incestuous person,* 6 *is cause rather of shame unto them, then of rejoycing.* 7 *The old leaven is to be purged out,* 10 *Hainous offenders are to be shunned and avoided.*

IT is reported commonly *that there is* fornication among you, and such fornication, as is not so much as named amongst the Gentiles, that one should have his fathers wife.

2 And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed might be taken away from among you.

3 * For I verily as absent in body, but present in spirit, have ‡ judged already, as though I were present, *concerning* him that hath so done this deed;

* Col 2. 5. ‡ Or, determined.

4 In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ,

5 * To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

* 1 Tim. 1. 20.

6 Your glorying *is* not good: Know ye not that * a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?

* Gal. 5. 9.

7 Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our passover ‡ is sacrificed for us.

‡ Or, is slain.

8 Therefore let us keep † the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened *bread* of sincerity and truth.

† Or, holyday.

9 I wrote unto you in an epistle, not to company with fornicatours,

10 Yet

10 Yet not altogether with the fornicatours of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then muſt ye needs go out of the world.

11 But now I have written unto you, not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicatour, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner, with ſuch an one, no not to eat.

12 For what have I to do to judge them alſo that are without? do not ye judge them that are within?

13 But them that are without, God judgeth. Therefore put away from among your ſelves that wicked *perſon*.

CHAP. VI.

1 *The Corinthians muſt not vex their brethren, in going to law with them*; 6 *eſpecially under infidels.* 9 *The unrighteous ſhall not inherit the kingdom of God.* 15 *Our bodies are the members of Chriſt,* 19 *and temples of the holy Ghoſt*: 16, 17 *They muſt not therefore be defiled.*

DAre any of you, having a matter againſt another, go to law before the unjuſt, and not before the ſaints?

2 Do ye not know that the ſaints ſhall judge the world? and if the world ſhall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the ſmalleſt matters.

3 Know ye not that we ſhall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?

4 If then ye have judgments of things pertaining to this life, ſet them to judge who are leaſt eſteemed in the church.

5 I ſpeak to your ſhame. Is it ſo, that there is not a wiſe man amongſt you? no not one that ſhall be able to judge between his brethren?

6 But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the unbelievers.

7 Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, becauſe ye go to law one with another: * why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather ſuffer your ſelves to be defrauded?

8 Nay, you do wrong and defraud, and that *your* brethren.

9 Know ye not that the unrighteous ſhall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicatours, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abuſers of themſelves with mankind,

10 Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, ſhall inherit the kingdom of God.

11 And ſuch were * ſome of you: but ye are waſhed, but ye are ſanctified, but ye are juſtified in the name of the Lord Jeſus, and by the Spirit of our God.

12 * All things are lawful unto me, but all things are not ‡ expedient: all things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any.

13 Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats: but God ſhall deſtroy both it and them. Now the body *is* not for fornication, but for the Lord; and the Lord for the body.

14 And God hath both raiſed up the Lord, and will alſo raiſe up us by his own power.

15 Know ye not, that your bodies are the members of Chriſt? ſhall I then take the members of Chriſt, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.

16 What, know ye not that he which is joyned to an harlot, is one body? for *two* (ſaith he) ſhall be one fleſh.

17 But he that is joyned unto the Lord, is one ſpirit.

18 Flee fornication. Every ſin that a man doeth, is without the body: but he that committeth fornication, ſinneth againſt his own body.

19 What, * know ye not that your body is the temple of the holy Ghoſt *which is* in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? * Chap. 3. 16.

20 For * ye are bought with a price: therefore glorifie God in your body, and in your ſpirit, which are Gods. * Chap. 7. 23.

CHAP. VII.

2 *He treateth of marriage,* 4 *ſhewing it to be a remedy againſt fornication;* 10 *and that the bond thereof ought not lightly to be diſſolved.* 18, 20 *Every man muſt be content with his vocation.* 25 *Virginity wherefore to be embraced.* 35 *And for what reſpects we may either marry, or abſtain from marrying.*

NOw concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me: *It is* good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 Nevertheleſs, *to avoid* fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own huſband.

3 Let the huſband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewiſe alſo the wife unto the huſband.

4 The wife hath not power of her own body, but the huſband: and likewiſe alſo the huſband hath not power of his own body, but the wife.

5 Defraud you not one the other, except *it be* with conſent for a time, that ye may give your ſelves to faſting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency.

6 But I ſpeak this by permiſſion, *and* not of commandment.

7 For I would that all men were even as I my ſelf: but every man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner, and another after that.

8 I ſay therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is good for them if they abide even as I.

9 But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry then to burn.

10 And unto the married I command, *yet* not I, but the Lord, * Let not the wife depart from *her* huſband: * Matth. 5. 32.

11 But and if ſhe depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to *her* huſband: and let not the huſband put away *his* wife. and 19. 9. Mar. 10. 11. Luk. 16. 18.

12 But to the reſt ſpeak I, not the Lord, If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and ſhe be pleaſed to dwell with him, let him not put her away.

13 And the woman which hath an huſband that believeth not, and if he be pleaſed to dwell with her, let her not leave him.

14 For the unbelieving huſband is ſanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is ſanctified by the huſband: elſe were your children unclean; but now are they holy.

15 But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a ſiſter is not under bondage in ſuch *caſes*: but God hath called us ‡ to peace. † Gr. *in peace.*

16 For what knoweſt thou, O wife, whether thou ſhalt ſave *thy* huſband? or how knoweſt thou, O man, whether thou ſhalt ſave *thy* wife?

17 But as God hath diſtributed to every man, as the Lord hath called every one, ſo let him walk: and ſo ordain I in all the churches.

18 Is any man called, being circumciſed? let him not become uncircumciſed: is any called in uncircumciſion? let him not become circumciſed.

19 Circumciſion is nothing, and uncircumciſion is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God.

20 Let

20 Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called *being* a servant? care not for it; but if thou mayest be made free, use *it* rather.

22 For he that is called in the Lord, *being* a servant, is the Lord's † free-man: likewise also he that is called *being* free, is Christ's servant.

† Gr. *made free.*

23 * Ye are bought with a price; be not ye the servants of men.

* Chap. 6. 20.

24 Brethren, let every man wherein he is called, therein abide with God.

25 Now concerning virgins, I have no commandment of the Lord: yet I give my judgment as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful.

26 I suppose therefore that this is good for the present ‡ distress, *I say*, that *it is* good for a man so to be.

‡ Or, *necessity.*

27 Art thou bound unto a wife? seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? seek not a wife.

28 But and if thou marry, thou hast not sinned; and if a virgin marry, she hath not sinned: nevertheless, such shall have trouble in the flesh; but I spare you.

29 But this I say, brethren, the time is short. It remaineth, that both they that have wives, be as though they had none;

30 And they that weep, as though they wept not; and they that rejoyce, as though they rejoyced not; and they that buy, as though they possessed not;

31 And they that use this world, as not abusing it: for the fashion of this world passeth away.

32 But I would have you without carefulness. He that is unmarried, careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord:

33 But he that is married, careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please *his* wife.

34 There is difference also between a wife and a virgin: The unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy, both in body and in spirit: but she that is married, careth for the things of the world, how she may please *her* husband.

35 And this I speak for your own profit, not that I may cast a snare upon you, but for that which is comely, and that you may attend upon the Lord without distraction.

36 But if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely toward his virgin, if she pass the flower of *her* age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sinneth not: let them marry.

37 Nevertheless, he that standeth stedfast in his heart, having no necessity, but hath power over his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart, that he will keep his virgin, doth well.

38 So then, he that giveth *her* in marriage, doth well: but he that giveth *her* not in marriage, doth better.

39 * The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth: but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; onely in the Lord.

* Rom. 7. 2.

40 But she is happier if she so abide, after my judgment: and I think also that I have the spirit of God.

CHAP. VIII.

1 *To abstain from meats offered to idols,* 8, 9 *We must not abuse our Christian liberty, to the offence of our brethren:* 11 *but must bridle our knowledge with charity.*

NOw as touching things offered unto idols, we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth.

2 And if any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man love God, the same is known of him.

4 As concerning therefore the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice unto idols, we know that * an idol *is* nothing in the world, and that *there is* none other God but one.

* Chap. 10. 19.

5 For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many)

6 But to us *there is but* one God, the Father, of whom *are* all things, and we ‡ in him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom *are* all things, and we by him.

‡ Or, *for him.* Rom. 11. 36.

7 Howbeit *there is* not in every man that knowledge: for some with conscience of the idol unto this hour, eat it as a thing offered unto an idol; and their conscience being weak, is defiled.

8 But meat commendeth us not to God: for neither if we eat, ‡ are we the better; neither if we eat not, ‡ are we the worse.

‡ Or, *have we the more.*

9 But take heed lest by any means this ‡ liberty of yours become a stumbling-block to them that are weak.

‡ Or, *have we the less.*

10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge sit at meat in the idols temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weak be † emboldned to eat those things which are offered to idols:

‡ Or, *power.* † Gr. *edified.*

11 And through thy knowledge shall the weak brother perish, for whom Christ died?

12 But when ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ.

13 Wherefore * if meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend.

* Rom. 14. 21.

CHAP. IX.

1 *He sheweth his liberty,* 7 *and that the minister ought to live by the gospel:* 15 *yet that himself hath of his own accord abstained,* 18 *to be either chargeable unto them,* 22 *or offensive unto any in matters indifferent.* 24 *Our life is like unto a race.*

AM I not an apostle? am I not free? * have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? are not you my work in the Lord?

* Chap. 15. 8.

2 If I be not an apostle unto others, yet doubtless I am to you: for the seal of mine apostleship are ye in the Lord.

3 Mine answer to them that do examine me, is this,

4 Have we not power to eat and to drink?

5 Have we not power to lead about a sister a ‡ wife as well as other apostles, and *as* the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?

‡ Or, *woman.*

6 Or I onely and Barnabas, have not we power to forbear working?

7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his own charges? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof? or who feedeth a flock, and eateth not of the milk of the flock?

8 Say I these things as a man? or saith not the law the same also?

9 For it is written in the law of Moses, * Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth God take care for oxen?

* Deut. 25. 4.

10 Or saith he it altogether for our sakes? for our sakes, no doubt, *this* is written: that he that ploweth should plow in hope; and that he that

that thresheth in hope, should be partaker of his hope.

11 * If we have sown unto you spiritual things, *is it* a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things?

12 If others be partakers of *this* power over you, *are* not we rather? Nevertheless, we have not used this power; but suffer all things, lest we should hinder the gospel of Christ.

13 * Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things, ‡ live *of the things* of the temple? and they which wait at the altar, are partakers with the altar?

14 Even so hath the Lord ordained, * that they which preach the gospel, should live of the gospel.

15 But I have used none of these things, neither have I written these things, that it should be so done unto me: for *it were* better for me to die, then that any man should make my glorying void.

16 For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessity is laid upon me; yea, wo is unto me if I preach not ỹ gospel.

17 For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will, a dispensation *of the gospel* is committed unto me.

18 What is my reward then? verily that when I preach the gospel, I may make the gospel of Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the gospel.

19 For though I be free from all men, yet have I made my self servant unto all, that I might gain the more.

20 And unto the Jews, I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law, that I might might gain them that are under the law;

21 To them that are without law, as without law, (being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ) that I might gain them that are without law.

22 To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.

23 And this I do for the gospels sake, that I might be partaker thereof with *you*.

24 Know ye not that they which run in a race, run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run that ye may obtain.

25 And every man that striveth for the mastery, is temperate in all things: Now, they *do it* to obtain a corruptible crown, but we an incorruptible.

26 I therefore so run, not as uncertainly: so fight I, not as one that beateth the air:

27 But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means when I have preached to others, I my self should be a cast-away.

CHAP. X.

1 *The sacraments of the Jews,* 6 *are types of ours,* 7 *and their punishments,* 11 *examples for us.* 14 *We must flee from idolatry.* 21 *We must not make the Lords table the table of devils:* 24 *and in things indifferent we must have regard of our brethren.*

MOreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under * the cloud, and all passed through * the sea;

2 And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud, and in the sea;

3 And did all eat the same * spiritual meat;

4 And did all drink the same * spiritual drink: (For they drank of that spiritual Rock that ‡ followed them: and that Rock was Christ)

5 But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they * were overthrown in the wilderness. * Numb. 26. 65.

6 Now these things were † our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as * they also lusted. † Gr. *our figures.* * Numb. 11. 4.

7 Neither be ye idolaters, as *were* some of them; as it is written, * The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play. Psal. 106. 14.

8 Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and * fell in one day three and twenty thousand. * Exod. 32. 6. * Numb. 25. 9.

9 Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and * were destroyed of serpents. * Numb. 21. 6.

10 Neither murmure ye, as some of them also murmured, & * were destroyed of the destroyer. * Numb. 14. 37.

11 Now all these things happened unto them *for* ‡ ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come. ‡ Or, *types.*

12 Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall.

13 There hath no temptation taken you, but ‡ such as is common to man: but God *is* faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear *it*. ‡ Or, *moderate.*

14 Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry.

15 I speak as to wise men; judge ye what I say.

16 The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the bloud of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

17 For we being many are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.

18 Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices, partakers of ỹ altar?

19 What say I then? that the idol is any thing, or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing?

20 But *I say*, that the things which the Gentiles * sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God: and I would not that ye should have fellowship with devils. * Deut. 32. 17. Psal. 106. 37.

21 Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lords table, and of the table of devils.

22 Do we provoke the Lord to jealousie? are we stronger then he?

23 All things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but all things edifie not.

24 Let no man seek his own: but every man anothers wealth.

25 Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eat, asking no question for conscience sake.

26 For * the earth *is* the Lords, and the fulness thereof. * Deut. 10. 14.

27 If any of them that believe not, bid you *to a feast*, and ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake. Psal. 24. 1.

28 But if any man say unto you, This is offered in sacrifice unto idols, eat not, for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake. For * the earth *is* the Lords, and the fulness thereof. * Deut 10. 14.

29 Conscience, I say, not thine own, but of the others: for why is my liberty judged of another mans conscience? Psal. 24. 1.

30 For, if I by ‡ grace be a partaker, why am I evil spoken of for that for which I give thanks? ‡ Or, *thanksgiving.*

31 * Whether therefore ye eat or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God. * Col. 3. 17.

32 * Give

32 * Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the † Gentiles, nor to the church of God:
33 Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the *profit* of many, that they may be saved.

* 2 Cor. 6. 3.
† Gr. *Greeks.*

CHAP. XI.

1 He reproveth them because in holy assemblies 4 their men prayed with their heads covered, and 6 women with their heads uncovered: 17 and because generally their meetings were not for the better, but for the worse; as 21 namely, in profaning with their own feasts the Lords supper. 23 Lastly, he calleth them to the first institution thereof.

BE ye followers of me, even as I also *am* of Christ.
2 Now I praise you, brethren, that you remember me in all things, and keep the ‡ ordinances, as I delivered *them* to you.
3 But I would have you know, that * the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman *is* the man; and the head of Christ *is* God.
4 Every man praying or prophesying, having *his* head covered, dishonoureth his head.
5 But every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with *her* head uncovered, dishonoureth her head: for that is even all one as if she were shaven.
6 For if the woman be not covered, let her also be shorn: but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her be covered.
7 For a man indeed ought not to cover *his* head, for as much as * he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man.
8 For the man is not of the woman: but the woman of the man.
9 * Neither was the man created for the woman: but the woman for the man.
10 For this cause ought the woman to have ‡ power on *her* head, because of the angels.
11 Nevertheless, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man in the Lord.
12 For as the woman *is* of the man, even so *is* the man also by the woman: but all things of God.
13 Judge in your selves: is it comely that a woman pray unto God uncovered?
14 Doth not even nature it self teach you, that if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him?
15 But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her: for her hair is given her for a ‡ covering.
16 But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custom, neither the churches of God.
17 Now in this that I declare *unto you*, I praise *you* not, that you come together, not for the better, but for the worse.
18 For first of all, when ye come together in the church, I hear that there be ‡ divisions among you; and I partly believe it.
19 For there must be also ‡ heresies among you, that they which are approved, may be made manifest among you.
20 When ye come together therefore into one place, ‡ *this* is not to eat the Lords supper.
21 For in eating every one taketh before *other*, his own supper: and one is hungry, and another is drunken.
22 What, have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? or despise ye the church of God, and shame ‡ them that have not? What shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise *you* not.
23 For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus, the *same* night in which he was betrayed, took bread:

* Ephes. 5. 23.
‡ Or, *traditions.*
‡ That is, *a covering, in sign that she is under the power of her husband.*
‡ Or, *veil.*
‡ Or, *Schisms.*
‡ Or, *sects.*
‡ Or, *ye cannot eat.*
‡ Or, *them that are poor.*
* Gen. 1. 26.
* Gen. 2. 23.

24 * And when he had given thanks, he brake *it*, and said, Take, eat; this is my body, which is broken for you: this do ‡ in remembrance of me.
25 After the same manner also *he took* the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my bloud: this do ye, as oft as ye drink *it*, in remembrance of me.
26 For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ‡ ye do shew the Lords death till he come.
27 Wherefore, whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink *this* cup of the Lord unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and bloud of the Lord.
28 But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of *that* bread, and drink of *that* cup.
29 For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh ‡ damnation to himself, not discerning the Lords body.
30 For this cause many *are* weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.
31 For if we would judge our selves, we should not be judged.
32 But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world.
33 Wherefore my brethren, when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another.
34 And if any man hunger, let him eat at home; that ye come not together unto ‡ condemnation. And the rest will I set in order when I come.

* Matth. 16. 26. Mar. 14. 22. Luk. 22. 19.
‡ Or, *for a remembrance.*
‡ Or, *shew ye.*
‡ Or, *judgment.*
‡ Or, *judgment.*

CHAP. XII.

1 Spiritual gifts 4 are divers, 7 yet all to profit withall; 8 and to that end are diversly bestowed: 12 that by the like proportion, as the members of a natural body tend all to the 16 mutual decency, 22 service, and 26 succour of the same body; 27 so we should do one for another, to make up the mystical body of Christ.

NOw concerning spiritual *gifts*, brethren, I would not have you ignorant.
2 Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led.
3 Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God, calleth Jesus ‡ accursed: and *that* no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the holy Ghost.
4 * Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit.
5 And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord.
6 And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God, which worketh all in all.
7 But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withall.
8 For to one is given by the Spirit, the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit;
9 To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit;
10 To another the working of miracles; to another prophesie; to another discerning of spirits; to another *divers* kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues.
11 But all these worketh that one and the self-same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will.
12 For as the body is one, & hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also *is* Christ.
13 For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether *we be* Jews or † Gentiles, whether *we be* bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.
14 For the body is not one member, but many.

‡ Or, *anathema.*
* Rom. 12. 4, &c.
† Gr. *Greeks.*

15 If

15 If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body?

16 And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body?

17 If the whole body *were* an eye, where *were* the hearing? if the whole *were* hearing, where *were* the smelling?

18 But now hath God set the members, every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him.

19 And if they were all one member, where *were* the body?

20 But now *are they* many members, yet but one body.

21 And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again, the head to the feet, I have no need of you.

22 Nay, much more, those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary.

23 And those *members* of the body, which we think to be less honourable, upon these we ‡ bestow more abundant honour, and our uncomely *parts* have more abundant comeliness.

24 For our comely *parts* have no need: but God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that *part* which lacked:

25 That there should be no ‡ schism in the body; but *that* the members should have the same care one for another.

26 And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it: or one member be honoured, all the members rejoyce with it.

27 Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular.

28 And * God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarly prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, ‡ diversities of tongues.

29 *Are* all apostles? *are* all prophets? *are* all teachers? *are* all ‡ workers of miracles?

30 Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret?

31 But covet earnestly the best gifts: And yet shew I unto you a more excellent way.

CHAP. XIII.

1 All gifts, 2, 3 how excellent soever, are nothing worth without charity. 4 The praises thereof, and 13 prelation before hope and faith.

THough I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am become *as* sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal.

2 And though I have *the gift of* prophesie and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have no charity, I am nothing.

3 And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.

4 Charity suffereth long, *and* is kind; charity envieth not; charity ‡ vaunteth not it self, is not puffed up,

5 Doth not behave it self unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil,

6 Rejoyceth not in iniquity, but rejoyceth ‡ in the truth,

7 Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

8 Charity never faileth: but whether *there be* prophesies, they shall fail; whether *there be* tongues, they shall cease; whether *there be* knowledge, it shall vanish away.

9 For we know in part, and we prophesie in part.

10 But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.

11 When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I ‡ thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things. ‡ Or, reasoned.

12 For now we see through a glass, † darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known. † Gr. in a riddle.

13 And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these *is* charity.

CHAP. XIV.

1 Prophesie is commended, 2, 3, 4 and preferred before speaking with tongues, 6 by a comparison drawn from musical instruments. 12 Both must be referred to edification, 22 as to their true and proper end. 26 The true use of each is taught, 29 and the abuse taxed. 34 Women are forbidden to speak in the church.

FOllow after charity, and desire spiritual *gifts*, but rather that ye may prophesie.

2 For he that speaketh in an *unknown* tongue, speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man † understandeth *him*; howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries. † Gr. heareth.

3 But he that prophesieth, speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort.

4 He that speaketh in an *unknown* tongue, edifieth himself: but he that prophesieth, edifieth the church.

5 I would that ye all spake with tongues, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater *is* he that prophesieth, than he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive edifying.

6 Now brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shall speak to you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine?

7 And even things without life giving sound, whether pipe or harp, except they give a distinction in the ‡ sounds, how shall it be known what is piped or harped? ‡ Or, tunes.

8 For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battel?

9 So likewise you, except ye utter by the tongue words † easie to be understood, how shall it be known what is spoken? for ye shall speak into the air. † Gr. significant.

10 There are, it may be, so many kinds of voices in the world, and none of them *is* without signification.

11 Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice, I shall be unto him that speaketh, a barbarian; and he that speaketh *shall be* a barbarian unto me.

12 Even so ye, forasmuch as ye are zealous † of spiritual *gifts*, seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the church. † Gr. or spirits.

13 Wherefore let him that speaketh in an *unknown* tongue, pray that he may interpret.

14 For if I pray in an *unknown* tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also.

16 Else when thou shalt bless with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned, say Amen at thy giving of thanks, seeing

seeing he understandeth not what thou sayest?
17 For thou verily giveſt thanks well, but the other is not edified.
18 I thank my God, I ſpeak with tongues more then you all:
19 Yet in the church I had rather ſpeak five words with my underſtanding, that *by my voice* I might teach others alſo, then ten thouſand words in an *unknown* tongue.
20 Brethren, be not children in underſtanding: howbeit, in malice * be ye children, but in underſtanding be † men.
21 In the law it is * written, With *men of* other tongues and other lips, will I ſpeak unto this people: and yet for all that will they not hear me, ſaith the Lord.
22 Wherefore tongues are for a ſign, not to them that believe, but to them that believe not: but propheſying *ſerveth* not for them that believe not, but for them which believe.
23 If therefore the whole church be come together into one place, and all ſpeak with tongues, and there come in thoſe that are unlearned, or unbelievers, will they not ſay that ye are mad?
24 But if all propheſie, and there come in one that believeth not, or *one* unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all:
25 And thus are the ſecrets of his heart made manifeſt; and ſo falling down on *his* face, he will worſhip God, and report that God is in you of a truth.
26 How is it then, brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a pſalm, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation. Let all things be done to edifying.
27 If any man ſpeak in an *unknown* tongue, *let it be* by two, or at the moſt *by* three, and that by courſe; and let one interpret.
28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keep ſilence in the church; and let him ſpeak to himſelf, and to God.
29 Let the prophets ſpeak two or three, and let the other judge.
30 If *any thing* be revealed to another that ſitteth by, let the firſt hold his peace.
31 For ye may all propheſie one by one, that all may learn, and all may be comforted.
32 And the ſpirits of the prophets are ſubject to the prophets.
33 For God is not *the author* of † confuſion, but of peace, as in all churches of the ſaints.
34 * Let your women keep ſilence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to ſpeak; but *they are commanded* to be under obedience, as alſo ſaith the * law.
35 And if they will learn any thing, let them aſk their huſbands at home: for it is a ſhame for women to ſpeak in the church.
36 What? came the word of God out from you? or came it unto you onely?
37 If any man think himſelf to be a prophet, or ſpiritual, let him acknowledge that the things that I write unto you, are the commandments of the Lord.
38 But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.
39 Wherefore, brethren, covet to propheſie, and forbid not to ſpeak with tongues.
40 Let all things be done decently, and in order.

* Matth. 18. 3.
† Gr. *perfect*, or, *of a ripe age.*
* Iſai. 28. 11.
† Gr. *tumult.* or, *unquietneſs.*
* 1 Tim. 2. 12.
* Gen. 3. 16.

CHAP. XV.

3 *By Chriſts reſurrection* 12 *he proveth the neceſſity of our reſurrection, againſt all ſuch as deny the reſurrection of the body.* 21 *The fruit,* 35 *and manner thereof,* 51 *and of the changing of them that ſhall be found alive at the laſt day.*

MOreover, brethren, I declare unto you the goſpel which I preached unto you, which alſo you have received, and wherein ye ſtand;
2 By which alſo ye are ſaved, if ye ‡ keep in memory † what I preached unto you, unleſs ye have believed in vain.
3 For I delivered unto you firſt of all that which I alſo received, how that Chriſt died for our ſins * according to the ſcriptures:
4 And that he was buried, and that he roſe again the third day * according to the ſcriptures:
5 * And that he was ſeen of Cephas, then of the twelve.
6 After that, he was ſeen of above five hundred brethren at once: of whom the greater part remain unto this preſent, but ſome are fallen aſleep.
7 After that, he was ſeen of James; then of all the apoſtles.
8 * And laſt of all he was ſeen of me alſo, as of ‡ one born out of due time.
9 For I am the leaſt of the apoſtles, that am not meet to be called an apoſtle, becauſe I perſecuted the church of God.
10 But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which *was beſtowed* upon me, was not in vain; but I laboured more abundantly then they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me.
11 Therefore whether *it were* I or they, ſo we preach, and ſo ye believed.
12 Now if Chriſt be preached that he roſe from the dead, how ſay ſome among you, that there is no reſurrection of the dead?
13 But if there be no reſurrection of the dead, then is Chriſt not riſen.
14 And if Chriſt be not riſen, then *is* our preaching vain, and your faith *is* alſo vain.
15 Yea, and we are found falſe witneſſes of God; becauſe we have teſtified of God, that he raiſed up Chriſt: whom he raiſed not up, if ſo be that the dead riſe not.
16 For if the dead riſe not, then is not Chriſt raiſed:
17 And if Chriſt be not raiſed, your faith *is* vain; ye are yet in your ſins.
18 Then they alſo which are fallen aſleep in Chriſt, are periſhed.
19 If in this life onely we have hope in Chriſt, we are of all men moſt miſerable.
20 But now is Chriſt riſen from the dead, *and* become * the firſt-fruits of them that ſlept.
21 For ſince by man *came* death, by man *came* alſo the reſurrection of the dead.
22 For as in Adam all die, even ſo in Chriſt ſhall all be made alive.
23 But * every man in his own order: Chriſt the firſt-fruits, afterward they that are Chriſts, at his coming.
24 Then *cometh* the end, when he ſhall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he ſhall have put down all rule, and all authority, and power.
25 For he muſt reign, * till he hath put all enemies under his feet.
26 The laſt enemy *that* ſhall be deſtroyed, *is* death.
27 For he * hath put all things under his feet. But when he ſaith all things are put under *him, it is* manifeſt that he is excepted which did put all things under him.
28 And when all things ſhall be ſubdued unto him, then ſhall the Son alſo himſelf be ſubject unto

‡ Or, *hold faſt.*
† Gr. *by what ſpeech.*
* Iſai. 53. 5, 6, &c.
* Pſal 16. 10.
* Joh. 20. 19.
* Acts 9. 4.
Chap. 9. 1.
‡ Or, *an abortive.*
* Col. 1. 18. Rev. 1. 5.
* 1 Theſ. 4. 15.
* Pſ. 110. 1.
* Pſal. 8. 6.

unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.

29 Else what shall they do which are baptized for the dead, if the dead rise not at all? why are they then baptized for the dead?

30 And why stand we in jeopardy every hour?

31 I protest by ‡ your rejoycing, which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily.

32 If ‡ after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantageth it me, if the dead rise not? * Let us eat and drink, for to morrow we die.

33 Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners.

34 Awake to righteousness, and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame.

35 But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come?

36 Thou fool, that which thou sowest, is not quickened, except it die.

37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain.

38 But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body.

39 All flesh *is* not the same flesh: but *there is* one *kind of* flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, *and* another of birds.

40 *There are* also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial *is* one, and the *glory* of the terrestrial *is* another.

41 There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars; for *one* star differeth from *another* star in glory.

42 So also *is* the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption:

43 It is sown in dishonour, it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power:

44 It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body.

45 And so it is written, The first man Adam * was made a living soul, the last Adam *was made* a quickning spirit.

46 Howbeit, that *was* not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural: and afterward that which is spiritual.

47 The first man *is* of the earth, earthy: the second man *is* the Lord from heaven.

48 As *is* the earthy, such *are* they also that are earthy: and as *is* the heavenly, such *are* they also that are heavenly.

49 And as we have born the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.

50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and bloud cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

51 Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed,

52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last * trump (for the trumpet shall sound) and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal *must* put on immortality.

54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, * Death is swallowed up in victory.

55 O death, where *is* thy sting? O † grave, ‡ Or, hell. where *is* thy victory?

56 The sting of death *is* sin; and the strength of sin *is* the law.

57 But thanks *be* to God, which giveth us the victory, through our Lord Jesus Christ.

58 Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.

CHAP. XVI.

1 *He exhorteth them to relieve the want of the brethren at Jerusalem;* 10 *commendeth Timothy;* 13 *and after friendly admonitions,* 16 *shutteth up his epistle with divers salutations.*

NOw concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye.

2 Upon the first *day* of the week, let every one of you lay by him in store, as *God* hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I come, whomsoever you shall approve by *your* letters, them will I send to bring your † liberality unto Jerusalem. † Gr. *gift.*

4 And if it be meet that I go also, they shall go with me.

5 Now I will come unto you, when I shall pass through Macedonia: (for I do pass through Macedonia)

6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that ye may bring me on my journey, whithersoever I go.

7 For I will not see you now by the way, but I trust to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 But I will tarry at Ephesus until Pentecost.

9 For a great door and effectual is opened unto me, and *there are* many adversaries.

10 Now if Timotheus come, see that he may be with you, without fear: for he worketh the work of the Lord, as I also *do.*

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come unto me: for I look for him with the brethren.

12 As touching *our* brother Apollos, I greatly desired him to come unto you, with the brethren: but his will was not at all to come at this time: but he will come when he shall have convenient time.

13 Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong.

12 Let all your things be done with charity.

15 I beseech you, brethren, (ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the first-fruits of Achaia, and that they have addicted themselves to the ministry of the saints)

16 That ye submit your selves unto such, and to every one that helpeth with *us* and labour-eth.

17 I am glad of the coming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part, they have supplied.

18 For they have refreshed my spirit and yours: therefore acknowledge ye them that are such.

19 The churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the church that is in their house.

20 All the brethren greet you. * Greet ye one another with an holy kiss. * Rom. 16. 16.

21 The

21 The ſalutation of *me* Paul with mine own hand.

22 If any man love not the Lord Jeſus Chriſt, let him be anathema, Maran-atha.

23 The grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt *be* with you.

24 My love *be* with you all in Chriſt Jeſus. Amen.

¶ The firſt *epiſtle* to the Corinthians was written from Philippi, by Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus and Timotheus.

¶ The ſecond Epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle, to the CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

3 The apoſtle encourageth them againſt troubles, by the comforts and deliverances which God had given him, as in all his afflictions, 8 ſo particularly in his late danger in Aſia: 12 and calling both his own conſcience and theirs to witneſs of his ſincere manner of preaching the immutable truth of the goſpel, 15 he excuſeth his not coming to them, as proceeding not of lightneſs, but of his lenity towards them.

PAUL an apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt by the will of God, and Timothy *our* brother, unto the church of God which is at Corinth, with all the ſaints which are in all Achaia:

2 Grace *be* to you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

* Eph. 1. 3. 1 Pet. 1. 3. 3 * Bleſſed *be* God, even the Father of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort;

4 Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we our ſelves are comforted of God.

5 For as the ſufferings of Chriſt abound in us, ſo our conſolation alſo aboundeth by Chriſt.

‡ Or, *is wrought.* 6 And whether we be afflicted, *it is* for your conſolation and ſalvation, which ‡ is effectual in the enduring of the ſame ſufferings, which we alſo ſuffer: or whether we be comforted, *it is* for your conſolation and ſalvation.

7 And our hope of you *is* ſtedfaſt, knowing that as you are partakers of the ſufferings, ſo *ſhall ye be* alſo of the conſolation.

8 For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble which came to us in Aſia, that we were preſſed out of meaſure, above ſtrength, inſomuch that we deſpaired even of life:

‡ Or, *anſwer.* 9 But we had the ‡ ſentence of death in our ſelves, that we ſhould not truſt in our ſelves, but in God which raiſeth the dead.

10 Who delivered us from ſo great a death, and doth deliver: in whom we truſt that he will yet deliver *us*:

* Rom. 15. 30. 11 You alſo * helping together by prayer for us, that for the gift *beſtowed* upon us by the means of many perſons, thanks may be given by many on our behalf.

12 For our rejoycing is this, the teſtimony of our conſcience, that in ſimplicity, and godly ſincerity, not with fleſhly wiſdom, but by the grace of God, we have had our converſation in the world, and more abundantly to you-wards.

13 For we write none other things unto you, then what you read or acknowledge, and I truſt you ſhall acknowledge even to the end.

14 As alſo you have acknowledged us in part, that we are your rejoycing, even as ye alſo *are* ours in the day of the Lord Jeſus.

‡ Or, *grace.* 15 And in this confidence I was minded to come unto you before, that you might have a ſecond ‡ benefit:

16 And to paſs by you into Macedonia, and to come again out of Macedonia unto you, and of you to be brought on my way toward Judea.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I uſe lightneſs? or the things that I purpoſe, do I purpoſe according to the fleſh, that with me there ſhould be yea, yea, and nay, nay?

‡ Or, *preaching.* 18 But *as* God *is* true, our ‡ word toward you was not yea and nay.

19 For the Son of God Jeſus Chriſt, who was preached among you by us, *even* by me, and Sylvanus, and Timotheus, was not yea and nay, but in him was yea.

20 For all the promiſes of God in him *are* yea, and in him amen, unto the glory of God by us.

21 Now he which ſtabliſheth us with you, in Chriſt, and hath anointed us, *is* God:

22 Who hath alſo ſealed us, and given the earneſt of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 Moreover, I call God for a record upon my ſoul, that to ſpare you I came not as yet unto Corinth.

24 Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye ſtand.

CHAP. II.

1 Having ſhewed the reaſon why he came not to them, 6 he requireth them to forgive, and to comfort that excommunicated perſon, 10 even as himſelf alſo upon his true repentance had forgiven him: 12 declaring withall why he departed from Troas to Macedonia, 14 and the happy ſucceſs which God gave to his preaching in all places.

BUT I determined this with my ſelf, that I would not come again to you in heavineſs.

2 For if I make you ſorry, who is he then that maketh me glad, but the ſame which is made ſorry by me?

3 And I wrote this ſame unto you, leſt when I came, I ſhould have ſorrow from them of whom I ought to rejoyce, having confidence in you all, that my joy is *the joy* of you all.

4 For out of much affliction and anguiſh of heart, I wrote unto you with many tears; not that you ſhould be grieved, but that ye might know the love which I have more abundantly unto you.

5 But if any have cauſed grief, he hath not grieved me, but in part: that I may not overcharge you all.

‡ Or, *cenſure.* 6 Sufficient to ſuch a man *is* this ‡ puniſhment, which *was inflicted* of many.

7 So that contrariwiſe, *ye ought* rather to forgive *him*, and comfort *him*, leſt perhaps ſuch a one ſhould be ſwallowed up with overmuch ſorrow.

8 Wherefore I beſeech you, that ye would confirm *your* love toward him.

9 For

9 For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether ye be obedient in all things.

10 To whom ye forgive any thing, I *forgive* also: for if I forgave any thing, to whom I forgave *it*, for your sakes *forgave I it*, ‡ in the person of Christ;

11 Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices.

12 Furthermore, when I came to Troas to *preach* Christs gospel, and a door was opened unto me of the Lord,

13 I had no rest in my spirit, because I found not Titus my brother: but taking my leave of them, I went from thence into Macedonia.

14 Now thanks *be* unto God which always causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the savour of his knowledge by us in every place.

15 For we are unto God a sweet savour of Christ, in them that are saved, and in them that perish.

16 To the one *we are* the savour of death unto death; and to the other, the savour of life unto life: and who *is* sufficient for these things?

17 For we are not as many, which ‡ * corrupt the word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speak we in Christ.

CHAP. III.

1 Lest their false teachers should charge him with vain-glory, he sheweth the faith and graces of the Corinthians to be a sufficient commendation of his ministery. 6 Whereupon entring a comparison between the ministers of the law, and of the gospel; 12 he proveth that his ministery is so far the more excellent, as the gospel of life and liberty is more glorious then the law of condemnation.

DO we begin again to commend our selves? or need we, as some *others*, epistles of commendation to you, or *letters* of commendation from you?

2 Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men:

3 *For as much as ye are* manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ, ministred by us, written, not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshly tables of the heart.

4 And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward:

5 Not that we are sufficient of our selves to think any thing as of our selves: but our sufficiency *is* of God.

6 Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament, not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit ‡ giveth life.

7 But if the ministration of death written *and* ingraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses, for the glory of his countenance, which *glory* was to be done away;

8 How shall not the ministration of the spirit be rather glorious?

9 For if the ministration of condemnation *be* glory, much more doth the ministration of righteousness exceed in glory.

10 For even that which was made glorious, had no glory in this respect, by reason of the glory that excelleth.

11 For if that which is done away *was* glorious, much more that which remaineth *is* glorious.

12 Seeing then that *we* have such hope, we use great † plainness of speech.

13 And not as Moses, * *which* put a vail over his face, that the children of Israel could not stedfastly look to the end of that which is abolished. * Exod. 34.33.

14 But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same vail untaken away, in the reading of the old testament; which *vail* is done away in Christ.

15 But even unto this day when Moses is read, the vail is upon their heart.

16 Nevertheless, when it shall turn to the Lord, the vail shall be taken away.

17 Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord *is*, there *is* liberty.

18 But we all with open face, beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, *even* as ‡ by the Spirit of the Lord. ‡ Or, *of the Lord the Spirit.*

CHAP. IV.

1 He declareth how he hath used all sincerity and faithful diligence in preaching the gospel; 7 and how the troubles and persecutions which he daily endured for the same, did redound to the praise of Gods power, 12 to the benefit of the church, 16 and to the apostles own eternal glory.

THerefore seeing we have this ministery, as we have received mercy we faint not:

2 But have renounced the hidden things of † dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceitfully, but by manifestation of the truth, commending our selves to every mans conscience in the sight of God. † Gr. *shames.*

3 But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost:

4 In whom the God of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.

5 For we preach not our selves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and our selves your servants for Jesus sake.

6 For God who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to *give* the light of the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Jesus Christ.

7 But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us.

8 *We are* troubled on every side, yet not distressed; *we are* perplexed, but ‡ not in despair; ‡ Or, *not altogether without help, or means.*

9 Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed;

10 Always bearing about in the body, the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body.

11 For we which live, are alway delivered unto death for Jesus sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh.

12 So then death worketh in us, but life in you.

13 But we having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, * I believed, and therefore have I spoken: we also believe, and therefore speak; * Psal. 116.10.

14 Knowing, that he which raised up the Lord Jesus, shall raise up us also by Jesus, and shall present *us* with you.

15 For all things *are* for your sakes, that the abundant grace, might through the thanksgiving of many, redound to the glory of God.

16 For which cause we faint not, but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.

17 For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding *and* eternal weight of glory;

18 While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the

things which are ſeen, *are* temporal; but the things which are not ſeen, *are* eternal.

CHAP. V.

1 That in his aſſured hope of immortal glory, 9 and in expectance of it, and of the general judgment, he laboureth to keep a good conſcience; 12 not that he may herein boaſt of himſelf, 14 but as one that having received life from Chriſt, endeavoureth to live as a new creature to Chriſt onely; 18 and by his miniſtery of reconciliation to reconcile others alſo in Chriſt to God.

FOr we know, that if our earthly houſe of *this* tabernacle were diſſolved, we have a building of God, an houſe not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.

2 For in this we grone, earneſtly deſiring to be clothed upon with our houſe which is from heaven:

3 If ſo be that being clothed, we ſhall not be found naked.

4 For we that are in *this* tabernacle do grone, being burdened: not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality might be ſwallowed up of life.

5 Now he that hath wrought us for the ſelſſame thing, *is* God, who alſo hath given unto us the earneſt of the Spirit.

6 Therefore *we are* always confident, knowing that whileſt we are at home in the body, we are abſent from the Lord:

7 (For we walk by faith, not by ſight)

8 We are confident, *I ſay*, and willing rather to be abſent from the body, and to be preſent with the Lord.

‡ Or, *endeavour.* 9 Wherefore we ‡ labour, that whether preſent or abſent, we may be accepted of him.

* Rom. 14.10. 10 * For we muſt all appear before the judgement-ſeat of Chriſt, that every one may receive the things *done* in his body, according to that he hath done, whether *it be* good or bad.

11 Knowing therefore the terrour of the Lord, we perſwade men; but we are made manifeſt unto God, and I truſt alſo, are made manifeſt in your conſciences.

12 For we commend not our ſelves again unto you, but give you occaſion to glory on our behalf, that you may have ſomewhat to *anſwer* them which glory † in appearance, and not in heart.

† Gr. *in the face.*

13 For whether we be beſides our ſelves, *it is* to God: or whether we be ſober, *it is* for your cauſe.

14 For the love of God conſtraineth us, becauſe we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead:

15 And *that* he died for all, that they which live, ſhould not henceforth live unto themſelves, but unto him which died for them, and roſe again.

16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the fleſh: yea, though we have known Chriſt after the fleſh, yet now henceforth know we *him* no more.

‡ Or, *let him be.* 17 Therefore if any man *be* in Chriſt, ‡ *he is* a new creature: *old things are paſt away, behold, all things are become new.

* Iſ. 43.19. Rev. 21.5.

18 And all things *are* of God, who hath reconciled us to himſelf by Jeſus Chriſt, and hath given to us the miniſtery of reconciliation;

19 To wit, that God was in Chriſt, reconciling the world unto himſelf, not imputing their treſpaſſes unto them; and hath † committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

† Gr. *put in us.*

20 Now then we are ambaſſadours for Chriſt, as though God did beſeech *you* by us: we pray *you* in Chriſts ſtead, be ye reconciled to God.

21 For he hath made him *to be* ſin for us, who knew no ſin; that we might be made the righteouſneſs of God in him.

CHAP. VI.

That he hath approved himſelf a faithful miniſter of Chriſt, both by his exhortations, 3 and by integrity of life, 4 and by patient enduring all kinds of affliction and diſgraces for the goſpel. 10 Of which he ſpeaketh the more boldly amongſt them, becauſe his heart is open to them; 13 and he expecteth the like affection from them again: 14 exhorting to flee the ſociety and pollution of idolaters, as being themſelves temples of the living God.

WE then *as* workers together *with him*, beſeech *you* alſo, that ye receive not the grace of God in vain:

2 (For he ſaith, * I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of ſalvation have I ſuccoured thee: behold, now *is* the accepted time; behold, now *is* the day of ſalvation) * Iſ. 49.8.

3 * Giving no offence in any thing, that the miniſtery be not blamed: * 1 Cor. 10.32.

4 But in all things † approving our ſelves as the miniſters of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in neceſſities, in diſtreſſes, † Gr. *commending.*

5 In ſtripes, in imprisonments, ‡ in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in faſtings, ‡ Or, *in toſſings to and fro.*

6 By pureneſs, by knowledge, by long-ſuffering, by kindneſs, by the holy Ghoſt, by love unfeigned,

7 By the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteouſneſs on the right hand and on the left,

8 By honour and diſhonour, by evil report and good report: as deceivers, and *yet* true;

9 As unknown, and *yet* well known; as dying, and behold, we live; as chaſtened, and not killed;

10 As ſorrowful, yet alway rejoycing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and *yet* poſſeſſing all things.

11 O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open unto you, our heart is enlarged.

12 Ye are not ſtraitned in us, but ye are ſtraitned in your own bowels.

13 Now for a recompenſe in the ſame, (I ſpeak as unto *my* children) be ye alſo enlarged.

14 Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowſhip hath righteouſneſs with unrighteouſneſs? and what communion hath light with darkneſs?

15 And what concord hath Chriſt with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth, with an infidel?

16 And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for * ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath ſaid, * I will dwell in them, and walk in *them*; and I will be their God, and they ſhall be my people. * 1 Cor. 3.16. * Lev. 26.12.

17 * Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye ſeparate, ſaith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, * Iſ. 52.11.

18 * And will be a Father unto you, and ye ſhall be my ſons and daughters, ſaith the Lord Almighty. * Jer. 31.1.

CHAP. VII.

1 He proceedeth in exhorting them to purity of life, 2 and to bear him like affection as he doth to them. 3 Whereof leſt he might ſeem to doubt, he declareth what comfort he took in his afflictions, by the report which Titus gave of their godly ſorrow, which his former epiſtle had wrought in them, 13 and of their loving kindneſs and obedience towards Titus, anſwerable to his former boaſtings of them.

HAving therefore theſe promiſes, dearly beloved, let us cleanſe our ſelves from all filthineſs

thineſs of the fleſh and ſpirit, perfecting holineſs in the fear of God.

2 Receive us: we have wronged no man, we have corrupted no man, we have defrauded no man.

3 I ſpeak not this to condemn *you*: for I have ſaid before, that you are in our hearts to die and live with *you*.

4 Great *is* my boldneſs of ſpeech toward you, great *is* my glorying of you: I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding joyful in all our tribulation.

5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our fleſh had no reſt, but we were troubled on every ſide; without *were* fightings, within *were* fears.

6 Nevertheleſs, God that comforteth thoſe that are caſt down, comforted us by the coming of Titus:

7 And not by his coming only, but by the conſolation wherewith he was comforted in you, when he told us your earneſt deſire, your mourning, your fervent mind toward me; ſo that I rejoyced the more.

8 For though I made you ſorry with a letter, I do not repent, though I did repent: for I perceive that the ſame epiſtle made you ſorry, though *it were* but for a ſeaſon.

9 Now I rejoyce, not that ye were made ſorry, but that ye ſorrowed to repentance: for ye were made ſorry ‡ after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing.

10 For godly ſorrow worketh repentance to ſalvation not to be repented of: but the ſorrow of the world worketh death.

11 For behold, this ſelf-ſame thing that ye ſorrowed after a godly ſort, what carefulneſs it wrought in you, yea, *what* clearing of your ſelves, yea, *what* indignation, yea, *what* fear, yea, *what* vehement deſire, yea, *what* zeal, yea, *what* revenge: in all things ye have approved your ſelves to be clear in this matter.

12 Wherefore though I wrote unto you, *I did* it not for his cauſe that had done the wrong, nor for his cauſe that ſuffered wrong, but that our care for you in the ſight of God might appear unto you.

13 Therefore we were comforted in your comfort: yea, and exceedingly the more joyed we for the joy of Titus, becauſe his ſpirit was refreſhed by you all.

14 For if I have boaſted any thing to him of you, I am not aſhamed: but as we ſpake all things to you in truth, even ſo our boaſting which I *made* before Titus is found a truth.

15 And his † inward affection is more abundant toward you, whileſt he remembreth the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling you received him.

16 I rejoyce therefore that I have confidence in you in all things.

CHAP. VIII.

1 He ſtirreth them up to a liberal contribution for the poor ſaints at Jeruſalem, by the example of the Macedonians, 7 by commendation of their former forwardneſs, 9 by the example of Chriſt, 14 and by the ſpiritual profit that ſhall redound to themſelves thereby: 16 commending to them the integrity and willingneſs of Titus, and thoſe other brethren, who upon his requeſt, exhortation, and commendation, were purpoſely come to them for this buſineſs.

MOreover brethren, we do you to wit of the grace of God beſtowed on the churches of Macedonia:

2 How that in a great trial of affliction, the abundance of their joy, and their deep poverty, abounded unto the riches of their liberality.

3 For to *their* power (I bear record) yea, and beyond their power *they were* willing of themſelves:

4 Praying us with much intreaty, that we would receive the gift, and *take upon us* the fellowſhip of the miniſtring to the ſaints.

5 And *this they did*, not as we hoped, but firſt gave their own ſelves to the Lord, and unto us by the will of God.

6 Inſomuch that we deſired Titus, that as he had begun, ſo he would alſo finiſh in you the ſame grace alſo.

7 Therefore as ye abound in every thing, in faith, in utterance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your love to us; *ſee* that ye abound in this grace alſo.

8 I ſpeak not by commandment, but by occaſion of the forwardneſs of others, and to prove the ſincerity of your love.

9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, that though he was rich, yet for your ſakes he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich.

10 And herein I give *my* advice: for this is expedient for you, who have begun before, not only to do, but alſo to be † forward a year ago.

† Gr. willing.

11 Now therefore perform the doing of it; that as *there was* a readineſs to will, ſo *there may be* a performance alſo out of that which you have.

12 For if there be firſt a willing mind, *it is* accepted according to that a man hath, *and* not according to that he hath not.

13 For *I mean* not that other men be eaſed, and you burdened:

14 But by an equality, *that* now at this time your abundance *may be a ſupply* for their want, that their abundance alſo may be *a ſupply* for your want, that there may be equality,

15 As it is written, * He that *had gathered* much, had nothing over; and he that *had gathered* little, had no lack.

* Exod. 16. 18.

16 But thanks *be* to God, which put the ſame earneſt care into the heart of Titus for you.

17 For indeed he accepted the exhortation; but being more forward, of his own accord he went unto you.

18 And we have ſent with him the brother, whoſe praiſe *is* in the goſpel, throughout all the churches:

19 (And not *that* only, but who was alſo choſen of the churches to travel with us with this ‡ grace which is adminiſtred by us to the glory of the ſame Lord, and *declaration of* your ready mind)

‡ Or, *gift*.

20 Avoiding this, that no man ſhould blame us in this abundance which is adminiſtred by us:

21 Providing for honeſt things, not only in the ſight of the Lord, but alſo in the ſight of men.

22 And we have ſent with them our brother, whom we have oftentimes proved diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, upon the great confidence which ‡ *I have* in you.

‡ Or, *he hath*.

23 Whether *any do enquire* of Titus, *he is* my partner, and fellow-helper concerning you: or our brethren *be enquired of, they are* the meſſengers of the churches, *and* the glory of Chriſt.

24 Wherefore ſhew ye to them, and before the churches, the proof of your love, and of our boaſting on your behalf.

CHAP. IX.

1 He yieldeth the reaſon why, though he knew their forwardneſs, yet he ſent Titus and his brethren beforehand. 6 And he proceedeth in ſtirring them up to a bountiful alms, as being but a kind of ſowing of ſeed, to which ſhall return a

great increase to them, 13 and occasion a great sacrifice of thanksgiving unto God.

FOr as touching the ministring to the saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you.

2 For I know the forwardness of your mind, for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that Achaia was ready a year ago; and your zeal hath provoked very many.

3 Yet have I sent the brethren, lest our boasting of you should be in vain in this behalf; that, as I said, ye may be ready:

4 Lest haply if they of Macedonia come with me, and find you unprepared, we (that we say not, you) should be ashamed in this same confident boasting.

5 Therefore I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren, that they would go before unto you, and make up beforehand your † bounty, ‡ whereof ye had notice before, that the same might be ready, as a matter of bounty, and not as of covetousness.

† Gr. blessing.
‡ Or, which hath been so much spoken of before.

6 But this I say, He which soweth sparingly, shall reap also sparingly: and he which soweth bountifully, shall reap also bountifully.

7 Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for * God loveth a cheerful giver.

* Prov. 11. 25. Rom. 12. 8. Eccl. 35. 9.

8 And God is able to make all grace abound towards you; that ye always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work:

* Psal. 112. 9.

9 (As it is written, * He hath dispersed abroad, he hath given to the poor: his righteousness remaineth for ever.

* Isa. 55. 10.

10 Now he that * ministreth seed to the sower, both minister bread for your food, and multiply your seed sown, and increase the fruits of your righteousness)

11 Being enriched in every thing to all bountifulness, which causeth through us thanksgiving to God.

12 For the administration of this service, not only supplieth the want of the saints, but is abundant also by many thanksgivings unto God;

13 (Whiles by the experiment of this ministration they glorifie God for your professed subjection unto the gospel of Christ, and for your liberal distribution unto them, and unto all men)

14 And by their prayer for you, which long after you for the exceeding grace of God in you.

15 Thanks be unto God for his unspeakable gift.

CHAP. X.

Against the false apostles, who disgraced the weakness of his person and bodily presence, he setteth out the spiritual might and authority, with which he is armed against all adversary powers; 7 assuring them that at his coming he will be found as mighty in word, as he is now in writing, being absent, 12 and withall taxing them for stretching out themselves beyond their compass, and vaunting themselves in other mens labours.

NOw I Paul my self beseech you, by the meekness and gentleness of Christ, who in ‡ presence am base among you, but being absent am bold toward you:

‡ Or, outward appearance.

2 But I beseech you, that I may not be bold when I am present, with that confidence wherewith I think to be bold against some which ‡ think of us, as if we walked according to the flesh.

‡ Or, reckon.

3 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh:

4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty ‡ through God to the pulling down of strong holds)

‡ Or, to God.

5 Casting down ‡ imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth it self against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ:

‡ Or, reasonings.

6 And having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Do ye look on things after the outward appearance? if any man trust to himself, that he is Christs, let him of himself think this again, that as he is Christs, even so are we Christs.

8 For though I should boast somewhat more of our authority, (which the Lord hath given us for edification, and not for your destruction) I should not be ashamed:

9 That I may not seem as if I would terrifie you by letters.

10 For his letters (say they) are weighty and powerful, but his bodily presence is weak, and his speech contemptible.

11 Let such an one think this, that such as we are in word by letters, when we are absent, such will we be also in deed, when we are present.

12 For we dare not make our selves of the number, or compare our selves with some that commend themselves: but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves among themselves, ‡ are not wise.

‡ Or, understand it not.

13 But we will not boast of things without our measure, but according to the measure of the ‡ rule, which God hath distributed to us, a measure to reach even unto you.

‡ Or, line.

14 For we stretch not our selves beyond our measure, as though we reached not unto you; for we are come as far as to you also in preaching the gospel of Christ:

15 Not boasting of things without our measure, that is, of other mens labours; but having hope, when your faith is increased, that we shall be ‡ enlarged by you according to our rule abundantly,

‡ Or, magnified in you.

16 To preach the gospel in the regions beyond you, and not to boast in another mans ‡ line of things made ready to our hand.

‡ Or, rule.

17 * But he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

* Jer. 9. 24. 1 Cor. 1. 31.

18 For not he that commendeth himself is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth.

CHAP. XI.

1 Out of his jealousie over the Corinthians, who seemed to make more account of the false apostles, then of him, he entreth into a forced commendation of himself, 5 of his equality with the chief apostles, 7 of his preaching the gospel to them freely, and without any their charge, 13 shewing that he was not inferiour to those deceitful workers in any legal prerogative, 23 and in the service of Christ, and in all kind of sufferings for his ministery far superiour.

WOuld to God you could bear with me a little in my folly; and indeed ‡ bear with me.

‡ Or, you bear with me.

2 For I am jealous over you with godly jealousie: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

3 But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.

4 For if he that cometh, preacheth another Jesus whom we have not preached, or if ye receive another spirit, which ye have not received, or another gospel, which ye have not accepted, ye might well bear with him.

5 For

5 For I suppose I was not a whit behind the very chiefest apostles.

6 But though I *be* rude in speech, yet not in knowledge; but we have been throughly made manifest among you in all things.

7 Have I committed an offence in abasing my self that ye might be exalted, because I have preached to you the gospel of God freely?

8 I robbed other churches, taking wages *of them*, to do you service.

9 And when I was present with you and wanted, * I was chargeable to no man: for that which was lacking to me, the brethren which came from Macedonia, supplied: and in all things I have kept my self from being burdensom unto you, and so will I keep *my self*.

10 As the truth of Christ is in me, † no man shall stop me of this boasting in the regions of Achaia.

11 Wherefore? because I love you not? God knoweth.

12 But what I do, that I will do, that I may cut off occasion from them which desire occasion, that wherein they glory, they may be found even as we.

13 For such *are* false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ.

14 And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light.

15 Therefore *it is* no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness: whose end shall be according to their works.

16 I say again, Let no man think me a fool; if otherwise, yet as a fool ‡ receive me, that I may boast my self a little.

17 That which I speak, I speak *it* not after the Lord, but as it were foolishly in this confidence of boasting.

18 Seeing that many glory after the flesh, I will glory also.

19 For ye suffer fools gladly, seeing ye *your selves* are wise.

20 For ye suffer if a man bring you into bondage, if a man devour *you*, if a man take *of you*, if a man exalt himself, if a man smite you on the face.

21 I speak as concerning reproach, as though we had been weak: howbeit, wherein soever any is bold, (I speak foolishly) I am bold also.

22 Are they Hebrews? * so *am* I: are they Israelites? so *am* I: are they the seed of Abraham? so *am* I:

23 Are they ministers of Christ? (I speak as a fool) I *am* more: in labours more abundant, in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequent, in deaths oft.

24 Of the Jews five times received I * fourty *stripes* save one.

25 Thrice was I * beaten with rods, * once was I stoned, thrice I * suffered shipwrack; a night and a day I have been in the deep:

26 In journeying often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils by *mine own* countreymen, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren;

27 In weariness and painfulness, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness.

28 Besides those things that are without, that which cometh upon me daily, the care of all the churches.

29 Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn not?

30 If I must needs glory, I will glory of the things which concern mine infirmities.

31 The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not.

32 * In Damascus the governour under Aretas the king, kept the city of the Damascenes with a garison, desirous to apprehend me: * Acts 9.24.

33 And through a window in a basket was I let down by the wall, and escaped his hands.

CHAP. XII.

1 For commending of his apostleship, though he might glory of his wonderful revelations, 9 yet he rather chooseth to glory of his infirmities, 11 blaming them for forcing him to this vain-boasting. 14 He promiseth to come to them again, but yet altogether in the affection of a father, 20 although he feareth he shall to his grief find many offenders, and publick disorders there.

IT it not expedient for me doubtless to glory: I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord.

2 I knew a man in Christ, above fourteen years ago (whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth) such an one caught up to the third heaven.

3 And I knew such a man (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth)

4 How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not ‡ lawful for a man to utter. ‡ Or, *Possible.*

5 Of such an one will I glory: yet of my self I will not glory, but in mine infirmities.

6 For though I would desire to glory, I shall not be a fool; for I will say the truth: but *now* I forbear, lest any man should think of me above that which he seeth me *to be*, or *that* he heareth of me.

7 And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a * thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure. * See Ezek. 28.24.

8 For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me.

9 And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me.

10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christs sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong.

11 I am become a fool in glorying, ye have compelled me: for I ought to have been commended of you: for in nothing am I behind the very chiefest apostles, though I be nothing.

12 Truly the signs of an apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds.

13 For what is it wherein ye were inferiour to other churches, except *it be* that * I my self was not burdensom to you? forgive me this wrong. * Chap. 11.9.

14 Behold, the third time I am ready to come to you; and I will not be burdensom to you; for I seek not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children.

15 And I will very gladly spend and be spent for † you, though the more abundantly I love you, the less I be loved. † Gr. *your souls.*

16 But be it so, I did not burden you: nevertheless being crafty, I caught you with guile.

17 Did I make a gain of you by any of them whom I sent unto you?

18 I desired Titus, and with *him* I sent a brother: did Titus make a gain of you? walked we not in the same spirit? walked *we* not in the same steps?

19 Again, think ye that we excuse our selves unto you? we speak before God in Christ: but *we do* all things, dearly beloved, for your edifying.

20 For I fear lest when I come I shall not find you such as I would, and *that* I shall be found unto you such as ye would not: lest *there be* debates, envyings, wraths, strifes, back-bitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults:

21 *And* lest when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and that I shall bewail many which have sinned already, and have not repented of the uncleanness, and fornication, and lasciviousness which they have committed.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *He threatneth severity and the power of his apostleship against obstinate sinners: 5 and advising them to a trial of their faith, 7 and to reformation of their sins before his coming, 11 He concludeth his epistle with a general exhortation and a prayer.*

THis *is* the third time I am coming to you: * In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established. * Deut. 19.15.

2 I told you before, and foretell you as if I were present the second time, and being absent, now I write to them which heretofore have sinned, and to all other, that if I come again I will not spare:

3 Since ye seek a proof of Christ speaking in me, which to you-ward is not weak, but is mighty in you.

4 For though he was crucified through weakness, yet he liveth by the power of God: For we also are weak ‡ in him, but we shall live with him by the power of God toward you. ‡ Or, with him.

5 Examine your selves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves: know ye not your own selves, *how* that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?

6 But I trust that ye shall know, that we are not reprobates.

7 Now I pray to God that ye do no evil; not that we should appear approved, but that ye should do that which is honest, though we be as reprobates.

8 For we can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth.

9 For we are glad when we are weak, and ye are strong: and this also we wish, *even* your perfection.

10 Therefore I write these things being absent, lest being present, I should use sharpness, according to the power which the Lord hath given me to edification, and not to destruction.

11 Finally brethren, farewel: Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you.

12 * Greet one another with an holy kiss. * Rom. 16. 16.

13 All the saints salute you.

14 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the holy Ghost, *be* with you all. Amen.

¶ The second *epistle* to the Corinthians was written from Philippi, *a city* of Macedonia, by Titus and Lucas.

¶ The Epistle of PAUL the Apostle, to the GALATIANS.

CHAP. I.

6 *He wondreth that they have so soon left him and the gospel: 8 and accurseth those that preach any other gospel then he did: 11 He learned the gospel, not of men, but of God: 13 and sheweth what he was before his calling, 17 and what he did presently after it.*

PAul an apostle, not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead,

2 And all the brethren which are with me, unto the churches of Galatia:

3 Grace *be* to you, and peace from God the Father, and *from* our Lord Jesus Christ,

4 Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father:

5 To whom *be* glory for ever and ever. Amen.

6 I marvel, that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ, unto another gospel:

7 Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ.

8 But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you, than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.

9 As we said before, so say I now again, If any *man* preach any other gospel unto you, than that ye have received, let him be accursed.

10 For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

11 But I certifie you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me, is not after man.

12 For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught *it*, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.

13 For ye have heard of my conversation in time past, in the Jews religion, *how* that * beyond measure I persecuted the church of God, and wasted it: * Act. 9. 1.

14 And profited in the Jews religion, above many my † equals in mine own nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers. † Gr. equals in years.

15 But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mothers womb, and called *me* by his grace,

16 To reveal his Son in me, that * I might preach him among the heathen; immediately I conferred not with flesh and bloud: * Eph. 3. 8.

17 Neither went I up to Jerusalem, to them which were apostles before me; but I went into Arabia, and returned again unto Damascus.

18 Then after three years I ‡ went up to Jerusalem, to see Peter, and abode with him fifteen days. ‡ Or, returned.

19 But other of the apostles saw I none, save James the Lords brother.

20 Now the things which I write unto you, behold, before God, I lie not.

21 Afterwards I came into the regions of Syria and Cilicia;

22 And was unknown by face unto the churches of Judea, which were in Christ:

23 But they had heard onely, that he which persecuted us in times past, now preacheth the faith which once he destroyed.

24 And they glorified God in me.

CHAP. II.

1 *He sheweth when he went up again to Jerusalem, and for what purpose: 3 and that Titus was not circumcised: 11 and that he resisted Peter, and told him the reason, 14 why he and other, being Jews, do believe in Christ, to be justified by faith and*

and not by works, 20 *and that they live not in sin, who are so justified.*

THen fourteen years after I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, and took Titus with me also.

2 And I went up by revelation, and communicated unto them that gospel, which I preach among the Gentiles, but ‡ privately to them which were of reputation, lest by any means I should run, or had run in vain.

3 But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised:

4 And that because of false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spie out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage:

5 To whom we gave place by subjection, no, not for an hour, that the truth of the gospel might continue with you.

6 But of these, who seemed to be somewhat, (whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me: * God accepteth no mans person) for they who seemed *to be somewhat*, in conference added nothing to me.

7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as *the gospel* of the circumcision was unto Peter;

8 (For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me towards the Gentiles)

9 And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we *should go* unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision.

10 Onely *they would* that we should remember the poor; the same which I also was forward to do.

11 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.

12 For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew, and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision.

13 And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him; insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation.

14 But when I saw that they walked not uprightly, according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before *them* all, If thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?

15 We *who are* Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ; even we have believed in Jesus Christ; that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for * by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

17 But if while we seek to be justified by Christ, we our selves also are found sinners, *is* therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid.

18 For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make my self a transgressour.

19 For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ: Nevertheless, I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

21 I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness *come* by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

CHAP. III.

1 *He asketh what moved them to leave the faith, and hang upon the law.* 6 *They that believe are justified,* 9 *and blessed with Abraham.* 10 *And that he proveth by many reasons.*

O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that you should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you?

2 This onely would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

3 Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?

4 Have ye suffered ‡ so many things in vain? if *it be* yet in vain. ‡ Or, *so great.*

5 He therefore that ministreth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, *doeth he it* by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

6 Even as * Abraham believed God, and it was ‡ accounted to him for righteousness. * Gen. 15.6.

7 Know ye therefore, that they which *are* of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. ‡ Or, *impute.*

8 And the scripture foreseeing that God would justifie the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, *saying*, * In thee shall all nations be blessed. * Gen. 12.3.

9 So then they which be of faith, are blessed with faithful Abraham.

10 For as many as are of the works of the law, are under the curse: for it is written, * Cursed *is* every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them. * Deut. 27. 26.

11 But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, *it is* evident: for, * The just shall live by faith. *Hab. 2. 4. Rom. 1. 17. Heb. 10. 38.

12 And the law is not of faith: but * the man that doeth them, shall live in them. *Lev. 18. 5.

13 Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, * Cursed *is* every one that hangeth on a tree: * Deut. 21. 23.

14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

15 Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; though it be but a mans ‡ covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth or addeth thereto. ‡ Or, *testament.*

16 Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.

17 And this *I say*, *that* the covenant that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect.

18 For if the inheritance *be* of the law, *it is* no more of promise: but God gave *it* to Abraham by promise.

19 Wherefore then *serveth* the law? it was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come, to whom the promise was made, *and it was* ordained by angels in the hand of a mediatour.

20 Now a mediatour is not a *mediatour* of one; but God is one.

21 *Is* the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law.

22 But the scripture hath concluded * all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.
* Rom. 3.9.

23 But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith, which should afterwards be revealed.

24 Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster *to bring us* unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.

25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.

26 For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.

27 For * as many of you as have been baptized into Christ, have put on Christ.
* Rom. 6.3.

28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

29 And if ye *be* Christs, then are ye Abrahams seed, and heirs according to the promise.

CHAP. IV.

1 *We were under the law till Christ came, as the heir is under his guardian till he be of age.* 5 *But Christ freed us from the law:* 7 *therefore we are servants no longer to it.* 14 *He remembreth their good will to him, and his to them;* 22 *and sheweth that we are the sons of Abraham by the free-woman.*

NOw I say, *that* the heir as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all;

2 But is under tutours and governours, until the time appointed of the father.

3 Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the ‡ elements of the world:
‡ Or, rudiments.

4 But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son made of a woman, made under the law,

5 To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

6 And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth * the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.
* Rom. 8.15.

7 Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ.

8 Howbeit, then when ye knew not God, ye did service unto them which by nature are no gods.

9 But now after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye ‡ again to the weak and beggerly ‡ elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage?
‡ Or, back.
‡ Or, rudiments.

10 Ye observe days, and moneths, and times, and years.

11 I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain.

12 Brethren, I beseech you, be as I *am*; for I *am* as ye *are*: ye have not injured me at all.

13 Ye know how through infirmity of the flesh, I preached the gospel unto you at the first.

14 And my temptation which was in my flesh ye despised not, nor rejected; but received me as an angel of God, *even* as Christ Jesus.

15 ‡ Where is then the blessedness you spake of? for I bear you record, that if *it had been* possible, ye would have plucked out your own eyes, and have given them to me.
‡ Or, what was then.

16 Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth?

17 They zealously affect you, *but* not well; yea, they would exclude ‡ you, that you might affect them.
‡ Or, us.

18 But *it is* good to be zealously affected always in a good thing, and not only when I am present with you.

19 My little children, of whom I travail in birth again, until Christ be formed in you,

20 I desire to be present with you now, and to change my voice, for ‡ I stand in doubt of you.
‡ Or, I am perplexed for you.

21 Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law?

22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sons; the one by a bond-maid, the other by a free-woman.

23 But he *who was* of the bond-woman, was born after the flesh: but he of the free-woman *was* by promise.

24 Which things are an allegory; for these are the two ‡ covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendreth to bondage, which is Agar.
‡ Or, testaments.

25 For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and ‡ answereth to Jerusalem, which now is, and is in bondage with her children.
‡ Or, is in the same rank with.

26 But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.

27 For it is written, * Rejoyce, thou barren, that bearest not; break forth and cry, thou that travailest not: for the desolate have many more children then she which hath an husband.
* Isa. 54.1.

28 Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the * children of promise.
* Rom. 9.8.

29 But as then he that was born after the flesh, persecuted him *that was born* after the Spirit, even so *it is* now.

30 Nevertheless, what saith the scripture? * Cast out the bond-woman and her son: for the son of the bond-woman shall not be heir with the son of the free-woman.
* Gen. 21.10.

31 So then, brethren, we are not children of the bond-woman, but of the free.

CHAP. V.

1 *He moveth them to stand in their liberty,* 3 *and not to observe circumcision,* 13 *but rather love, which is the sum of the law:* 19 *He reckoneth up the works of the flesh,* 22 *and the fruits of the Spirit,* 25 *and exhorteth to walk in the Spirit.*

STand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not intangled again with the yoke of bondage.

2 Behold, I Paul say unto you, that * if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.
* Acts 15.1.

3 For I testifie again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtour to do the whole law.

4 Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.

5 For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by faith.

6 For in Jesus Christ, neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but faith which worketh by love.

7 Ye did run well, ‡ who did hinder you, that ye should not obey the truth?
‡ Or, who did drive you back.

8 This perswasion *cometh* not of him that calleth you.

9 * A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.
* 1 Cor. 5.6.

10 I have confidence in you through the Lord, that you will be none otherwise minded: but he that troubleth you, shall bear *his* judgment, whosoever he be.

11 And I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution? then is the offence of the cross ceased.

12 I would they were even cut off which trouble you.

13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only *use* not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another.

14 For all the law is fulfilled in one word, *even* in this; * Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.
* Lev. 19.18. Mat. 22.39. Rom. 13.9.

15 But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed

heed that ye be not consumed one of another.

16 *This* I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ‡ ye shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh.

17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other; so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.

18 But if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not under the law.

19 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are *these*, Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness,

20 Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies,

21 Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things, shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,

23 Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.

24 And they that are Christs, have crucified the flesh, with the ‡ affections and lusts.

25 If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.

26 Let us not be desirous of vain-glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

CHAP. VI.

1 He moveth them to deal mildly with a brother that hath slipped, 2 and to bear one anothers burden, 6 to be liberal to their teachers, 9 and not weary of well-doing. 12 He sheweth what they intend that preach circumcision. 14 He glorieth in nothing, save in the cross of Christ.

BRethren, ‡ if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering thy self, lest thou also be tempted.

2 Bear ye one anothers burdens, and so fulfill the law of Christ.

3 For if a man think himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiveth himself.

4 But let every man prove his own work, and then shall he have rejoycing in himself alone, and not in another.

5 For *every man shall bear his own burden. *1 Cor. 3. 8.

6 * Let him that is taught in the word, communicate unto him that teacheth, in all good things. *1 Cor. 9. 14.

7 Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.

8 For he that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption: but he that soweth to the Spirit, shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.

9 And * let us not be weary in well-doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not. *2 Thes. 3. 13.

10 As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the houshold of faith.

11 Ye see how large a letter *I* have written unto you with mine own hand.

12 As many as desire to make a fair shew in the flesh, they constrain you to be circumcised; onely lest they should suffer persecution for the cross of Christ.

13 For neither they themselves who are circumcised keep the law; but desire to have you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh.

14 But God forbid that I should glory save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, ‡ by whom the world is crucified unto me, & I unto the world. ‡ Or, whereby.

15 For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

16 And as many as walk according to this rule, peace *be* on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.

17 From henceforth let no man trouble me; for I bear in my body the marks of the Lord Jesus.

18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Unto the Galatians, written from Rome.

¶ The Epistle of PAUL the Apostle, to the EPHESIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 After the salutation, 3 and thanksgiving for the Ephesians, 4 he treateth of our election, 6 and adoption by grace, 11 which is the true & proper fountain of mans salvation: 13 And because the height of this mystery cannot easily be attained unto, 16 he prayeth that they may come 18 to the full knowledge and possession thereof in Christ.

PAul an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus:

2 Grace *be* to you and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 *Blessed *be* the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly ‡ *places* in Christ:

4 According as he hath chosen us in him, before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy, and without blame before him in love:

5 Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will,

6 To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved:

7 In whom we have redemption through his bloud, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;

8 Wherein he hath abounded towards us in all wisdom and prudence,

9 Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure, which he hath purposed in himself:

10 That in the dispensation of the fulness of times, he might gather togother in one all things in Christ, both which are in †heaven, and which are on earth, *even* in him: † Gr. the heavens.

11 In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will:

12 That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first ‡ trusted in Christ.

13 In whom ye also *trusted* after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, † Or, ‡ hoped.

14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.

15 Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints,

16 Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers;

17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation, ‡ in the knowledge of him: ‡ Or, *for the acknowledgment.*

18 The

18 The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints,

19 And what *is* the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working † of his mighty power;

† Gr. of the might of his power.

20 Which he wrought in Christ when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly *places*,

21 Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come:

* Psal. 8. 6.

22 And * hath put all things under his feet, and gave him *to be* the head over all things to the church,

23 Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

CHAP. II.

1 By comparing what we were by 3 nature, with what we are 5 by grace, 10 he declareth that we are made for good works; 11 and 13 being brought near by Christ, should not live as 11 Gentiles and 12 forreiners in time past, but as 19 citizens with the saints, and the family of God.

* Col. 2. 13.

AND * you *hath he quickned* who were dead in trespasses and sins,

2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience.

3 Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past, in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling † the desires of the flesh, and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.

† Gr. the wills.

4 But God who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us,

5 Even when we were dead in sins hath quickned us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved)

6 And hath raised *us* up together, and made *us* sit together in heavenly *places* in Christ Jesus.

7 That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace, in *his* kindness towards us, through Christ Jesus.

8 For by grace are ye saved, through faith; and that not of your selves: *it is* the gift of God:

9 Not of works, lest any man should boast:

10 For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before † ordained that we should walk in them.

‡ Or, prepared.

11 Wherefore remember that ye *being* in time past Gentiles in the flesh, who are called uncircumcision by that which is called the circumcision in the flesh made by hands;

12 That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world:

13 But now in Christ Jesus, ye who sometimes were far off, are made nigh by ‡ the blood of Christ.

14 For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle-wall of partition between us;

15 Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, *even* the law of commandments, *contained* in ordinances, for to make in himself, of twain, one new man, *so* making peace;

16 And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity ‡ thereby:

‡ Or, in himself.

17 And came, and preached peace to you which were afar off, & to them that were nigh.

18 For * through him we both have an access by one Spirit unto the Father.

* Rom. 5.

19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and forreiners, but fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the houshold of God;

20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner-*stone*;

21 In whom all the building fitly framed together, groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord:

22 In whom you also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

CHAP. III.

5 The hidden mystery, 6 that the Gentiles should be saved, 3 was made known to Paul by revelation; 8 and to him was that grace given, that 9 he should preach it: 13 He desireth them not to faint for his tribulation, 14 and prayeth 19 that they may perceive the great love of Christ toward them.

FOr this cause, I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles;

2 If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is given me to youward:

3 How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery, (as I wrote ‡ afore in few words,

‡ Or, a little before.

4 Whereby when ye read ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ)

5 Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit;

6 That the Gentiles should be fellow-heirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ, by the gospel:

7 Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me by the effectual working of his power.

8 Unto me, who am less then the least of all saints, is this grace given, that * I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ;

* Gal. 1. 16.

9 And to make all men see, what *is* the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world, hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ:

10 To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly *places*, might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God,

11 According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord:

12 In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him.

13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory.

14 For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,

15 Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named,

16 That he would grant you according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man;

17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye being rooted and grounded in love,

18 May be able to comprehend with all saints, what *is* the breadth, and length, and depth, and height;

19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.

20 Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us,

21 Unto

21 Unto him *be* glory in the church by Christ Jesus, throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

CHAP. IV.

1 He exhorteth to unity; 7 and declareth that God therefore giveth divers 11 *gifts unto men, that his church might be* 13 *edified and* 16 *grown up in Christ.* 18 *He calleth them from the impurity of the Gentiles,* 24 *to put on the new man,* 25 *to cast off lying, and* 29 *corrupt communication.*

I Therefore the prisoner ‡ of the Lord, beseech you that ye * walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called,

2 With all lowliness and meekness, with long-suffering, forbearing one another in love;

3 Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

4 *There is* one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling;

5 One Lord, one faith, one baptism,

6 * One God and Father of all, who *is* above all, and through all, and in you all.

7 But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

8 Wherefore he saith, * When he ascended up on high, he led ‡captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

9 (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?

10 He that descended, is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might ‡ fill all things.)

11 * And he gave some, apostles: and some, prophets: and some, evangelists: and some, pastours and teachers;

12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministery, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

13 Till we all come ‡ in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the ‡ stature of the fulness of Christ:

14 That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, *and* cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive:

15 But * ‡ speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, *even* Christ:

16 * From whom the whole body fitly joyned together, and compacted by that which every joynt supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body, unto the edifying of it self in love.

17 This I say therefore and testifie in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind,

18 Having the understanding darkned, being alienated from the life of God, through the ignorance that is in them, because of the * ‡ blindness of their heart:

19 Who being past feeling, have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness.

20 But ye have not so learned Christ;

21 If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus

22 That ye * put off concerning the former conversation, the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts:

23 And * be renewed in the spirit of your mind

24 And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness, and ‡ true holiness.

25 Wherefore putting away lying, * speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another. * Zech. 8. 16.

26 * Be ye angry and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath: * Psal. 4. 4

27 * Neither give place to the devil. * James 4. 7.

28 Let him that stole, steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with *his* hands the thing which is good, that he may have ‡ to give to him that needeth. ‡ Or, *to distribute.*

29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good ‡ to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers. ‡ Or, *to edifie profitably.*

30 And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil-speaking be put away from you, with all malice.

32 And * be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christs sake hath forgiven you. * 2 Cor. 2. 10. Col. 3. 12, 13.

CHAP. V.

2 After general exhortations to love, 3 *to flee fornication,* 4 *and all uncleanness,* 7 *not to converse with the wicked,* 15 *to walk warily, and to be* 18 *filled with the Spirit,* 22 *he descendeth to the particular duties, how wives ought to obey their husbands,* 25 *and husbands ought to love their wives,* 32 *even as Christ doth his church.*

BE ye therefore followers of God, as dear children;

2 And * walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet-smelling savour. * John 13. 34. & 15. 12.

3 But * fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named amongst you, as becometh saints: * Col. 3. 5. 1 Thess. 4. 3, &c.

4 Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks.

5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ, and of God.

6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of ‡ disobedience. ‡ Or, *unbelief.*

7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them.

8 For ye were sometimes darkness, but now *are ye* light in the Lord: walk as children of light,

9 (For the fruit of the Spirit *is* in all goodness, and righteousness, and truth)

10 Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord.

11 And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.

12 For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret.

13 But all things that are ‡ reproved, are made manifest by the light: for whatsoever doth make manifest, is light. ‡ Or, *discovered.*

14 Wherefore he saith, * Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light. * Isa. 60. 1.

15 * See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise, * Col. 4. 5.

16 Redeeming the time, because the days are evil.

17 Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord *is*.

18 And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit:

19 Speaking to your selves in psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord,

20 Giving

20 Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ;
21 Submitting your selves one to another in
* Col. 3. 8. the fear of God.
Tit. 2. 5. 22 * Wives, submit your selves unto your own
1 Pet. 3. 1. husbands, as unto the Lord.
* 1 Cor. 11. 3. 23 For * the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the Saviour of the body.
24 Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so *let* the wives *be* to their own husbands in every thing.
* Col. 3. 19 25 * Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it:
26 That he might sanctifie and cleanse it with the washing of water, by the word,
27 That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.
28 So ought men to love their wives, as their own bodies: he that loveth his wife, loveth himself.
29 For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church:
30 For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.
* Gen. 2. 24. Mat. 19. 5. Mar. 10. 7. * 1 Cor. 6. 16. 31 * For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joyned unto his wife, and they * two shall be one flesh.
32 This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.
33 Nevertheless, let every one of you in particular, so love his wife even as himself; and the wife *see* that she reverence *her* husband.

CHAP. VI.

1 The duty of children toward their parents, 5 of servants toward their masters. 10 Our life is a warfare, 12 not only against flesh and blood, but also spiritual enemies. 13 The compleat armour of a Christian, 18 and how it ought to be used. 21 Tychicus is commended.

* Col. 3. 20. * CHildren, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right.
* Exod. 20. 12. Deut. 5. 16. Eccles. 3. 8 Mat. 15. 4. Mar. 7. 10. * Col. 3. 21 * Col. 3. 22. Tit. 9. 8. 1 Pet. 2. 18. 2 * Honour thy father and mother, (which is the first commandment with promise)
3 That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the earth.
4 And * ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.
5 * Servants, be obedient to them that are *your* masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in singleness of your heart, as unto Christ:
6 Not with eye-service, as men-pleasers, but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart;
7 With good will doing service, as to the Lord, and not to men:
8 Knowing that whatsoever good thing any man doeth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether *he be* bond or free.
9 And ye masters, do the same things unto them, ‡ forbearing threatning: knowing that ‡ your Master also is in heaven, * neither is there respect of persons with him.
10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.
11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.
12 For we wrestle not against flesh and bloud, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against ‡ spiritual wickedness in ‡ high *places*.
13 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and ‡ having done all to stand.
14 Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breast-plate of righteousness;
15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace;
16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.
17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:
18 Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance, and supplication for all saints;
19 * And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel:
20 For which I am an ambassadour ‡ in bonds: that ‡ therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.
21 But that ye also may know my affairs, *and* how I do, Tychicus a beloved brother and faithful minister in the Lord shall make known to you all things:
22 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our affairs, and that he might comfort your hearts.
23 Peace *be* to the brethren, and love with faith from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.
24 Grace *be* with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ ‡ in sincerity. Amen.

‡ Or, moderating.
‡ Some read, both your and their master.
* Wisd. 6. 7. Eccius. 35. 12. Rom. 2. 11.
‡ Or, wicked spirits.
‡ Or, heavenly.
‡ Or, having overcome all.
* Col. 4. 3. 2 Thes. 3. 1
‡ Or, in a chain.
‡ Or, thereof.
‡ Or, with incorruption.

¶ Written from Rome unto the Ephesians, by Tychicus.

¶ The Epistle of PAUL the Apostle, to the PHILIPPIANS.

CHAP. I.

3 He testifieth his thankfulness to God, and his love toward them, for the fruits of their faith, and fellowship in his sufferings, 9 daily praying to him for their increase in grace. 12 He sheweth what good the faith of Christ had received by his troubles at Rome, 21 and how ready he is to glorifie Christ, either by his life or death: 27 exhorting them to unity, 28 and to fortitude in persecution.

PAul and Timotheus the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons:
2 Grace *be* unto you and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Jesus Christ.
3 I thank my God upon every ‡ remembrance of you,
4 (Always in every prayer of mine for you all making request with joy)
5 For your fellowship in the gospel from the first day until now;
6 Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you, ‡ will perform *it* until the day of Jesus Christ:
7 Even as it is meet for me to think this of you all, because ‡ I have you in my heart, inasmuch as both in my bonds, and in the defence and confirmation of the gospel, ye all are ‡ partakers of my grace.

‡ Or, mention.
‡ Or will finish it.
‡ Or, you have me in your heart.
‡ Or, partakers with me of grace.

8 For God is my record, how greatly I long after you all, in the bowels of Jeſus Chriſt.
9 And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge, and *in* all ‡ judgement;
10 That ye may ‡ approve things that ‡ are excellent; that ye may be ſincere, and without offence till the day of Chriſt;
11 Being filled with the fruits of righteouſneſs, which are by Jeſus Chriſt unto the glory and praiſe of God.
12 But I would ye ſhould underſtand, brethren, that the things *which happened* unto me, have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the goſpel:
13 So that my bonds ‡ in Chriſt are manifeſt in all ‡ the palace, and ‡ in all other *places*;
14 And many of the brethren in the Lord waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bold to ſpeak the word without fear.
15 Some indeed preach Chriſt even of envy and ſtrife; and ſome alſo of good will.
16 The one preach Chriſt of contention, not ſincerely, ſuppoſing to adde affliction to my bonds:
17 But the other of love, knowing that I am ſet for the defence of the goſpel.
18 What then? notwithſtanding every way, whether in pretence, or in truth, Chriſt is preached; and I therein do rejoyce, yea, and will rejoyce.
19 For I know that this ſhall turn to my ſalvation through your prayer, and the ſupply of the Spirit of Jeſus Chriſt.
20 According to my earneſt expectation, and my hope, that in nothing I ſhall be aſhamed, but *that* with all boldneſs, as always, *ſo* now alſo Chriſt ſhall be magnified in my body, whether *it be* by life or by death.
21 For to me to live *is* Chriſt, and to die *is* gain.
22 But if I live in the fleſh, this *is* the fruit of my labour: yet what I ſhall chuſe, I wot not.
23 For I am in a ſtrait betwixt two, having a deſire to depart, and to be with Chriſt; which is far better:
24 Nevertheleſs, to abide in the fleſh, *is* more needful for you.
25 And having this confidence, I know that I ſhall abide and continue with you all, for your furtherance and joy of faith:
26 That your rejoycing may be more abundant in Jeſus Chriſt for me, by my coming to you again.
27 Onely * let your converſation be as it becometh the goſpel of Chriſt: that whether I come and ſee you, or elſe be abſent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye ſtand faſt in one ſpirit, with one mind, ſtriving together for the faith of the goſpel;
28 And in nothing terrified by your adverſaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of ſalvation, and that of God.
29 For unto you it is given, in the behalf of Chriſt, not only to believe on him, but alſo to ſuffer for his ſake;
30 Having the ſame conflict which ye ſaw in me, and now hear *to be* in me.

CHAP. II.

He exhorteth them to unity, and to all humbleneſs of mind, by the example of Chriſt's humility and exaltation, 12 to a careful proceeding in the way of ſalvation, that they be as lights to the wicked world, 16 and comforts to him their apoſtle, who is now ready to be offered up to God: 19 He hopeth to ſend Timothy to them, whom he greatly commendeth, 25 as Epaphroditus alſo, whom he preſently ſendeth to them.

IF *there be* therefore any conſolation in Chriſt, if any comfort of love, if any fellowſhip of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies;
2 Fulfill ye my joy, that ye be like-minded, having the ſame love, *being* of one accord, of one mind.
3 *Let* nothing *be done* through ſtrife, or vainglory, but in lowlineſs of mind let each eſteem other better than themſelves.
4 Look not every man on his own things, but every man alſo on the things of others.
5 Let this mind be in you, which was alſo in Chriſt Jeſus:
6 Who being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God:
7 But made himſelf of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a ſervant, and was made in the ‡ likeneſs of men:
8 And being found in faſhion as a man, he humbled himſelf, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the croſs.
9 Wherefore God alſo hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name:
10 That at the name of Jeſus every knee ſhould bow, of *things* in heaven, and *things* in earth, and *things* under the earth;
11 And that every tongue ſhould confeſs that Jeſus Chriſt *is* Lord, to the glory of God the Father.
12 Wherefore my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my preſence onely, but now much more in my abſence; work out your own ſalvation with fear and trembling.
13 For *it is* God that worketh in you, both to will and to do of *his* good pleaſure.
14 Do all things without murmurings and diſputings:
15 That ye may be blameleſs and ‡ harmleſs, the ſons of God, without rebuke, in the midſt of a crooked and perverſe nation, among whom ‡ ye ſhine as lights in the world:
16 Holding forth the word of life; that I may rejoyce in the day of Chriſt, that I have not run in vain, neither laboured in vain.
17 Yea, and if I be † offered upon the ſacrifice and ſervice of your faith, I joy, and rejoyce with you all.
18 For the ſame cauſe alſo do ye joy, and rejoyce with me.
19 ‡ But I truſt in the Lord Jeſus, to ſend Timotheus ſhortly unto you, that I alſo may be of good comfort, when I know your ſtate.
20 For I have no man ‡ like-minded, who will naturally care for your ſtate.
21 For all * ſeek their own, not the things which are Jeſus Chriſts.
22 But ye know the proof of him, that as a ſon *with* the father, he hath ſerved with me in the goſpel.
23 Him therefore I hope to ſend preſently, ſo ſoon as I ſhall ſee how it will go with me.
24 But I truſt in the Lord, that I alſo my ſelf ſhall come ſhortly.
25 Yet I ſuppoſed it neceſſary to ſend to you Epaphroditus, my brother, and companion in labour, and fellow-ſouldier, but your meſſenger, and he that miniſtred to my wants.
26 For he longed after you all, and was full of heavineſs, becauſe that ye had heard that he had been ſick.
27 For indeed he was ſick nigh unto death: but God had mercy on him; and not on him onely, but on me alſo, leſt I ſhould have ſorrow upon ſorrow.

28 I ſent

‡ Or, *habit.*
‡ Or, *ſhine ye.*
† Or, *poured forth.*
‡ Or, *moreover.*
‡ Or, *ſo dear unto me.*
* 1 Cor. 10. 24.

28 I sent him therefore the more carefully, that when ye see him again, ye may rejoyce, and that I may be the less sorrowful.

29 Receive him therefore in the Lord with all gladness, and ‡ hold such in reputation:

‡ Or, honour such.

30 Because for the work of Christ he was nigh unto death, not regarding his life to supply your lack of service toward me.

CHAP. III.

1 He warneth them to beware of the false teachers of the circumcision, 4 shewing that himself hath greater cause then they, to trust in the righteousness of the law, 7 which notwithstanding he counteth as dung and loss, to gain Christ and his righteousness, 12 therein acknowledging his own imperfection. 15 He exhorteth them to be thus minded, 17 and to imitate him, 18 and to decline the ways of carnal Christians.

FInally, my brethren, rejoyce in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed *is* not grievous, but for you *it is* safe.

2 Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision.

3 For we are the circumcision which worship God in the spirit, and rejoyce in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh:

4 Though I might also have confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more:

5 Circumcised the eighth day, * of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the law, *a Pharisee;

* 2 Cor. 11. 22.
* Acts 23. 6.

6 Concerning zeal, persecuting the church; touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless.

7 But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ.

8 Yea doubtless, and I do count all things but loss, for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung that I may win Christ,

9 And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which *is* of the law, but that which *is* through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith:

10 That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death;

11 If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead.

12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.

13 Brethren, I count not my self to have apprehended: but *this* one thing I *do*, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before,

14 I press toward the mark, for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

15 Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you.

16 Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us mind the same things.

17 Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so, as ye have us for an ensample.

18 (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, *that they are* the enemies of the cross of Christ:

19 Whose end *is* destruction, whose God *is their* belly: and *whose* glory *is* in their shame, who mind earthly things.)

20 For our conversation is in heaven, from whence also we * look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ:

* 1 Cor. 7.

21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

& Tit. 2. 13.

CHAP. IV.

1 From particular admonitions 4 he proceedeth to general exhortations, 10 shewing how he rejoyced at their liberality towards him lying in prison, not so much for the supply of his own wants, as for the grace of God in them: 19 and so he concludeth with prayer and salutations.

THerefore, my brethren, dearly beloved and longed for, my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lord, *my* dearly beloved.

2 I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, that they be of the same mind in the Lord.

3 And I intreat thee also, true yoke-fellow, help those women which laboured with me in the gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellow-labourers, whose names *are* in * the book of life.

* Rev. 3. 5. & 20. 12. & 21. 27.

4 Rejoyce in the Lord alway: *and* again I say, Rejoyce.

5 Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord *is* at hand.

6 Be careful for nothing: but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known unto God.

7 And the peace of God which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.

8 Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things *are* ‡honest, whatsoever things *are* just, whatsoever things *are* pure, whatsoever things *are* lovely, whatsoever things *are* of good report; if *there be* any vertue, and if *there be* any praise, think on these things.

‡ Or, venerable.

9 Those things which ye have both learned and received, and heard and seen in me, do: and the God of peace shall be with you.

10 But I rejoyced in the Lord greatly, that now at the last your care of me ‡ hath flourished again, wherein ye were also careful, but ye lacked opportunity.

‡ Or, *is revived.*

11 Not that I speak in respect of want; for I have learned in whatsoever state I am, *therewith* to be content.

12 I know both *how* to be abased, and I know *how* to abound: every where, and in all things I am instructed, both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need.

13 I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.

14 Notwithstanding, ye have well done, that ye did communicate with my affliction.

15 Now ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no church communicated with me, as concerning giving and receiving, but ye only.

16 For even in Thessalonica, ye sent once and again unto my necessity.

17 Not because I desire a gift: but I desire fruit that may abound to your account.

18 But ‡ I have all, and abound: I am full, having received of Epaphroditus the things *which were sent* from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well-pleasing to God.

‡ Or, *I have received all.*

19 But my God shall supply all your need, according to his riches, in glory, by Christ Jesus.

20 Now

20 Now unto God and our Father *be* glory for ever and ever. Amen.
21 Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren which are with me greet you.
22 All the saints salute you, chiefly they that are of Cesars household.
23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to the Philippians from Rome, by Epaphroditus.

¶ The Epistle of PAUL the Apostle, to the COLOSSIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 *After salutation, he thanketh God for their faith,* 7 *confirmeth the doctrine of Epaphras,* 9 *prayeth further for their increase in grace,* 14 *describeth the true Christ,* 21 *encourageth them to receive Jesus Christ, and commendeth his own ministery.*

PAUL an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timotheus *our* brother,
2 To the saints and faithful brethren in Christ, which are at Colosse, grace *be* unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.
3 We give thanks to God, and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying always for you:
4 Since we heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of the love *which ye have* to all the saints.
5 For the hope which is laid up for you in heaven, whereof ye heard before in the word of the truth of the gospel:
6 Which is come unto you, as *it is* in all the world, and bringeth forth fruit, as *it doth* also in you, since the day ye heard *of it*, and knew the grace of God in truth.
7 As ye also learned of Epaphras our dear fellow-servant, who is for you a faithful minister of Christ:
8 Who also declared unto us your love in the Spirit.
9 For this cause we also, since the day we heard *it*, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wisdom and spiritual understanding;
10 That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God;
11 Strengthened with all might according to his glorious power, unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness;
12 Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light:
13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated *us* into the kingdom of ‡ his dear Son:
14 In whom we have redemption through his blood, *even* the forgiveness of sins.
15 Who is * the image of the invisible God, the first-born of every creature:
16 For * by him were all things created that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether *they be* thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him.
17 * And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.
18 And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, * the first-born from the dead; that ‡ in all things he might have the preeminence.
19 For it pleased *the Father* that in him should all fulness dwell;
20 And (‡ having made peace through the blood of his cross) by him to reconcile all things unto himself, by him, *I say*, whether *they be* things in earth or things in heaven.
21 And you that were sometime alienated and enemies ‡ in *your* mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled,
22 In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable, and unreproveable in his sight:
23 If ye continue in the faith, grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, *and* which was preached to every creature which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister:
24 Who now rejoyce in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the church:
25 Whereof I am made a minister according to the dispensation of God, which is given to me for you, ‡ to fulfill the word of God;
26 *Even* * the mystery which hath been hid from ages, and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints:
27 To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the gentiles; which is Christ ‡ in you, the hope of glory:
28 Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus:
29 Whereunto I also labour, striving according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

‡ Gr, *by your mind in wicked works.*

‡ Or, *fully to preach the word of God.* Rom. 15. 19. * Rom. 16. 25. Eph. 3. 9. ‡ Or, *among*

CHAP. II.

1 *He still exhorteth them to be constant in Christ;* 8 *to beware of philosophy, and vain traditions;* 18 *worshipping of angels,* 20 *and legal ceremonies, which are ended in Christ.*

FOR I would that ye knew what great ‡ conflict I have for you, and *for* them at Laodicea, and *for* as many as have not seen my face in the flesh:
2 That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgment of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ;
3 ‡ In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.
4 And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with enticing words.
5 For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, joying and beholding your order, and the stedfastness of your faith in Christ.
6 As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, *so* walk ye in him:
7 Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving.
8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the ‡ rudiments of the world, and not after Christ:
9 For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.
10 And ye are compleat in him, which is the head of all principality and power.
11 In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh, by the circumcision of Christ:
12 * Buried

‡ Or, *fear, or, care.*

‡ Or, *wherein.*

‡ Or, *elements.*

* Rom. 6. 4. 12 * Buried with him in baptism, wherein also you are risen with *him* through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

* Eph. 2. 1. 13 * And you being dead in your sins, and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses,

14 Blotting out the hand-writing of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross:

15 And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them ‡ in it.

‡ Or, *in himself.* 16 Let no man therefore judge you ‡ in meat or in drink, or ‡ in respect of an holy-day, or of the new-moon, or of the sabbath-*days*:

‡ Or, *for eating and drinking.* 17 Wich are a shadow of things to come; but the body *is* of Christ.

‡ Or, *in part.* 18 Let no man ‡ beguile you of your reward, † in a voluntary humility, and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puft up by his fleshly mind;

† Gr. *being a voluntary in humility.* 19 And not holding the head, from which all the body by joynts and bands having nourishment ministred, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God.

‡ Or, *elements.* 20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the ‡ rudiments of the world; why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances,

21 (Touch not, taste not, handle not:

22 Which all are to perish with the using) after the commandments and doctrines of men?

‡ Or, *punishing, or not sparing* 23 Which things have indeed a shew of wisdom in will-worship, and humility, and ‡ neglecting of the body, not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.

CHAP. III.

1 He sheweth where we should seek Christ: 5 He exhorteth to mortification, 10 to put off the old man, and to put on Christ, 12 exhorting to charity, humility, and other several duties.

IF ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God.

‡ Or, *mind* 2 Set your ‡ affection on things above, not on things on the earth.

3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

4 When Christ *who is* our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory.

* Eph. 5. 3. 5 Mortifie therefore your members which are upon the earth; * fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry:

6 For which things sake, the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience.

7 In the which ye also walked sometime, when ye lived in them.

8 But now you also put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds;

10 And have put on the new *man*, which is renewed in knowledge, after the image of him that created him.

11 Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, barbarian, Scythian, bond *nor* free: but Christ *is* all, and in all.

12 Put on therefore (as the elect of God, holy and beloved) bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, long-suffering;

‡ Or, *complaint.* 13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a ‡ quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also *do* ye.

14 And above all these things, *put on* charity, which is the bond of perfectness.

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts; to the which also ye are called in one body: and be ye thankful.

16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

17 And * whatsoever ye do in word or deed, *do* all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him. * 1 Cor. 10. 31.

18 * Wives, submit your selves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord. * Eph. 5. 22.

19 * Husbands, love *your* wives, and be not bitter against them. Tit. 2. 5. 1 Pet. 3.

20 * Children, obey *your* parents in all things: for this is well-pleasing unto the Lord. * Eph. 5. 25.

21 * Fathers, provoke not your children *to anger*, lest they be discouraged. * Eph. 6.

22 * Servants, obey in all things *your* masters according to the flesh; not with eye-service, as men-pleasers, but in singleness of heart, fearing God: * Eph. 6. Tit. 2. 9.

23 And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men;

24 Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ.

25 But he that doeth wrong, shall receive *for* the wrong which he hath done: and * there is no respect of persons. * Rom. 2. 11. Eph. 6. 9.

CHAP. IV.

1 He exhorteth them to be fervent in prayer, 5 to walk wisely toward them that are not yet come to the true knowledge of Christ. 10 He saluteth them, and wisheth them all prosperity.

MAsters, give unto *your* servants that which is just and equal, knowing that ye also have a Master in heaven.

2 * Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving: * Luke 18. 1.

3 * Withall, praying also for us, that God would open unto us a door of utterance, to speak the mystery of Christ, for which I am also in bonds: * 1 Thes. 5. 17. * Eph. 6. 19.

4 That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speak. 2 Thes. 3.

5 * Walk in wisdom toward them that are without, redeeming the time. * Eph 5. 15.

6 Let your speech *be* alway with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer every man.

7 All my state shall Tychicus declare unto you, *who is* a beloved brother, and a faithful minister, and fellow-servant in the Lord:

8 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that he might know your estate, and comfort your hearts:

9 With Onesimus a faithful and beloved brother, who is *one* of you. They shall make known unto you all things which *are done* here.

10 Aristarchus my fellow-prisoner saluteth you, and Marcus sisters son to Barnabas, (touching whom ye received commandments; if he come unto you, receive him)

11 And Jesus which is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These only *are my* fellow-workers unto the kingdom of God, which have been a comfort unto me.

12 Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant of Christ, saluteth you, always ‡ labouring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect and ‡ complete in all the will of God. ‡ Or, *fervent.* ‡ Or, *filled.*

13 For I bear him record, that he hath a great

great zeal for you, and them that are in Laodicea, and them in Hierapolis.

14 Luke the beloved phyſician, and Demas greet you.

15 Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the church which *is* in his houſe.

16 And when this epiſtle is read amongſt you, cauſe that it be read alſo in the church of the Laodiceans; and that ye likewiſe read the epiſtle from Laodicea.

17 And ſay to Archippus, Take heed to the miniſtery which thou haſt received in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.

18 The ſalutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bonds. Grace *be* with you. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to the Coloſſians, by Tychicus and Oneſimus.

¶ The firſt Epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle, to the THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 The Theſſalonians are given to underſtand both how mindful of them S. Paul was at all times in thankſgiving, and prayer; 5 and alſo how well he was perſwaded of the truth, and ſinceritу of their faith, and converſion to God.

PAul, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Theſſalonians; *which is* in God the Father, and *in* the Lord Jeſus Chriſt: Grace *be* unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

2 * We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers,

3 Remembring without ceaſing your work of faith, and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, in the ſight of God and our Father:

4 Knowing, brethren ‡ beloved, your election of God.

5 For our goſpel came not unto you in word onely, but alſo in power, and in the holy Ghoſt, and in much aſſurance; as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your ſake.

6 And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction, with joy of the holy Ghoſt:

7 So that ye were enſamples to all that believe in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you ſounded out the word of the Lord, not onely in Macedonia and Achaia, but alſo in every place your faith to God-ward is ſpread abroad, ſo that we need not to ſpeak any thing.

9 For they themſelves ſhew of us, what manner of entring in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from idols, to ſerve the living and true God,

10 And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raiſed from the dead, *even* Jeſus which delivered us from the wrath to come.

CHAP. II.

1 In what manner the goſpel was brought and preached to the Theſſalonians, and in what ſort alſo they received it. 18 A reaſon is rendred both why S. Paul was ſo long abſent from them, and alſo why he was ſo deſirous to ſee them.

FOr your ſelves, brethren, know our entrance in unto you, that it was not in vain.

2 But even after that we had ſuffered before, and were ſhamefully entreated, as ye know, at * Philippi, we were bold in our God to ſpeak unto you the goſpel of God with much contention.

3 For our exhortation *was* not of deceit, nor of uncleanneſs, nor in guile:

4 But as we were allowed of God to be put in truſt with the goſpel, even ſo we ſpeak, not as pleaſing men, but God, which trieth our hearts.

5 For neither at any time uſed we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloke of covetouſneſs; God *is* witneſs.

6 Nor of men ſought we glory, neither of you, nor yet of others, when we might have ‡ been burdenſom, as the apoſtles of Chriſt.

7 But we were gentle among you, even as a nurſe cheriſheth her children:

8 So being affectionately deſirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the goſpel of God onely, but alſo our own ſouls, becauſe ye were dear unto us.

9 For ye remember, brethren, our labour and travel: for * labouring night and day, becauſe we would not be chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you the goſpel of God.

10 Ye *are* witneſſes, and God *alſo*, how holily, and juſtly, and unblameably we behaved our ſelves among you that believe:

11 As you know, how we exhorted and comforted, and charged every one of you (as a father *doth* his children)

12 * That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdom and glory.

13 For this cauſe alſo thank we God without ceaſing, becauſe when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received *it* not *as* the word of men, but (as it is in truth) the word of God, which effectually worketh alſo in you that believe.

14 For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God, which in Judea are in Chriſt Jeſus: for ye alſo have ſuffered like things of your own countreymen, even as they *have* of the Jews:

15 Who both killed the Lord Jeſus, and their own prophets, and have ‡ perſecuted us; and they pleaſe not God, and are contrary to all men:

16 Forbidding us to ſpeak to the Gentiles, that they might be ſaved, to fill up their ſins alway: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermoſt.

17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a ſhort time, in preſence, not in heart, endeavoured the more abundantly to ſee your face with great deſire.

18 Wherefore we would have come unto you (even I Paul) once and again; but Satan hindred us.

19 For what *is* our hope, or joy, or crown of ‡ rejoycing? *are* not even ye in the preſence of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt at his coming?

20 For ye are our glory and joy.

CHAP. III.

1 S. Paul teſtifieth his great love to the Theſſalonians; partly by ſending Timothy unto them to ſtrengthen and comfort them, partly by rejoycing in their well-doing, 10 and partly by praying for them, and deſiring a ſafe coming unto them.

WHerefore when we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be left at Athens alone:

2 And ſent Timotheus our brother and miniſter of God, and our fellow-laborer in the goſpel of Chriſt, to eſtabliſh you, and to comfort you concerning your faith;

‡ Or, uſed authority.

* Acts 20. 34. 1 Cor. 4. 12. 2 Theſ. 3. 8.

* Epheſ. 4. 1. Phil. 1. 27. Coloſ. 1. 10.

‡ Or, chaſed us out.

‡ Or, glorying.

3 That no man should be moved by these afflictions: for yourselves know that we are appointed thereunto.

4 For verily when we were with you, we told you before, that we should suffer tribulation; even as it came to pass, and ye know.

5 For this cause when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith, lest by some means the tempter have tempted you, and our labour be in vain.

6 But now when Timotheus came from you unto us, and brought us good tidings of your faith and charity, and that ye have good remembrance of us always, desiring greatly to see us, as we also *to see* you:

7 Therefore, brethren, we were comforted over you in all our affliction and distress, by your faith:

8 For now we live, if ye stand fast in the Lord.

9 For what thanks can we render to God again for you, for all the joy wherewith we joy for your sakes before our God,

10 Night and day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith?

11 Now God himself and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ direct our way unto you.

‡ Or, *guide.*

12 And the Lord make you to increase and abound in love one toward another, and toward all men, even as we *do* toward you:

* 1 Cor. 1.8. Chap. 3.13. 2 Pet. 3.14.

13 To the end he may * stablish your hearts unblameable in holiness before God even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, with all his saints.

CHAP. IV.

He exhorteth them to go on forward in all manner of godliness, 6 to live holily and justly, 9 to love one another, 11 and quietly to follow their own business, 13 and last of all to sorrow moderately for the dead. 17 And unto this last exhortation is annexed a brief description of the resurrection, and second coming of Christ to judgement.

FUrthermore then we ‡ beseech you, brethren, and ‡ exhort *you* by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us how ye ought to walk, and to please God, so ye would abound more and more.

‡ Or, *request.* ‡ Or, *beseech.*

2 For ye know what commandments we gave you by the Lord Jesus.

3 For this is the will of God, *even* your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication:

4 That every one of you should know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honour;

5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not God:

‡ Or, *oppress*, or *over-reach.* ‡ Or, *in the matter.*

6 That no *man* go beyond, and ‡ defraud his brother ‡ in *any* matter: because that the Lord *is* the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you, and testified.

7 For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness.

‡ Or, *rejecteth.*

8 He therefore that ‡ despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit.

9 But as touching brotherly love, ye need not that I write unto you: for ye yourselves are * taught of God to love one another.

* John 13. 34. & 15. 12.

10 And indeed ye do it towards all the brethren which are in Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren, that ye increase more and more;

11 And that ye study to be quiet, and to do your own business, and to work with your own hands, (as we commanded you;)

12 That ye may walk honestly toward them that are without, and *that* ye may have lack ‡ of nothing.

‡ Or, *of no man.*

13 But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope.

14 For if we believe that Jesus died, and rose again, even so * them also which sleep in Jesus, Will God bring with him.

* 1 Cor. 15.23.

15 For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive, and remain unto the coming of the Lord, shall not prevent them which are asleep.

16 For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with * the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first:

* 1 Cor. 15. 52.

17 Then we which are alive and remain, shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

18 Wherefore ‡ comfort one another with these words.

‡ Or, *exhort.*

CHAP. V.

1 He proceedeth in the former description of Christ's coming to judgement, 16 and giveth divers precepts, 23 and so concludeth the epistle.

BUt of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you.

2 For your selves know perfectly that * the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night.

* Matt. 24.43.44. 2 Pet. 3.10 Rev. 3.3. & 16.15.

3 For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape.

4 But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief.

5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness.

6 Therefore let us not sleep as *do* others; but let us watch, and be sober.

7 For they that sleep, sleep in the night; and they that be drunken, are drunken in the night.

8 But let us who are of the day, be sober, * putting on the breast-plate of faith and love, and for an helmet, the hope of salvation.

* Isa. 59. 17. Ephes. 6. 16, 17.

9 For God hath not appointed us to wrath; but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ,

10 Who died for us, that whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him.

11 Wherefore ‡ comfort your selves together and edifie one another, even as also ye do.

‡ Or, *exhort.*

12 And we beseech you, brethren, * to know them which labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you;

* Heb. 13.17.

13 And to esteem them very highly in love for their works sake. *And* be at peace among your selves.

14 Now we ‡ exhort you, brethren, warn them that are ‡ unruly, comfort the feeble-minded, support the weak, be patient toward all men.

‡ Or, *beseech.* ‡ Or, *disorderly.*

15 * See that none render evil for evil unto any man: but ever follow that which is good, both among your selves, and to all men.

* Prov. 17.13. & 20.22. Mat. 5.44. Rom. 12.17. 1 Pet. 3.9.

16 Rejoyce evermore.

17 * Pray without ceasing.

18 In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.

19 Quench not the Spirit.

20 Despise not prophesyings.

* Luke 18.1. Col. 4.2.

21 Prove all things: hold fast that which is good.

22 Abstain

22 Abſtain from all appearance of evil.
23 And the very God of peace ſanctifie you wholly: and *I pray God*, your whole ſpirit and ſoul and body be preſerved blameleſs unto the coming of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
24 Faithful *is* he that calleth you, who alſo will do *it*.
25 Brethren, pray for us.
26 Greet all the brethren with an holy kiſs.
27 I ‡ charge you by the Lord, that this epiſtle be read unto all the holy brethren. ‡ Or, *adjure*.
28 The grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt *be* with you. Amen.

¶ The firſt *epiſtle* unto the Theſſalonians was written from Athens.

¶ The ſecond Epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle, to the THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 *S. Paul certifieth them of the good opinion which he had of their faith, love, and patience,* 11 *and therewithall uſeth divers reaſons for the comforting of them in perſecution, whereof the chiefeſt is taken from the righteous judgement of God.*

PAul, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Theſſalonians, in God our Father, and the Lord Jeſus Chriſt:
2 Grace unto you, and peace, from God our Father, and the LORD Jeſus Chriſt.
3 * We are bound to thank God always for you, brethren, as it is meet, becauſe that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charity of every one of you all towards each other aboundeth: 1 Theſſ.
4 So that we our ſelves glory in you in the churches of God, for your patience and faith in all your perſecutions and tribulations that ye endure.
5 *Which is* a manifeſt token of the righteous judgement of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God, for which ye alſo ſuffer:
6 Seeing *it is* a righteous thing with God to recompenſe tribulation to them that trouble you;
7 And to you who are troubled, reſt with us, when * the Lord Jeſus ſhall be revealed from heaven, with † his mighty angels, 1 Theſſ.
8 In flaming fire, ‡ taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the goſpel of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt:
9 Who ſhall be puniſhed with everlaſting deſtruction from the preſence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power;
10 When he ſhall come to be glorified in his ſaints, and to be admired in all them that believe (becauſe our teſtimony among you was believed) in that day.
11 Wherefore alſo we pray always for you, that our God would ‡ count you worthy of *this* calling, and fulfill all the good pleaſure of *his* goodneſs, and the work of faith with power:
12 That the name of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

CHAP. II.

1 *He willeth them to continue ſtedfaſt in the truth received,* 3 *ſheweth that there ſhall be a departure from the faith,* 9 *and a diſcovery of antichriſt before the day of the Lord come,* 15 *and thereupon repeateth his former exhortation, and prayeth for them.*

NOw we beſeech you brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, and *by* our gathering together unto him,
2 That ye be not ſoon ſhaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by ſpirit, nor by word, nor by letter, as from us, as that the day of Chriſt is at hand.
3 Let no man deceive you by any means: for *that day ſhall not come*, except there come a falling away firſt, and that man of ſin be revealed, the ſon of perdition:
4 Who oppoſeth and exalteth himſelf above all that is called God, or that is worſhipped; ſo that he as God, ſitteth in the temple of God, ſhewing himſelf that he is God.
5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I told you theſe things?
6 And now ye know what ‡ withholdeth, that he might be revealed in his time. ‡ Or, *holdeth*.
7 For the myſtery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth, *will let*, until he be taken out of the way.
8 And then ſhall that wicked be revealed, whom the Lord ſhall conſume * with the ſpirit of his mouth, and ſhall deſtroy with the brightneſs of his coming: * Iſa. 11. 4. Hoſ. 6. 5. Rev. 2. 16.
9 *Even him* whoſe coming is after the working of Satan, with all power, and ſigns, and lying wonders,
10 And with all deceivableneſs of unrighteouſneſs, in them that periſh; becauſe they received not the love of the truth, that they might be ſaved.
11 And for this cauſe God ſhall ſend them ſtrong deluſion, that they ſhould believe a lie:
12 That they all might be damned, who believed not the truth, but had pleaſure in unrighteouſneſs.
13 But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you brethren beloved of the Lord, becauſe God hath from the beginning choſen you to ſalvation, through ſanctification of the Spirit, and belief of the truth:
14 Whereunto he called you by our goſpel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
15 Therefore, brethren, ſtand faſt, and hold the traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word, or our epiſtle.
16 Now our Lord Jeſus Chriſt himſelf, and God even our Father, which hath loved us, and hath given us everlaſting conſolation, and good hope through grace,
17 Comfort your hearts, and ſtabliſh you in every good word and work.

CHAP. III.

1 *He craveth their prayers for himſelf,* 3 *teſtifieth what confidence he hath in them,* 5 *maketh requeſt to God in their behalf,* 6 *giveth them divers precepts, eſpecially to ſhun idleneſs and ill company,* 16 *and laſt of all concludeth with prayer and ſalutation.*

FInally brethren, * pray for us, that the word of the Lord † may have *free* courſe, and be glorified even as *it is* with you; * Epheſ. 6. 19. Col. 4. 3. † Gr. *may run*.
2 And that we may be delivered from † unreaſonable and wicked men: for all *men* have not faith. † Gr. *abſurd*.
3 But the Lord is faithful, who ſhall ſtabliſh you, and keep *you* from evil.
4 And we have confidence in the Lord touching you, that ye both do and will do the things which we command you.
5 And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God, and into ‡ the patient waiting for Chriſt. ‡ Or, *the patience of Chriſt*.

6 Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, that ye withdraw your ſelves from every brother that walketh diſorderly, and not after the tradition which he received of us.

7 For your ſelves know how ye ought to follow us: for we behaved not our ſelves diſorderly among you,

8 Neither did we eat any mans bread for nought; but wrought with labour and travel night and day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you:

9 Not becauſe we have not power, but to make our ſelves an enſample unto you to follow us.

10 For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither ſhould he eat.

11 For we hear that there are ſome which walk among you diſorderly, working not at all, but are buſie-bodies.

12 Now them that are ſuch, we command, and exhort by our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, that with quietneſs they work, and eat their own bread.

13 But ye, brethren, * ‡ be not weary in well-doing. * Gal. 6.9. ‡ Or, faint not.

14 And if any man obey not our word ‡ by this epiſtle, note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be aſhamed. ‡ Or, ſignifie that man by an epiſtle.

15 Yet count *him* not as an enemy, but admoniſh *him* as a brother.

16 Now the Lord of peace himſelf give you peace always, by all means. The Lord *be* with you all.

17 The ſalutation of Paul with mine own hand, which is the token in every epiſtle: ſo I write;

18 The grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt *be* with you all. Amen.

¶ The ſecond *epiſtle* to the Theſſalonians, was written from Athens.

¶ The firſt Epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle, to TIMOTHY.

CHAP. I.

1 Timothy is put in mind of the charge which was given unto him by Paul, at his going to Macedonia. 5 Of the right uſe and end of the law. 11 Of S. Pauls calling to be an apoſtle, 20 and of Hymeneus and Alexander.

PAUL an apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt by the commandment of God our Saviour, and Lord Jeſus Chriſt, *which is* our hope;

2 Unto Timothy, *my* own ſon in the faith: Grace, mercy, *and* peace from God our Father, and Jeſus Chriſt our Lord.

3 As I beſought thee to abide ſtill at Epheſus, when I went into Macedonia, ſ thou mighteſt charge ſome that they teach no other doctrine,

* Chap. 4.7 & 6.4. 2 Tim. 2.23. Tit.1.14. & 3.9. ‡ Or, not aiming at.

4 * Neither give heed to fables, and endleſs genealogies, which miniſter queſtions, rather then godly edifying, which is in faith: *ſo do.*

5 Now the end of the commandment is charity, out of a pure heart, and *of* a good conſcience, and *of* faith unfeigned:

6 From which ſome ‡ having ſwerved, have turned aſide unto vain jangling;

7 Deſiring to be teachers of the law, underſtanding neither what they ſay, nor whereof they affirm.

8 But we know that the law *is* good, if a man uſe it lawfully;

9 Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawleſs and diſobedient, for the ungodly, and for ſinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for man-ſlayers,

10 For whoremongers, for them that defile themſelves with mankind, for men-ſtealers, for liars, for perjured perſons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to ſound doctrine,

11 According to the glorious goſpel of the bleſſed God, which was committed to my truſt.

12 And I thank Chriſt Jeſus our Lord, who hath enabled me, for that he counted me faithful, putting me into the miniſtery;

13 Who was before a blaſphemer, and a perſecutour, and injurious. But I obtained mercy, becauſe I did *it* ignorantly, in unbelief:

14 And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant, with faith, and love which is in Chriſt Jeſus.

15 This *is* a faithful ſaying, and worthy of all acceptation, that * Chriſt Jeſus came into the world to ſave ſinners; of whom I am chief. * Matth. 9.13. Mark 2.17

16 Howbeit, for this cauſe I obtained mercy, that in me firſt Jeſus Chriſt might ſhew forth all long-ſuffering, for a patternto them which ſhould hereafter believe on him to life everlaſting.

17 Now unto the King eternal, immortal, inviſible, the onely wiſe God, *be* honour and glory, for ever and ever. Amen.

18 This charge I commit unto thee, ſon Timothy, according to the prophecies which went before on thee, that thou by them mighteſt war the good warfare,

19 Holding faith and a good conſcience; which ſome having put away, concerning faith have made ſhipwrack.

20 Of whom is Hymeneus and Alexander; * whom I have * delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaſpheme. * 1 Cor. 5.5.

CHAP. II.

1 That it is meet to pray and give thanks for all men, and the reaſon why. 9 How women ſhould be attired. 12 They are not permitted to teach. 15 They ſhall be ſaved, notwithſtanding the teſtimonies of Gods wrath in child-birth, if they continue in faith.

I ‡ Exhort therefore, that firſt of all, ſupplications, prayers, interceſſions, *and* giving of thanks be made for all men: ‡ Or, deſire.

2 For kings, and for all that are in ‡ authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godlineſs and honeſty. ‡ Or, eminent place.

3 For this *is* good and acceptable in the ſight of God our Saviour:

4 Who will have all men to be ſaved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.

5 For *there is* one God, and one mediatour between God and men, the man Chriſt Jeſus;

6 Who gave himſelf a ranſom for all, ‡ to be teſtified in due time. ‡ Or, a teſtimony.

7 * Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an apoſtle, (I ſpeak the truth in Chriſt, *and* lie not) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and verity. * 2 Tim. 1.11.

8 I will therefore that men pray every where, lifting up holy hands, without wrath, and doubting:

9 In like manner alſo, that * women adorn themſelves in modeſt apparel, with ſhamefaſtneſs and ſobriety: not with ‡ broidered hair, or gold, or pearls, or coſtly array; * 1 Pet. 3.3. * Or, plaited.

10 But (which becometh women profeſſing godlineſs) with good works.

11 Let the woman learn in ſilence with all ſubjection.

12 But * I ſuffer not a woman to teach, nor to uſurp authority over the man, but to be in ſilence. * 1 Cor. 14.34.

13 For

13 For Adam was first formed, then Eve.
14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived, was in the transgression.
15 Notwithstanding she shall be saved in child-bearing, if they continue in faith, and charity, and holiness with sobriety.

CHAP. III.

How bishops & deacons, and their wives should be qualified, 14 *and to what end S. Paul wrote to Timothy of these things.* 15 *Of the church and the blessed truth therein taught and professed.*

THis *is* a true saying, If a man desire the office of a bishop, he desireth a good work.
2 * A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, ‡ of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach;
3 ‡ Not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre, but patient, not a brawler, not covetous;
4 One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity;
5 (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?)
6 Not ‡ a novice, lest being lifted up with pride, he fall into the condemnation of the devil.
7 Moreover, he must have a good report of them which are without; lest he fall into reproach, and the snare of the devil.
8 Likewise *must* the deacons *be* grave, not double-tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre,
9 Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience.
10 And let these also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being *found* blameless.
11 Even so *must their* wives *be* grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things.
12 Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children, and their own houses well.
13 For they that have ‡ used the office of a deacon well, purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus.
14 These things write I unto thee, hoping to come unto thee shortly:
15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thy self in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ‡ ground of the truth.
16 And without controversie, great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.

CHAP. IV.

He foretelleth that in the latter times there shall be a departure from the faith: 6 *And to the end that Timothy might not fail in doing his duty, he furnisheth him with divers precepts belonging thereto.*

NOw the Spirit speaketh expressly, that * in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils;
2 Speaking lies in hypocrisie, having their conscience seared with a hot iron;
3 Forbidding to marry, *and commanding* to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.
4 For every creature of God *is* good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving:
5 For it is sanctified by the word of God, and prayer,
6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith, and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained.
7 But refuse profane and old wives fables, and exercise thy self *rather* unto godliness.
8 For bodily exercise profiteth ‡ little: but godliness is profitable unto all things, having promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come. ‡ Or, *for a little time.*
9 This *is* a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation.
10 For therefore we both labour, and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe.
11 These things command and teach.
12 Let no man despise thy youth, but be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity.
13 Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.
14 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery.
15 Meditate upon these things, give thy self wholly to them; that thy profiting may appear ‡ to all. ‡ Or, *in all things.*
16 Take heed unto thy self, and unto thy doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this, thou shalt both save thy self, and them that hear thee.

CHAP. V.

1 *Rules to be observed in reproving.* 3 *Of widows.* 17 *Of elders.* 23 *A precept for Timothies health.* 24 *Some mens sins go before unto judgment, and some men do follow after.*

REbuke not an elder, but intreat *him* as a father, *and* the younger men as brethren;
2 The elder women as mothers, the younger as sisters, with all purity.
3 Honour widows that are widows indeed.
4 But if any widow have children, or nephews, let them learn first to shew ‡ piety at home, and to requite their parents: for that is good and acceptable before God. ‡ Or, *kindness.*
5 Now she that is a widow indeed, and desolate, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day.
6 But she that liveth ‡ in pleasure, is dead while she liveth. ‡ Or, *dainti-ly.*
7 And these things give in charge, that they may be blameless.
8 But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own ‡ house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse then an infidel. ‡ Or, *kindred.*
9 Let not a widow be ‡ taken into the number, under threescore years old, having been the wife of one man, ‡ Or, *chosen.*
10 Well reported of for good works; if she have brought up children, if she have lodged strangers, if she have washed the saints feet, if she have relieved the afflicted, if she have diligently followed every good work.
11 But the younger widows refuse: for when they have begun to wax wanton against Christ, they will marry;
12 Having damnation, because they have cast off their first faith.
13 And withall they learn *to be* idle, wandering about from house to house; and not only idle, but tattlers also and busie-bodies, speaking things which they ought not.
14 I will therefore that the younger women marry, bear children, guide the house, give none

none occasion to the adversary † to speak reproachfully:

† Gr. for their railing.

15 For some are already turned aside after Satan.

16 If any man or woman that believeth have widows, let them relieve them, and let not the church be charged; that it may relieve them that are widows indeed.

17 * Let the elders that rule well, be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.

* 1 Cor. 9.14. Gal. 6.6.

18 For the scripture saith, * Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn: and, * The labourer is worthy of his reward.

* Deut. 25.4. * Mat. 10.10.

19 Against an elder receive not an accusation, but ‡ before two or three witnesses.

‡ Or, under.

20 Them that sin rebuke before all, that others also may fear.

21 I charge *thee* before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things ‡ without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality.

‡ Or, without prejudice.

22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other mens sins: keep thy self pure.

23 Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomacks sake, and thine often infirmities.

24 Some mens sins are open beforehand, going before to judgement; and some *men* they follow after.

25 Likewise also the good works *of some* are manifest beforehand; and they that are otherwise cannot be hid.

CHAP. VI.

1 Of the duty of servants. 3 Not to have fellowship with new-fangled teachers. 6 Godliness is great gain, 10 and love of money the root of all evil. 11 What Timothy is to flee, and what to follow, 17 and whereof to admonish the rich, 20 to keep the purity of true doctrine, and to avoid profane janglings.

LET as many servants as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honour; that the name of God, and *his* doctrine be not blasphemed.

2 And they that have believing masters, let them not despise *them*, because they are brethren: but rather do *them* service, because they are ‡ faithful and beloved, partakers of the benefit. These things teach and exhort.

‡ Or, believing.

3 If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesom words, *even* the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness;

4 He is ‡ proud, knowing nothing, but ‡ doing about questions and strifes of words, whereof cometh envy, strife, railings, evil surmisings,

‡ Or, a fool. ‡ Or, sick.

5 ‡ Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godliness: from such withdraw thy self.

‡ Or, gallings one of another.

6 But godliness with contentment is great gain.

7 For we brought nothing into *this* world, *and it is* certain we can carry nothing out.

8 And having food and raiment, let us be therewith content.

9 But they that will be rich, fall into temptation, and a snare, and *into* many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition.

10 For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have ‡ erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

‡ Or, been seduced.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things: and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness.

12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

13 I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and *before* Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good ‡ confession;

‡ Or, profession.

14 That thou keep *this* commandment without spot, unrebukeable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ:

15 Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and onely Potentate, * the King of kings, and Lord of lords;

* Rev. 17. 4. & 19.16.

16 Who onely hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto, * whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom *be* honour and power everlasting. Amen.

* John 1.18. 1 John 4.12.

17 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not high-minded, nor trust in † uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy.

† Gr. uncertainty of riches.

18 That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, ‡ willing to communicate;

‡ Or, sociable.

19 * Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life.

* Mat. 6.20. Luke 12.33.

20 O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane *and* vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsly so called:

21 Which some professing, have erred concerning the faith. Grace *be* with thee. Amen.

¶ The first to Timothy was written from Laodicea, which is the chiefest city of Phrygia Pacatiana.

¶ The second Epistle of PAUL the Apostle, to TIMOTHY.

CHAP. I.

Pauls love to Timothy, and the unfeigned faith which was in Timothy himself, his mother, and grandmother: 6 He is exhorted to stir up the gift of God, which was in him; 8 to be stedfast and patient in persecution, 13 and to persist in the form and truth of that doctrine which he had learned of him. 15 Phygellus and Hermogenes, and such like are noted, and Onesiphorus is highly commended.

PAul an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promise of life, which is in Christ Jesus;

2 To Timothy *my* dearly beloved son: Grace, mercy, *and* peace from God the Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord.

3 I thank God, whom I serve from *my* forefathers with pure conscience, that without ceasing I have remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day:

4 Greatly desiring to see thee, being mindful of thy tears, that I may be filled with joy:

5 When I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am perswaded that in thee also.

6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou stir up the gift of God which is in thee, by the putting on of my hands.

7 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but

but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.
8 Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel, according to the power of God;
9 Who hath saved us, and called *us* with an holy calling, * not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace which was given us in Christ Jesus, * before the world began;
10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light, through the gospel:
11 * Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.
12 For the which cause I also suffer these things; nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have ‡ believed, and I am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.
13 Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus.
14 That good thing which was committed unto thee, keep by the holy Ghost, which dwelleth in us.
15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia be turned away from me, of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes.
16 The Lord give mercy unto the house of Onesiphorus; for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain.
17 But when he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found *me*.
18 The Lord grant unto him that he may find mercy of the Lord in that day: and in how many things he ministred unto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

CHAP. II.

1 He is exhorted again to constancy and perseverance, and to do the duty of a faithful servant of the Lord, in dividing the word aright, and shaying profane and vain biblings. 17 Of Hymenæus and Philetus. 19 The foundation of the Lord is sure. 22 He is taught whereof to beware, and what to follow after, and in what sort the servant of the Lord ought to behave himself.

THou therefore my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.
2 And the things that thou hast heard of me ‡ among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.
3 Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good souldier of Jesus Christ.
4 No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of *this* life; that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a souldier.
5 And if a man also strive for masteries, *yet* is he not crowned except he strive lawfully.
6 ‡ The husbandman that laboureth must be first partaker of the fruits.
7 Consider what I say; and the Lord give thee understanding in all things.
8 Remember that Jesus Christ of the seed of David, was raised from the dead, according to my gospel:
9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an evil doer, *even* unto bonds; but the word of God is not bound.
10 Therefore I endure all things for the elects sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which *is* in Christ Jesus, with eternal glory.
11 *It is* a faithful saying. For * if we be dead with *him*, we shall also live with *him*:
12 * If we suffer, we shall also reign with *him*: * if we deny *him*, he also will deny us:
13 * If we believe not, *yet* he abideth faithful; he cannot deny himself.
14 Of these things put *them* in remembrance, charging *them* before the Lord, that they strive not about words, to no profit, *but* to the subverting of the hearers.
15 Study to shew thy self approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.
16 But shun profane and vain babblings; for they will increase unto more ungodliness.
17 And their word will eat as doth a ‡ canker: of whom is Hymenæus and Philetus;
18 Who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already; and overthrow the faith of some.
19 Nevertheless, the foundation of God standeth ‡ sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity.
20 But in a great house there are not onely vessels of gold, and of silver, but also of wood, and of earth; * and some to honour, and some to dishonour.
21 If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified and meet for the masters use, *and* prepared unto every good work.
22 Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.
23 But * foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes.
24 And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, ‡ patient,
25 In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them † repentance to the acknowledging of the truth;
26 And that they may † recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are † taken captive by him at his will.

CHAP. III.

1 He advertiseth him of the times to come, 6 describeth the enemies of the truth, 10 propounded unto him his own example, 16 and commendeth the holy scriptures.

THis know also, that † in the last days perilous times shall come.
2 For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy,
3 Without natural affection, truce-breakers, ‡ false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good:
4 Traitours, heady, high-minded, lovers of pleasures more then lovers of God;
5 Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.
6 For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts,
7 Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.
8 Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, ‡ reprobate concerning the faith.
9 But they shall proceed no further: for their folly shall be manifest unto all *men*, as theirs also was.
10 But † thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, long-suffering, charity, patience,
11 Persecutions, afflictions, which came unto me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra; what per-

* Mat. 10.33. Mark 8. 38.
* Rom. 3.3
‡ Or, gangrene.
‡ Or, stedfast.
* Rom. 9.21.
* 1 Tim. 1.4. Tit. 3.9.
‡ Or, forbearing.
† Gr. awake.
† Gr. taken alive
* 1 Tim. 4.1. 2 Pet. 3.3 Jude 18.
‡ Or, malebatlers
‡ Or, of judgement
† Or, thou hast been diligently followed

persecutions I endured: but out of them all the Lord delivered me.

12 Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus, shall suffer persecution.

13 But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned, and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned *them*;

15 And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

‖ 2 Pet. 1.21. 16 * All scripture *is* given by inspiration of God, and *is* profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:

‡ Or, perfected. 17 That the man of God may be perfect, ‡ throughly furnished unto all good works.

CHAP. IV.

1 He exhorteth him to do his duty with all care and diligence, 6 certifieth him of the nearness of his death, 9 willeth him to come speedily unto him, and to bring Marcus with him, and certain other things: which he wrote for, 14 warneth him to beware of Alexander the smith, 16 informeth him what had befallen him at his first answering: 19 and soon after he concludeth.

I Charge *thee* therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing, and his kingdom:

2 Preach the word, be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long-suffering, and doctrine.

3 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears.

4 And they shall turn away *their* ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.

‡ Or, watch. 5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, ‡ make full proof of thy ministery.

6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand.

7 I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith.

8 Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord the righteous judge shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing.

9 Do thy diligence to come shortly unto me.

10 For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica: Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.

11 Only Luke is with me. Take Mark and bring him with thee: for he is profitable to me for the ministery.

12 And Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus.

13 The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring *with thee*, and the books, *but* especially the parchments.

14 Alexander the copper-smith did me much evil: the Lord reward him according to his works.

15 Of whom be thou ware also; for he hath greatly withstood ‡ our words. ‡ Or, our preaching.

16 At my first answer no man stood with me, but all men forsook me: *I pray God* that it may not be laid to their charge.

17 Notwithstanding the Lord stood with me, and strengthened me; that by me the preaching might be fully known, and *that* all the Gentiles might hear: and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.

18 And the Lord shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve *me* unto his heavenly kingdom: to whom *be* glory for ever and ever. Amen.

19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus have I left at Miletum sick.

21 Do thy diligence to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Jesus Christ *be* with thy spirit. Grace *be* with you. Amen.

¶ The second *epistle* unto Timotheus, ordained the first bishop of the church of the Ephesians, was written from Rome, when Paul was brought before Nero the second time.

¶ The Epistle of PAUL to TITUS.

CHAP. I.

1 For what end Titus was left in Crete. 6 How they that are to be chosen ministers, ought to be qualified. 11 The mouths of evil teachers to be stopped, 12 and what manner of men they be.

PAul a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of God's elect, and the acknowledging of the truth which is after godliness:

Or, for, 2 Tim. 1. 9. 2 ‡ In hope of eternal life, which God that cannot lie, promised * before the world began;

3 But hath in due times manifested his word through preaching, which is committed unto me, according to the commandment of God our Saviour:

4 To Titus *mine* own son after the common faith: Grace, mercy, *and* peace, from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.

Or, left ordained 1 Tim. 1. &c. 5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldest set in order the things that are ‡ wanting, and ordain elders in every city, as I had appointed thee:

6 * If any be blameless, the husband of one wife, having faithful children, not accused of riot or unruly.

7 For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God; not self-willed, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre;

8 But a lover of hospitality, a lover of ‡ good men, sober, just, holy, temperate; ‡ Or, good things.

9 Holding fast the faithful word, ‡ as he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine, both to exhort and to convince the gainsayers. ‡ Or, in teaching

10 For there are many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers, especially they of the circumcision:

11 Whose mouths must be stopped, who subvert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucre's sake.

12 One of themselves, *even* a prophet of their own, said, The Cretians *are* alway liars, evil beasts, slow bellies.

13 This witness is true: wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith;

14 * Not giving heed to Jewish fables, and commandments of men, that turn from the truth. * 1 Tim. 1. 4.

15 * Unto the pure all things *are* pure: but unto them that are defiled, and unbelieving, *is* nothing * Rom. 14. 20.

thing

thing pure; but even their mind and conscience is defiled.

16 They professe that they know God; but in works they deny *him*, being abominable and disobedient, and unto every good work ‡ reprobate.

CHAP. II.

‡ *Directions given unto Titus both for his doctrine and life.* 9 *Of the duty of servants, and in general of all Christians.*

BUt speak thou the things which become sound doctrine:

2 That the aged men be ‡ sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience:

3 The aged women likewise, that *they be* in behaviour as becometh ‡ holinesse, not ‡ false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things;

4 That they may teach the young women to be ‡ sober, to love their husbands, to love their children,

5 *To be* discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, *obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

6 Young men likewise exhort to be ‡ soberminded.

7 In all things shewing thy self a pattern of good works: in doctrine *shewing* uncorruptnesse, gravity, sincerity,

8 Sound speech that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you.

9 *Exhort* * servants to be obedient unto their own masters, *and* to please *them* well in all things; not ‡ answering again,

10 Not purloining, but shewing all good fidelity; that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things.

11 For the grace of God ‡ that bringeth salvation, hath appeared to all men;

12 Teaching us, that denying ungodlinesse and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world;

13 * Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ:

14 Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purifie unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

15 These things speak and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee.

CHAP. III.

‡ *Titus is yet further directed by Paul, both concerning the things he should teach, and not teach.* 10 *He is willed also to reject obstinate heretickes:* 12 *which done, he appointeth him both time and place, wherein he should come unto him; and so concludeth.*

PUt them in mind * to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good work, * Rom. 13. 1. 1 Pet. 2. 13.

2 To speak evil of no man, to be no brawlers, *but* gentle, shewing all meekness unto all men.

3 For * we our selves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, *and* hating one another. * 1 Cor. 6. 11.

4 But after that the kindness and ‡ love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, ‡ Or, *pity.*

5 * Not by works of righteousnesse, which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the holy Ghost; * 2 Tim. 1. 9.

6 Which he shed on us † abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour: † Gr. *richly.*

7 That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

8 *This is* a faithful saying, and these things I will that thou affirm constantly, that they which have believed in God, might be careful to maintain good works: these things are good and profitable unto men.

9 But * avoid foolish questions and genealogies, and contentions, and strivings about the law; for they are unprofitable and vain. * 1 Tim. 1. 4. 2 Tim. 2. 23.

10 A man that is an heretick, after the first and second admonition, reject:

11 Knowing that he that is such, is subverted, and sinneth, being condemned of himself.

12 When I shall send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come unto me to Nicopolis: for I have determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the lawyer, and Apollos on their journey diligently, that nothing be wanting unto them.

14 And let ours also learn to ‡ maintain good works for necessary uses, that they be not unfruitful. ‡ Or, *profess honest trades.*

15 All that are with me salute thee. Greet them that love us in the faith. Grace *be* with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to Titus ordained the first bishop of the church of the Cretians, from Nicopolis of Macedonia.

¶ The Epistle of PAUL to PHILEMON.

4 *He rejoyceth to hear of the faith and love of Philemon:* 9 *whom he desireth to forgive his servant Onesimus, and lovingly to receive him again.*

PAul a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy *our* brother, unto Philemon our dearly beloved, and fellow-labourer,

2 And to *our* beloved Apphia, and Archippus our fellow-souldier, and to the church in thy house:

3 Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 * I thank my God, making mention of thee always in my prayers,

5 Hearing of thy love, and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all saints:

6 That ‡ the communication of thy faith may become effectual by the acknowledging of every good thing, which is in you in Christ Jesus.

7 For we have great joy and consolation in thy love, because the bowels of the saints are refreshed by thee, brother.

8 Wherefore, though I might be much bold in Christ, to enjoyn thee that which is convenient,

9 Yet for loves sake I rather beseech *thee*, being such a one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner of Jesus Christ.

10 I beseech thee for my son * Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my bonds: * Col. 4. 9.

11 Which in time past was to thee unprofitable, but now profitable to thee and to me:

12 Whom I have sent again: thou therefore receive him, that is mine own bowels.

13 Whom I would have retained with me, that

that in thy ſtead he might have miniſtred unto me in the bonds of the goſpel.

14 But without thy mind I would do nothing; that thy benefit ſhould not be as it were of neceſſity, but willingly.

15 For perhaps he therefore departed for a ſeaſon, that thou ſhouldeſt receive him for ever;

16 Not now as a ſervant, but above a ſervant, a brother beloved, ſpecially to me, but how much more unto thee, both in the fleſh, and in the Lord?

17 If thou count me therefore a partner, receive him as my ſelf.

18 If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, put that on mine account.

19 I Paul have written it with mine own hand, I will repay it: albeit I do not ſay to thee, how thou oweſt unto me even thine own ſelf beſides.

20 Yea, brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord: refreſh my bowels in the Lord.

21 Having confidence in thy obedience, I wrote unto thee, knowing that thou wilt alſo do more then I ſay.

22 But withall prepare me alſo a lodging: for I truſt that through your prayers I ſhall be given unto you.

23 There ſalute thee Epaphras my fellow-priſoner in Chriſt Jeſus;

24 Marcus, Ariſtarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow-labourers.

25 The grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt *be* with your ſpirit. Amen

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, by Oneſimus a ſervant.

¶ The Epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle, to the HEBREWS.

CHAP. I.

1 *Chriſt in theſe laſt times coming to us from the Father, 4 is preferred above the angels, both in perſon and office.*

GOd who at ſundry times, and in divers manners, ſpake in time paſt unto the fathers by the prophets,

2 Hath in theſe laſt days ſpoken unto us by *his* Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom alſo he made the worlds.

3 * Who being the brightneſs of *his* glory, and the expreſs image of his perſon, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himſelf purged our ſins, ſat down on the right hand of the Majeſty on high:

4 Being made ſo much better then the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name then they.

5 For unto which of the angels ſaid he at any time, * Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, * I will be to him a Father, and he ſhall be to me a Son?

6 And again, when he bringeth in the firſtbegotten into the world, he ſaith, * And let all the angels of God worſhip him.

7 And of the angels he ſaith, * Who maketh his angels ſpirits, and his miniſters a flame of fire.

8 But unto the Son *he ſaith*, * Thy throne, O God, *is* for ever and ever; a ſceptre of † righteouſneſs *is* the ſceptre of thy kingdom:

9 Thou haſt loved righteouſneſs, and hated iniquity; therefore God, *even* thy God hath anointed thee with the oyl of gladneſs above thy fellows.

10 And, * Thou Lord in the beginning haſt laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thine hands.

11 They ſhall periſh, but thou remaineſt: and they all ſhall wax old as doth a garment;

12 And as a veſture ſhalt thou fold them up, and they ſhall be changed: but thou art the ſame, and thy years ſhall not fail.

13 But to which of the angels ſaid he at any time, * Sit on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footſtool?

14 Are they not all miniſtring ſpirits, ſent forth to miniſter for them who ſhall be heirs of ſalvation?

CHAP. II.

1 *We ought to be obedient to Chriſt Jeſus, 5 and that becauſe he vouchſafed to take our nature upon him, 14 as it was neceſſary.*

THerefore we ought to give the more earneſt heed to the things which we have heard, leſt at any time we ſhould † let *them* ſlip.

2 For if the word ſpoken by angels was ſtedfaſt, and every tranſgreſſion and diſobedience received a juſt recompence of reward;

3 How ſhall we eſcape if we neglect ſo great ſalvation, which at the firſt began to be ſpoken by the Lord, *and* was confirmed unto us by them that heard *him*;

4 God alſo bearing them witneſs, both with ſigns and wonders, and with divers miracles, and ‡ gifts of the holy Ghoſt, according to his own will?

5 For unto the angels hath he not put in ſubjection the world to come, whereof we ſpeak.

6 But one in a certain place teſtified, ſaying, * What is man that thou art mindful of him? or the ſon of man that thou viſiteſt him?

7 Thou madeſt him ‡ a little lower then the angels; thou crowneſt him with glory and honour, and didſt ſet him over the works of thy hands:

8 * Thou haſt put all things in ſubjection under his feet. For in that he put all in ſubjection under him, he left nothing *that is* not put under him. But now we ſee not yet all things put under him.

9 But we ſee Jeſus, who was made a little lower then the angels, ‡ for the ſuffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God ſhould taſte death for every man.

10 For it became him, for whom *are* all things, and by whom *are* all things, in bringing many ſons unto glory, to make the captain of their ſalvation perfect through ſufferings.

11 For both he that ſanctifieth, and they who are ſanctified, *are* all of one: for which cauſe he is not aſhamed to call them brethren,

12 Saying, * I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midſt of the church will I ſing praiſe unto thee.

13 And again, * I will put my truſt in him. And again, * Behold, I, and the children which God hath given me.

14 Foraſmuch then as the children are partakers of fleſh and blood, he alſo himſelf likewiſe took part of the ſame: that through death he might deſtroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil;

15 And deliver them who through fear of death, were all their life-time ſubject to bondage.

16 For verily † he took not on him *the nature of* angels; but he took on him the ſeed of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren; that he might be

---

* Wiſd. 7. 26. Coloſ. 1. 15.

* Pſal. 2. 7. Acts 13. 33. Heb. 5. 5. * 2 Sam. 7. 14. 1 Chron. 22. 10. Pſal. 89. 26, 27. * Pſal. 97. 7. * Pſal. 104. 4. * Pſal. 45. 6, 7. † Gr. *rightneſs*, or *ſtraightneſs*.

* Pſal. 102. 25, &c.

* Pſal. 110. 1. Matth. 22. 44.

† Gr. *ſet out of ſight*.

‡ Or, *diſtributions*.

* Pſal. 8. 4, *&c.*

‡ Or, *a little while inferiour to*.

* 1 Cor. 15. 27.

‡ Or, *by*.

* Pſal. 22. 22. * Pſal. 18. 2. * Iſa. 8. 18.

† Gr. *he taketh not hold of angels, but of the ſeed of Abraham he taketh hold.*

Chrift in Contemplation. Heb: 5.

v:8. Though he were a ſon, yet learned he obedi:
ence by the things which he ſuffered.

be a merciful and faithful high priest, in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people:

18 For in that he himself hath suffered, being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

CHAP. III.

1 *Christ is more worthy than Moses:* 7 *therefore if we believe not in him, we shall be more worthy punishment then hard-hearted Israel.*

WHerefore holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the apostle and high priest of our profession, Christ Jesus;

2 Who was faithful to him that † appointed him, as also *Moses was faithful in all his house.

3 For this man was counted worthy of more glory then Moses, in as much as he who hath builded the house, hath more honor then the house.

4 For every house is builded by some man; but he that built all things *is* God.

5 And Moses verily *was* faithful in all his house as a servant, for a testimony of those things which were to be spoken after;

6 But Christ as a Son over his own house: whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence, and the rejoycing of the hope firm unto the end.

7 Wherefore as the holy Ghost saith, * To day if ye will hear his voice,

8 Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wilderness:

9 When your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works fourty years.

10 Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They do alway erre in *their* heart; and they have not known my ways.

11 So I sware in my wrath, † They shall not enter into my rest.

12 Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.

13 But exhort one another daily while it is called, To day; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.

14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast unto the end;

15 While it is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation.

16 For some when they had heard, did provoke: howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.

17 But with whom was he grieved fourty years? *was it* not with them that had sinned, * whose carcases fell in the wilderness?

18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that believed not?

19 So we see that they could not enter in because of unbelief.

CHAP. IV.

1 *The rest of Christians is attained by faith.* 12 *The power of Gods word.* 14 *By our high priest Jesus the Son of God, subject to infirmities, but not sin,* 16 *we must and may go boldly to the throne of grace.*

LEt us therefore fear, lest a promise being left *us* of entring into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it.

2 For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them: but † the word preached did not profit them, ‡ not being mixed with faith in them that heard *it*.

3 For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, * As I have sworn in my wrath, If they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

4 For he spake in a certain place of the seventh *day* on this wise, * And God did rest the seventh day from all his works. * Gen. 2. 2.

5 And in this *place* again, If they shall enter into my rest.

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom ‡ it was first preached, entred not in because of unbelief: ‡ Or, *the gospel was first preached.*

7 Again, he limiteth a certain day, saying in David, To day, after so long a time; as it is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts.

8 For if ‡ Jesus had given them rest, then would he not afterward have spoken of another day. ‡ That is, *Joshua.*

9 There remaineth therefore a ‡ rest to the people of God. ‡ Or, *keeping of a sabbath.*

10 For he that is entred into his rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God *did* from his.

11 Let us labour therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of ‡ unbelief. ‡ Or, *disobedience.*

12 For the word of God *is* quick, and powerful, and sharper then any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joynts and marrow, and *is* a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things *are* naked and open unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do.

14 Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast *our* profession.

15 For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, *yet* without sin.

16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.

CHAP. V.

1 *The authority and honour of our Saviours priesthood.* 11 *Negligence in the knowledge thereof is reproved.*

FOr every high priest taken from among men, is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins:

2 Who ‡ can have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way; for that he himself also is compassed with infirmity: ‡ Or, *can reasonably bear with.*

3 And by reason hereof he ought, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer for sins.

4 * And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is called of God, as *was* Aaron: * 2 Chron. 26. 18.

5 So also Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest; but he that said unto him, * Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee. * Psal. 2. 7. Chap. 1. 5. * Psal. 110. 4.

6 As he saith also in another *place*, * Thou *art* a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec. Chap. 7. 17.

7 Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers & supplications, with strong crying and tears, unto him that was able to save him from death, & was heard, in that he feared; ‡ Or, *for his piety.*

8 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience, by the things which he suffered:

9 And being made perfect, he became the authour of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him;

10 Called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec.

11 Of whom we have many things to say, and hard

hard to be uttered; seeing ye are dull of hearing.

12 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which *be* the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of * milk, and not of strong meat.

13 For every one that useth milk † *is* unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe.

14 But strong meat belongeth to them that are ‡ of full age, even those who by reason † of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

* 1 Cor. 3. 2.
† Gr. hath no experience.
‡ Or, perfect.
‡ Or, of an habit, of perfection.

CHAP. VI.

1 *He exhorteth not to fall back from the faith,* 11 *but to be stedfast,* 12 *diligent and patient to wait upon God,* 13 *Because God is most sure in his promise.*

‡ Or, the word of the beginning of Christ.

THerefore leaving ‡ the principles of the doctrin of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith towards God,

2 Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment.

* Chap. 10. 26.

3 And this will we do, if God permit.

4 For * *it is* impossible for those who were once enlightened, & have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the holy Ghost,

5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come;

6 If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance: seeing they crucifie to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put *him* to an open shame.

§ Or, for.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them § by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God:

8 But that which beareth thorns and briers, *is* rejected, and *is* nigh unto cursing; whose end *is* to be burned.

9 But beloved, we are perswaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak.

10 For God *is* not unrighteous, to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have shewed toward his name, in that ye have ministred to the saints, and do minister.

11 And we desire, that every one of you do shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope unto the end:

12 That ye be not slothful, but followers of them, who through faith and patience inherit the promises.

* Gen. 22. 16, 17.

13 For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater, * he sware by himself,

14 Saying, Surely, blessing, I will bless thee, and multiplying, I will multiply thee.

15 And so after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise.

16 For men verily swear by the greater: and an oath for confirmation *is* to them an end of all strife.

† Gr. interposed himself by an oath.

17 Wherein God willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, † confirmed *it* by an oath:

18 That by two immutable things, in which *it was* impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us:

19 Which *hope* we have as an anchor of the soul both sure and stedfast, and which entreth into that within the vail,

20 Whither the forerunner is for us entred, even Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

CHAP. VII.

1 *Christ Jesus is a priest after the order of Melchisedec,* 11 *and so far more excellent then the priests of Aarons order.*

FOr this * Melchisedec king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him:

* Gen. 18, &c.

2 To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all: first being by interpretation king of righteousness, and after that also, king of Salem, which is, king of peace;

3 Without father, without mother, † without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life; but made like unto the Son of God, abideth a priest continually.

† Gr. without pedigree.

4 Now consider how great this man *was*, unto whom even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the spoils.

5 And verily * they that are of the sons of Levi, who receive the office of the priesthood, have a commandment to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loins of Abraham:

* Numb. 18. 21.

6 But he whose ‡ descent is not counted from them, received tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

‡ Or, pedigree.

7 And without all contradiction, the less is blessed of the better.

8 And here men that die receive tithes: but there he *receiveth them*, of whom it is witnessed that he liveth.

9 And, as I may so say, Levi also who receiveth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham.

10 For he was yet in the loins of his father when Melchisedec met him.

11 If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood, (for under it the people received ỹ law) what further need *was there* that another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron?

12 For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law.

13 For he of whom these things are spoken, pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar.

14 For *it is* evident that our Lord sprang out of Juda; of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood.

15 And it is yet far more evident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec, there ariseth another priest,

16 Who is made, not after the law of a carnal commandment, but after the power of an endless life.

17 For he testifieth, * Thou *art* a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

* Psal. 110. 4.

18 For there is verily a disannulling of the commandment going before, for the weakness and unprofitableness thereof.

19 For the law made nothing perfect, ‡ but the bringing in of a better hope *did*; by the which we draw nigh unto God.

‡ Or, but it was the bringing in.

20 And in as much as not without an oath *he was made priest*,

‡ Or, without an oath swearing of an oath.

21 (For those priests were made † without oath: but this with an oath, by him that said unto him, * The Lord sware and will not repent, Thou *art* a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec)

* Psal. 110. 4.

22 By so much was Jesus made a surety of a better testament.

‡ Or, who passeth from one another.

23 And they truly were many priests, because they were not suffered to continue by reason of death

24 But this *man*, because he continueth ever, hath an ‡ unchangeable priesthood.

‡ Or, everlasting.

25 Wherefore he is able also to save them † to

the

the uttermost, † come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.

26 For such an high priest became us, *who is* holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher then the heavens;

27 Who needeth not daily, as * those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the peoples: for this he did once, when he offered up himself.

28 For the law maketh men high priests which have infirmity; but the word of the oath which was since the law, *maketh* the Son, who is † consecrated for evermore.

CHAP. VIII.

1 By the eternal priesthood of Christ, the Levitical priesthood of Aaron is abolished, 7 and the temporal covenant with the fathers, by the eternal covenant of the gospel.

NOw of the things which we have spoken, *this is* the sum: We have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens;

2 A minister ‡ of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle which the Lord pitched, and not man.

3 For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore *it is* of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer.

4 For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that ‡ there are priests that offer gifts according to the law:

5 Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle. * For see (saith he) *that* thou make all things according to the pattern shewed to thee in the mount.

6 But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministery, by how much also he is the mediatour of a better ‡ covenant, which was established upon better promises.

7 For if that first *covenant* had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second.

8 For finding fault with them, he saith, * Behold, the days come (saith the Lord) when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah:

9 Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

10 For this *is* the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel, after those days, saith the Lord; I will † put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people.

11 And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

12 For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.

13 In that he saith, A new *covenant*, he hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old, *is* ready to vanish away.

CHAP. IX.

1 The description of the rites and bloudy sacrifices of the law, 11 far inferiour to the dignity and perfection of the bloud and sacrifice of Christ.

THen verily the first *covenant* had also ‡ ordinances of divine service, and a worldly sanctuary.

2 For there was a tabernacle made, * the first wherein *was* the candlestick, and the table, and the shew-bread; which is called ‡ the sanctuary. * Exod. 40. ‡ Or, holy.

3 And after the second vail, the tabernacle which is called the holiest of all:

4 Which had the golden censer, and the ark of the covenant overlaid round about with gold, wherein *was* * the golden pot that had manna, and * Aarons rod that budded, and * the tables of the covenant; * Exod. 16. 34. * Numb. 17. 10. * Deut. 10. 5.

5 And * over it the cherubims of glory shadowing the mercy-seat: of which we cannot now speak particularly.

6 Now when these things were thus ordained, the priests went always into the first tabernacle, accomplishing the service *of God*: 1 King. 8. 9. 2 Chron. 5. 10.

7 But into the second *went* the high priest alone * once every year, not without bloud, which he offered for himself, and *for* the errours of the people. * Exod. 25. 22. * Exod. 30. 10. Levit. 16. 2.

8 The holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all, was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing:

9 Which *was* a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience,

10 *Which stood* onely in meats, and drinks, and divers washings, and carnal ‡ ordinances imposed *on them* until the time of reformation. ‡ Or, rites, or ceremonies.

11 But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building;

12 Neither by the bloud of goats and calves, but by his own bloud, he entred in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption *for us*.

13 For if * the bloud of bulls and of goats, and * the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh; * Levit. 16. 14. * Numb. 19. 17, &c.

14 How much more shall the bloud of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit, offered himself without ‡ spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? ‡ Or, fault.

15 And for this cause he is the Mediatour of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.

16 For where a testament *is*, there must also of necessity ‡ be the death of the testatour. ‡ Or, *is brought in.*

17 For a testament *is* of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all whilst the testatour liveth.

18 Whereupon, neither the first *testament* was ‡ dedicated without bloud. ‡ Or, *purified.*

19 For when Moses had spoken every precept to all the people according to the law, he took the bloud of calves and of goats, with water and ‡ scarlet wooll, and hyssope, and sprinkled both the book and all the people, ‡ Or, *purple.*

20 Saying, * This *is* the bloud of the testament which God hath enjoyned unto you. * Exod. 24. 8.

21 Moreover, he sprinkled likewise with bloud both the tabernacle, and all the vessels of the ministery.

22 And almost all things are by the law purged with bloud; and without shedding of bloud is no remission.

23 *It was* therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with

with these; but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices then these.

24 For Christ is not entred into the holy places made with hands, *which are* the figures of the true; but into heaven it self, now to * appear in the presence of God for us:

* 1 Joh. 2. 1.

25 Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entreth into the holy place every year with bloud of others:

26 (For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world) but now once in the end of the world, hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.

27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment:

* 1 Pet. 3. 18.

28 So * Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time, without sin, unto salvation.

CHAP. X.

1 *The weakness of the law-sacrifices.* 10 *The sacrifice of Christs body once offered,* 14 *for ever hath taken away sins.* 19 *An exhortation to hold fast the faith with patience and thanksgiving.*

FOr the law having a shadow of good things to come, *and* not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices, which they offered year by year continually, make the comers thereunto perfect.

2 For then would they not have ceased to be offered, because that the worshippers once purged, should have had no more conscience of sins?

3 But in those *sacrifices there is* a remembrance again *made* of sins every year.

4 For *it is* not possible that the bloud of bulls and of goats should take away sins.

5 Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, * Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body † hast thou prepared me:

* Psal. 40. 6, &c.

† Or, *thou hast fitted me.*

6 In burnt-offerings and *sacrifices* for sin thou hast had no pleasure:

7 Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me) to do thy will, O God.

8 Above, when he had said, Sacrifice, and offering, and burnt-offerings, and *offering* for sin thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure *therein* (which are offered by the law)

9 Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God. He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second.

10 By the which will we are sanctified, through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once *for all.*

11 And every priest standeth daily ministring and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins:

12 But this *man* after he had offered one sacrifice for sins, for ever sat down on the right hand of God;

* Psal. 110. 1. 1 Cor. 15. 25. Chap. 1. 13.

13 From henceforth expecting * till his enemies be made his footstool.

14 For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.

15 *Whereof* the holy Ghost also is a witness to us: For after that he had said before,

16 This *is* the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord; I will * put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them:

* Jer. 31. 33.

17 And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.

18 Now where remission of these *is, there is* no more offering for sin.

19 Having therefore, brethren, † boldness to enter into the holiest by the bloud of Jesus,

† Or, liberty.

20 By a new and living way which he hath † consecrated for us, through the vail, that is to say, his flesh;

† Or, *new made.*

21 And *having* an high priest over the house of God:

22 Let us draw near with a true heart, in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.

23 Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering (for he *is* faithful that promised)

24 And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works:

25 Not forsaking the assembling of our selves together, as the manner of some *is*; but exhorting *one another*: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.

26 For * if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,

* Chap. 6. 4.

27 But a certain fearful looking for of judgment, and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

28 He that despised Moses law, died without mercy, * under two or three witnesses:

* Deut. 19. 15. Mat. 18. 16. Joh. 8. 17. 2 Cor. 13. 1.

29 Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the bloud of the covenant wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?

30 For we know him that hath said, * Vengeance *belongeth* unto me, I will recompense, saith the Lord. And again, * The Lord shall judge his people.

* Deut. 32. 35. Rom. 12. 19.

31 *It is* a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

* Deut. 32. 36. Psal. 50. 4.

32 But call to remembrance the former days, in which after ye were illuminated, ye endured a great fight of afflictions:

33 Partly whilst ye were made a gazing-stock both by reproaches and afflictions; and partly whilst ye became companions of them that were so used.

34 For ye had compassion of me in my bonds, and took joyfully the spoiling of your goods, knowing in your selves that ye have in heaven a better and an enduring substance.

35 Cast not away therefore your confidence, which hath great recompence of reward.

36 For ye have need of patience; that after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise.

* Hab. 2. 3, 4.

37 For * yet a little while, and he that shall come will come, and will not tarry.

38 Now * the just shall live by faith: but if *any man* draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him.

* Rom. 1. 17. Gal. 3. 11.

39 But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition; but of them that believe, to the saving of the soul.

CHAP. XI.

1 *What faith is.* 6 *Without faith we cannot please God.* 7 *The worthy fruits thereof in the fathers of old time.*

NOw faith is the † substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.

† Or, *ground, or confidence.*

2 For by it the elders obtained a good report.

3 Through faith we understand that * the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear.

* Gen. 1. 1.

4 By faith * Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice then Cain, by which he obtained

* Gen. 4. 4.

ed witness, that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead, ‡ yet speaketh.

5 By faith * Enoch was translated that he should not see death; and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God.

6 But without faith *it is* impossible to please *him*: for he that cometh to God, must believe that he is, and *that* he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

7 By faith * Noah, being warned of God of things not seen as yet, ‡ moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith.

8 By faith * Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out not knowing whither he went.

9 By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as *in* a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise.

10 For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker *is* God.

11 Through faith also * Sara her self received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged him faithful who had promised.

12 Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, *so many* as the stars of the skie in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea-shore innumerable.

13 These all died † in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were perswaded of *them*, and embraced *them*, and * confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

14 For they that say such things, declare plainly that they seek a country.

15 And truly if they had been mindful of that *country*, from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned:

16 But now they desire a better *country*, that is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a city.

17 By faith * Abraham when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises, offered up his onely begotten *son*:

18 ‡ Of whom it was said, * That in Isaac shall thy seed be called:

19 Accounting that God was able to raise *him* up, even from the dead; from whence also he received him in a figure.

20 By faith * Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come.

21 By faith Jacob when he was a dying, * blessed both the sons of Joseph; and * worshipped *leaning* upon the top of his staff.

22 By faith * Joseph when he died, ‡ made mention of the departing of the children of Israel; and gave commandment concerning his bones.

23 By faith * Moses, when he was born, was hid three moneths of his parents, because they saw *he was* a proper child; and they were not afraid o the kings * commandment.

24 By faith * Moses when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaohs daughter;

25 Chusing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, then to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season;

26 Esteeming the reproach ‡ of Christ greater riches then the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompence of the reward.

27 By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured as seeing him who is invisible.

28 Through faith * he kept the passover, and the sprinkling of bloud, lest he that destroyed the first-born, should touch them. * Exod. 12. 21, &c.

29 By faith * they passed through the Red-sea, as by dry *land*: which the Egyptians assaying to do, were drowned. * Exod. 14. 22.

30 By faith * the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about seven days. * Josh. 6. 20.

31 By faith * the harlot Rahab perished not with them ‡ that believed not, when * she had received the spies with peace. * Josh. 6. 23. ‡ Or, *that were disobedient.*

32 And what shall I more say? for the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and *of* Barak, and *of* Samson, and *of* Jepthae, *of* David also and Samuel, and *of* the prophets: * Josh. 2. 1.

33 Who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions,

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

35 Women received their dead raised to life again: and others were * tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection. * 2 Mac. 7. 7.

36 And others had trial of *cruel* mockings and scourgings, yea, moreover of bonds and imprisonment.

37 They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandred about in sheep-skins, and goat-skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented;

38 (Of whom the world was not worthy) they wandred in deserts, and *in* mountains, and *in* dens and caves of the earth.

39 And these all having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise:

40 God having ‡ provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect. ‡ Or, *foreseen.*

CHAP. XIII.

1 *An exhortation to constant faith, patience, and godliness.* 22 *A commendation of the new testament above the old.*

WHerefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset *us*, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us,

2 Looking unto Jesus the ‡ author and finisher of *our* faith; who for the joy that was set before him, endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. ‡ Or, *beginner.*

3 For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds.

4 Ye have not yet resisted unto bloud, striving against sin.

5 And ye have forgotten the exhortation, which speaketh unto you as unto children, * My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him. * Job 5. 17. Prov. 3. 11.

6 For * whom the Lord loveth, he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. * Rev. 3. 19.

7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons: for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?

8 But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards and not sons.

9 Furthermore, we have had fathers of our flesh,

flesh, which corrected us, and we gave *them* reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live?

10 For they verily for a few days chastened *us* after their own pleasure; but he for *our* profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness.

11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless, afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.

* Isa. 35. 3. 12 Wherefore *lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees.

‡ Or, *even.* 13 And make ‡ straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way, but let it rather be healed.

* Rom. 12. 18. 14 * Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord:

‡ Or, *fail from.* 15 Looking diligently, lest any man ‡ fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up, trouble *you*, and thereby many be defiled:

16 Lest there *be* any fornicatour, or profane person, as Esau, * who for one morsel of meat sold his birth-right.

* Gen. 25. 33. * Gen. 27. 38. ‡ Or, *way to change his mind.* 17 For ye know how that afterward * when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no ‡ place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears.

* Exod. 19. 12, 18, 19. 18 For ye are not come unto * the mount that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor unto blackness, and darkness, and tempest,

* Exod. 20. 19. 19 And the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words, which *voice* they that heard, *intreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more:

* Exod. 19. 13. 20 (For they could not endure that which was commanded, * And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart.

21 And so terrible was the sight, *that* Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake)

22 But ye are come unto mount Sion, & unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels,

‡ Or, *enrolled.* 23 To the general assembly, and church of the first-born which are ‡ written in heaven, and to God the judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect,

‡ Or, *testament.* * 1 Pet. 1. 2. 24 And to Jesus the mediatour of the new ‡ covenant, and to * the bloud of sprinkling, that speaketh better things then *that of* Abel.

25 See that ye refuse not him ŷ speaketh: For if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more *shall not* we *escape*, if we turn away from him that *speaketh* from heaven:

* Hag. 2. 6. 26 Whose voice then shook the earth: but now he hath promised, saying, * Yet once more I shake, not the earth only, but also heaven.

‡ Or, *may be shaken.* 27 And this *word*, Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that ‡ are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken, may remain.

‡ Or, *let us hold fast.* * Deut. 4. 24. and 9. 3. 28 Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, ‡ let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably, with reverence and godly fear.

29 For * our God *is* a consuming fire.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Divers admonitions, as to charity, 4 to honest life; 5 to avoid covetousness, 7 to regard Gods preachers, 9 to take heed of strange doctrines, 10 to confess Christ, 16 to give alms, 17 to obey governours, 18 to pray for the apostle. 20 The conclusion.

* Rom. 12. 10. LEt * brotherly love continue.

* Rom. 12. 13. 1 Pet. 4. 9. 2 * Be not forgetful to entertain strangers: for thereby * some have entertained angels unawares.

* Gen. 18. 3. and 19. 2. 3 Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them; *and* them which suffer adversity, as being your selves also in the body.

4 Marriage *is* honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.

5 *Let your* conversation *be* without covetousness: *and be* content with such things as ye have: for he hath said, * I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.

* Deut. 31. 8. Josh. 1. 5. 6 So that we may boldly say, * The Lord *is* my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me.

* Psal. 56. 4, 11. and 118. 6. ‡ Or, *are the guides.* 7 Remember them which ‡ have the rule over you, who have spoken unto you the word of God: whose faith follow, considering the end of their conversation.

8 Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.

9 Be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines: for *it is* a good thing that the heart be established with grace, not with meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied therein.

10 We have an altar whereof they have no right to eat, which serve the tabernacle.

* Levit. 14. 11, 12. and 6. 30. and 16. 27. 11 For * the bodies of those beasts whose bloud is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest for sin, are burnt without the camp.

12 Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctifie the people with his own bloud, suffered without the gate.

13 Let us go forth therefore unto him without the camp, bearing his reproach.

* Mic. 2. 10. 14 * For here have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come.

* Hos. 14. 2. † Gr. *confessing to.* * Phil. 4. 18. 15 By him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, * the fruit of *our* lips, † giving thanks to his name.

16 But to do good, and to communicate, forget not: for * with such sacrifices God is well pleased.

* 1 Thess. 5. 12. ‡ Or, *guide.* 17 * Obey them that ‡ have the rule over you, and submit your selves: for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account: that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that *is* unprofitable for you.

18 Pray for us: for we trust we have a good conscience, in all things willing to live honestly.

19 But I beseech you the rather to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.

‡ Or, *testament.* ‡ Or, *perfect.* 20 Now the God of peace that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the bloud of the everlasting ‡ covenant,

‡ Or, *doing.* 21 Make you perfect in every good work to do his will, ‡ working in you that which is well-pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ; to whom *be* glory for ever and ever. Amen.

22 And I beseech you, brethren, suffer the word of exhortation; for I have written a letter unto you in few words.

23 Know ye that *our* brother Timothy is set at liberty; with whom, if he come shortly, I will see you.

24 Salute all them that have the rule over you, and all the saints. They of Italy salute you.

25 Grace *be* with you all. Amen.

¶ Written to the Hebrews from Italy, by Timothy.

III.

SUFFERED VNDER PONTIUS PILATE,
WAS CRUCIFIED, DEAD, AND BURIED.

CHAP. I.

We are to rejoyce under the cross: 5 to ask wisdom of God, 13 and in our trials not to impute our weakness, or sins unto him, 19 but rather to hearken to the word, to meditate in it, and to do thereafter: 26 otherwise men may seem, but never be truly religious.

JAmes a servant of God, and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting.

2 My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations;

3 * Knowing *this*, that the trying of your faith worketh patience.

4 But let patience have *her* perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.

5 If any of you lack wisdom, * let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him.

6 But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering: for he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea, driven with the wind, and tossed.

7 For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord.

8 A double-minded man *is* unstable in all his ways.

9 Let the brother of low degree, ‡ rejoyce in that he is exalted:

10 But the rich, in that he is made low: because * as the flower of the grass he shall pass away.

11 For the sun is *no sooner* risen with a burning heat, *but* it withereth the grass, and the flower thereof falleth, and the grace of the fashion of it perisheth: so also shall the rich man fade away in his ways.

12 * Blessed *is* the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with ‡evil, neither tempteth he any man.

14 But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed.

15 Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin when it is finished, bringeth forth death.

16 Do not erre, my beloved brethren.

17 Every good gift, and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.

18 Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of first-fruits of his creatures.

19 Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, * slow to speak, slow to wrath.

20 For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the ingrafted word, which is able to save your souls.

22 But * be ye doers of the word, and not hearers onely, deceiving your own selves.

23 For if any man be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass:

24 For he beholdeth himself and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was.

25 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth *therein*, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his ‡ deed. ‡ Or, doing.

26 If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this mans religion *is* vain.

27 Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father, is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, *and* to keep himself unspotted from the world.

CHAP. II.

It is not agreeable to Christian profession to regard the rich, and to despise the poor brethren: 13 Rather we are to be loving and merciful; 14 and not to boast of faith where no deeds are: 17 which is but a dead faith, 19 the faith of devils, 21 not of Abraham, 25 and Rahab.

MY brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ *the Lord* of glory, with * respect of persons. * Levit. 19. 15.

2 For if there come unto your † assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man, in vile raiment; Deut. 1. 17. and 16. 19. Prov. 24. 23.

3 And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here ‡ in a good place; and say to the poor, stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool: † Gr. *Synagogue.* ‡ Or, *well,* or, *seemly.*

4 Are ye not then partial in your selves, and are become judges of evil thoughts?

5 Hearken my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of ‡ the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him? ‡ Or, *that.*

6 But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment-seats?

7 Do not they blaspheme that worthy name by the which ye are called?

8 If ye fulfill the royal law, according to the scripture, * Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self; ye do well. * Levit 19. 18

9 But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressours. Rom. 13. 9.

10 For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one *point*, he is guilty of all.

11 For ‡ he that said, Do not commit adultery; said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressour of the law. ‡ Or, *then* *which said,*

12 So speak ye and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty.

13 For he shall have judgment without mercy that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy ‡ rejoyceth against judgment. ‡ Or, *glorieth.*

14 What *doth it* profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?

15 If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food:

16 And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed, and filled: notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needfull to the body; what *doth it* profit?

17 Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead being † alone. † Gr. *by it self.*

18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith ‡ without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works. ‡ Some copies read *by thy works.*

19 Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble.
20 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?
21 Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar?
22 ‡ Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect?
23 And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, * Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the friend of God.
24 Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith onely.
25 Likewise also, was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way?
26 For as the body without the ‡ spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

‡ Or, thou seest.
* Gen. 15. 6. Rom. 4. 3. Gal. 3. 6.
‡ Or, breath.

CHAP. III.

1 We are not rashly or arrogantly to reprove others: 5 but rather to bridle the tongue, a little member, but a powerful instrument of much good, and great harm. 13 They who are truly wise, be mild and peaceable, without envying and strife.

MY brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receive the greater ‡ condemnation.
2 For in many things we offend all. * If any man offend not in word, the same *is* a perfect man, *and* able also to bridle the whole body.
3 Behold, we put bits in the horses mouths, that they may obey us; and we turn about their whole body.
4 Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whithersoever the governour listeth.
5 Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things. Behold how great ‡a matter a little fire kindleth:
6 And the tongue *is* a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue amongst our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature; and it is set on fire of hell.
7 For every † kind of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of † mankind:
8 But the tongue can no man tame, *it is* an unruly evil, full of deadly poison.
9 Therewith bless we God, even the Father; and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God.
10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren these things ought not so to be.
11 Doth a fountain send forth at the same ‡ place sweet *water* and bitter?
12 Can the fig-tree, my brethren bear olive-berries? either a vine, figs? so can no fountain yield both salt water and fresh.
13 Who *is* a wise man and endued with knowledge amongst you? let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wisdom.
14 But if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth.
15 This wisdom descendeth not from above, but *is* earthly, ‡ sensual, devilish.
16 For where envying and strife *is*, there *is* † confusion, and every evil work.
17 But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, *and* easie to be intreated, full of mercy and good fruits, ‡ without partiality, and without hypocrisie.
18 And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace.

‡ Or, judgment.
* Eccles. 14. 1. & 19. 16, & 25. 8.
‡ Or, wood.
† Gr. nature.
† Gr. nature of man.
‡ Or, hole.
‡ Or, natural.
† Gr. tumult or unquietness
‡ Or, without wrangling.

CHAP. IV.

1 We are to strive against covetousness, 4 intemperance, 5 pride, 11 detraction, and rash judgment of others; 13 and not to be confident in the good success of worldly business, but mindful ever of the uncertainty of this life, to commit our selves and all our affairs to God's providence.

FRom whence *come* wars and ‡ fightings among you? *come they* not hence, *even* of your ‡ lusts that war in your members?
2 Ye lust, and have not: ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: ye fight and war, yet ye have not, because ye ask not.
3 Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your ‡ lusts.
4 Ye adulterers, and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world, is the enemy of God.
5 Do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth ‡ to envy?
6 But he giveth more grace: wherefore he saith, * God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble.
7 Submit your selves therefore to God; * resist the devil, and he will flee from you:
8 Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you: cleanse *your* hands, ye sinners, and purifie *your* hearts, ye double-minded.
9 Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and *your* joy to heaviness.
10 * Humble your selves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up.
11 Speak not evil one of another, brethren. He that speaketh evil of *his* brother, and judgeth *his* brother, speaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law: but if thou judge the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a judge.
12 There is one law-giver, who is able to save, and to destroy: * who art thou that judgest another?
13 * Go to now, ye that say, To day or to morrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell, and get gain:
14 Whereas ye know not what *shall be* on the morrow: for what *is* your life? ‡ It is even a vapour that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away.
15 For that ye *ought* to say, * If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that.
16 But now ye rejoyce in your boastings: all such rejoycing is evil.
17 Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin.

‡ Or, without wrangling.
‡ Or, brawling.
‡ Or, pleasures.
‡ Or, pleasures.
‡ Or, envy, lusteth.
* Prov. 3. 34.
1 Pet. 5. 5.
* Eph. 4. 27.
* 1 Pet. 5. 6.
* Rom. 14. 4.
* Prov. 27. 1.
‡ Or, for it is.
* 1 Cor. 4. 19.

CHAP. V.

1 Wicked rich men are to fear Gods vengeance. 7 We ought to be patient in afflictions, after the example of the prophets, and Job. 12 To forbear swearing, 13 to pray in adversity, to sing in prosperity, 16 to acknowledge mutually our several faults, to pray one for another, 19 and to reduce a straying brother to the truth.

GO to now ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon *you*.
2 Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten.
3 Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire: ye have heaped treasure together for the last days.

4 Be-

I

I BELEEUE IN GOD THE FATHER ~
ALMIGHTY, MAKER OF HEAVEN & EARTH.

4 Behold, the hire of the labourers, which have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth: and the cries of them which have reaped, are entred into the ears of the Lord of Sabaoth.

5 Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, and been wanton; ye have nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter.

6 Ye have condemned *and* killed the just; *and* he doth not resist you.

7 ‡ Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, until he receive the early and latter rain.

8 Be ye also patient; stablish your hearts: for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh.

9 ‡ Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold, the judge standeth before the door.

10 Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience.

11 Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord: that the Lord is very pitiful and of tender mercy.

12 But above all things, my brethren, *swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yea, be yea, and your nay, nay; lest ye fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing psalms.

14 Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, * anointing him with oyl in the name of the Lord:

15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.

16 Confess *your* faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed: the effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

17 Elias was a man subject to like passions as we are, and * he prayed ‡ earnestly that it might not rain: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six moneths.

18 And * he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the earth brought forth her fruit.

19 Brethren, * if any of you do erre from the truth, and one convert him;

20 Let him know, that he which converteth a sinner from the errour of his way, shall save a soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins.

* Mark 6.13.

* 1 Kings 17.1. ‡ Or, *in his prayer.* * 1 Kings 18.42.45. * Matth. 18.15.

¶ The first Epistle general of PETER.

CHAP. I.

1 He blesseth God for his manifold spiritual graces, 10 shewing that the salvation in Christ is no news, but a thing prophesied of old: 13 and exhorteth them accordingly to a godly conversation, forasmuch as they are now born anew by the word of God.

PEter an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,

2 Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit unto obedience, and * sprinkling of the bloud of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you and peace be multiplied.

3 * Blessed *be* the God, and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his † abundant mercy, hath begotten us again unto a lively hope, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,

4 To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven ‡ for you,

5 Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation, ready to be revealed in the last time.

6 Wherein ye greatly rejoyce, though now for a season (if need be) ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations.

7 That the trial of your faith being much more precious then of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise, and honour, and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ:

8 Whom having not seen, ye love; in whom though now ye see *him* not, yet believing, ye rejoyce with joy unspeakable, and full of glory:

9 Receiving the end of your faith, *even* the salvation of *your* souls.

10 Of which salvation the prophets have enquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace *that should come* unto you:

11 Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signifie, when it testified before-hand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow.

12 Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things which are now reported unto you, by them that have preached the gospel unto you, with the holy Ghost sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into.

13 Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope † to the end, for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ;

14 As obedient children, not fashioning your selves according to the former lusts, in your ignorance:

15 But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation;

16 Because it is written, * Be ye holy, for I am holy.

17 And if ye call on the Father, * who without respect of persons judgeth according to every mans work, pass the time of your sojourning here in fear:

18 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, *as* silver and gold, from your vain conversation *received* by tradition from your fathers;

19 But with the precious bloud of Christ, as of a Lamb without blemish and without spot:

20 * Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you;

21 Who by him do believe in God that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God.

22 Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit, unto unfeigned * love of the brethren; *see that ye* love one another with a pure heart fervently:

23 Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God which liveth and abideth for ever.

24 ‡ For * all flesh *is* as grass, and all the glory of man, as the flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away:

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.

† Gr. *perfectly.*

* Lev. 11. 44. & 19. 2. & 20. 7. * Deut. 10. 17. Rom. 2. 11.

* Rom. 16. 25. Col. 1. 26. 1 Tim. 1. 10. Tit. 1. 2.

* Rom. 12. 10.

‡ Or, *For that.* * Isa. 40. 6. Jam. 1. 10.

CHAP. II.

He deterreth them from the breach of charity, 4 shewing that Christ is the foundation whereupon they are built. 11 He beseecheth them also to abstain from fleshly lusts, 13 to be obedient to magistrates, 18 and teacheth servants how to obey their masters, 20 patiently suffering for well-doing, after the example of Christ.

WHerefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil-speakings,

2 As new-born babes desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:

3 If so be ye have tasted that the Lord *is* gracious.

4 To whom coming, *as unto* a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, *and* precious,

‡ Or, *be ye built.*

5 Ye also as lively stones, ‡are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.

* Is.28.16 Rom.9.33.

6 Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, * Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner-stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded.

‡ Or, *an honour.* * Psal. 118.22. Mat.21.42. Act.4.11. * Is.8.14. Rom.9.33. * Exod. 19.6. Rev.1.6. & 5.10. ‡ Or, *a purchased people.* ‡ Or, *versus.* * Hos.2.23. Rom.9.25. * Rom. 13.14. Gal.5.16. * Chap. 3.16. ‡ Or, *wherein.* * Matth. 5.16. * Rom. 13.1.

7 Unto you therefore which believe *he is* ‡ precious: but unto them which be disobedient, * the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner,

8 * And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, *even to them* which stumble at the word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed.

9 But ye *are* a chosen generation, * a royal priesthood, an holy nation, ‡ a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the ‡ praises of him, who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:

10 * Which in time past *were* not a people, but *are* now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

11 Dearly beloved, I beseech *you* as strangers and pilgrims, * abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul;

12 * Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles: that ‡ whereas they speak against you as evil doers, * they may by *your* good works which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation.

13 * Submit your selves to every ordinance of man for the Lords sake: whether it be to the king, as supreme;

14 Or unto governours, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evil-doers, and for the praise of them that do well.

15 For so is the will of God, that with well-doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men:

† Gr. *having.*

16 As free, and not † using *your* liberty for a cloke of maliciousness, but as the servants of God.

17 ‡ Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the king.

‡ Or, *esteem.* * Eph.6.5. Col.3.22. Tit 2.9. ‡ Or, *thank.*

18 * Servants *be* subject to *your* masters with all fear, not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward.

‡ Or, *thank.*

19 For this *is* ‡ thank-worthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully.

20 For what glory *is it*, if when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if when ye do well, and suffer *for it*, ye take it patiently; this *is* ‡ acceptable with God.

‡ Or, *thank.* ‡ Some read, *for you.*

21 For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered ‡ for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps:

22 * Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth:

* Is. 53.9.

23 Who when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatned not; but ‡ committed *himself* to him that judgeth righteously:

‡ Or, *committed his cause.*

24 * Who his own self bare our sins in his own body ‡ on the tree, that we being dead to sin, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed.

* Is. 53.4,5,6. Matt 8.17 ‡ Or, *to.*

25 For ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls.

CHAP. III.

1 He teacheth the duty of wives and husbands to each other, 8 exhorting all men to unity and love, 14 and to suffer persecution. 19 He declareth also the benefits of Christ toward the old world.

LIkewise, * ye wives, *be* in subjection to your own husbands; that if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives,

* Eph. 5.22. Col.3.18.

2 While they behold your chaste conversation *coupled* with fear.

3 * Whose adorning, let it not be that outward *adorning*, of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel:

* 1 Tim. 2.9.

4 But *let it be* the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, *even the ornament* of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

5 For after this manner in the old time, the holy women also who trusted in God adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands;

6 Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, * calling him lord: whose † daughters ye are as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement.

* Gen. 18.12. † Gr. *children.*

7 Likewise ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindred.

8 Finally, *be ye* all of one mind, having compassion one of another, ‡ love as brethren, *be* pitiful, *be* courteous:

‡ Or, *love to the brethren.*

9 * Not rendring evil for evil, or railing for railing: but contrariwise, blessing; knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a blessing.

* Prov. 17 13 &20.22. Ro.12.17. 1 Thes. 5.15.

10 For * he that will love life, and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile.

* Psal. 34.12,&c.

11 Let him * eschew evil, and do good; let him seek peace, and ensue it.

* Is.1.16.

12 For the eyes of the Lord *are* over the righteous, and his ears *are open* unto their prayers: but the face of the Lord *is* ‡ against them that do evil.

† Gr. *upon.*

13 And who *is* he that will harm you, if ye be followers of that which is good?

14 * But and if ye suffer for righteousness sake, happy *are ye*: and * be not afraid of their terrour, neither be troubled;

* Matth. 5.10. * Is. 8. 12, 13.

15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts: and *be* ready always to *give* an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekness and ‡ fear:

‡ Or, *reverence.*

16 * Having a good conscience; that whereas they speak evil of you, as of evil doers, they may be ashamed that falsly accuse your good conversation in Christ.

* Chap. 2.12.

17 For *it is* better, if the will of God be so, that ye

ye ſuffer for well-doing, then for evil-doing.

18 For Chriſt alſo hath * once ſuffered for ſins, the juſt for the unjuſt, (that he might bring us to God) being put to death in the fleſh, but quickned by the Spirit.

19 By which alſo he went and preached unto the ſpirits in priſon;

20 Which ſometime were diſobedient, * when once the long-ſuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is eight ſouls, were ſaved by water.

21 The like figure whereunto, *even* baptiſm, doth alſo now ſave us, (not the putting away of the filth of the fleſh, but the anſwer of a good conſcience towards God) by the reſurrection of Jeſus Chriſt:

22 Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels, and authorities, and powers being made ſubject unto him.

CHAP. IV.

He exhorteth them to ceaſe from ſin by the example of Chriſt, and the conſideration of the general end that now approacheth: 12 and comforteth them againſt perſecution.

FOraſmuch then as Chriſt hath ſuffered for us in the fleſh, arm your ſelves likewiſe with the ſame mind: for he that hath ſuffered in the fleſh, hath ceaſed from ſin;

2 That he no longer ſhould live the reſt of *his* time in the fleſh, to the luſts of men, but to the will of God.

3 For the time paſt of our life may ſuffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in laſciviouſneſs, luſts, exceſs of wine, revellings, banquetings, and abominable idolatries:

4 Wherein they think it ſtrange that you run not with them to the ſame exceſs of riot, ſpeaking evil of *you*:

5 Who ſhall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.

6 For, for this cauſe was the goſpel preached alſo to them that are dead, that they might be judged according to men in the fleſh, but live according to God in the ſpirit.

7 But the end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore ſober and watch unto prayer.

8 And above all things have fervent charity among your ſelves: for * charity ‡ ſhall cover the multitude of ſins.

9 * Uſe hoſpitality one to another, without grudging.

10 * As every man hath received the gift, *even ſo* miniſter the ſame one to another, as good ſtewards of the manifold grace of God.

11 If any man ſpeak, *let him ſpeak* as the oracles of God; if any man miniſter, *let him do it* as of the ability which God giveth: that God in all things may be glorified through Jeſus Chriſt; to whom be praiſe and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

12 Beloved, think it not ſtrange concerning the fiery trial, which is to try you, as though ſome ſtrange thing happened unto you:

13 But rejoyce, in as much as ye are partakers of Chriſts ſufferings; that when his glory ſhall be revealed, ye may be glad alſo with exceeding joy.

14 * If ye be reproached for the name of Chriſt, happy *are ye*; for the ſpirit of glory, and of God reſteth upon you: on their part he is evil ſpoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

15 But let none of you ſuffer as a murderer, or *as* a thief, or *as* an evil-doer, or as a buſie-body in other mens matters.

16 Yet if *any man ſuffer* as a Chriſtian, let him not be aſhamed; but let him glorifie God on this behalf.

17 For the time *is come* that judgment muſt begin at the houſe of God: and if *it* firſt *begin* at us, what ſhall the end *be* of them that obey not the goſpel of God?

18 * And if the righteous ſcarcely be ſaved, where ſhall the ungodly and the ſinner appear? * Prov. 11. 31.

19 Wherefore, let them that ſuffer according to the will of God, commit the keeping of their ſouls *to him* in well-doing as unto a faithful Creatour.

CHAP. V.

1 He exhorteth the elders to feed their flock; 5 the younger to obey, 8 and all to be ſober, watchful, and conſtant in the faith, 9 to reſiſt the cruel adverſary the devil.

THe elders which are among you, I exhort, who am alſo an elder, and a witneſs of the ſufferings of Chriſt, and alſo a partaker of the glory that ſhall be revealed:

2 Feed the flock of God ‡ which is among you, taking the overſight *thereof*, not by conſtraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; ‡ Or, *as much as in you is.*

3 Neither as ‡ being lords over *Gods* heritage, but being enſamples to the flock. ‡ Or, over-ruling.

4 And when the chief Shepherd ſhall appear, ye ſhall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.

5 Likewiſe ye younger, ſubmit your ſelves unto the elder: yea all *of you* be ſubject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for * God reſiſteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble. * James 4. 6.

6 * Humble your ſelves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time: * James 4. 10.

7 * Caſting all your care upon him, for he careth for you. * Pſal. 55. 22.

8 Be ſober, be vigilant; becauſe your adverſary the devil, as a roring lion, walketh about, ſeeking whom he may devour. Matt. 6. 25.

9 Whom reſiſt ſtedfaſt in the faith, knowing that the ſame afflictions are accompliſhed in your brethren that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Chriſt Jeſus, after that ye have ſuffered a while, make you perfect, ſtabliſh, ſtrengthen, ſettle *you*.

11 To him *be* glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

12 By Silvanus a faithful brother unto you (as I ſuppoſe) I have written briefly, exhorting, and teſtifying, that this is the true grace of God wherein ye ſtand.

13 The *church that is* at Babylon elected together with *you*, ſaluteth you, and *ſo doth* Marcus my ſon.

14 * Greet ye one another with a kiſs of charity. Peace *be* with you all that are in Chriſt Jeſus. Amen. * Rom. 16. 16.

¶ The second Epistle general of PETER.

CHAP. I.

1 Confirming them in hope of the increase of God's grace, 5 he exhorteth them by faith and good works, to make their calling sure, 12 whereof he is careful to remember them, knowing that his death is at hand, 16 and witnesseth them to be constant in the faith of Christ, who is the true Son of God, by the eye-witness of the apostles beholding his majesty, and by the testimony of the Father and the prophets.

SIMON Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us, through the righteousness of God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ:

2 Grace and peace be multiplied unto you, through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord,

3 According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that *pertain* unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us ‡ to glory and virtue:

‡ Or, *by.*

4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises; that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

5 And besides this, giving all diligence, adde to your faith, virtue; and to virtue, knowledge;

6 And to knowledge, temperance; and to temperance, patience; and to patience, godliness;

7 And to godliness, brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness, charity.

8 For if these things be in you, and abound, they make *you that ye shall* neither *be* barren, nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

9 But he that lacketh these things, is blind, and cannot see far off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins.

10 Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall:

11 For so an entrance shall be ministred unto you abundantly, into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

12 Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though ye know them, and be established in the present truth.

13 Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up, by putting *you* in remembrance:

14 Knowing that shortly I must put off *this* my tabernacle, even as * our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me.

* John 21. 18.

15 Moreover, I will endeavour that you may be able after my decease, to have these things always in remembrance.

16 For we have not followed * cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eye-witnesses of his majesty.

* 1 Cor. 1. 17. & 2. 1.

17 For he received from God the Father honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, * This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

* Matt. 17. 5.

18 And this voice which came from heaven, we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.

19 We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day-star arise in your hearts:

20 Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation.

* 2 Tim. 3. 16.

21 For * the prophecy came not ‡ in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake *as they were* moved by the holy Ghost.

‡ Or, *at any time.*

CHAP. II.

1 He foretelleth them of false teachers, shewing the the impiety and punishment both of them and their followers: 7 from which the godly shall be delivered, as Lot was out of Sodom: 10 and more fully describeth the manners of those prophane and blasphemous seducers, whereby they may be the better known and avoided.

BUT there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.

2 And many shall follow their ‡ pernicious ways, by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of:

‡ Or, *lascivious ways*, as some copies read.

3 And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingreth not, and their damnation slumbreth not.

4 For if God spared not * the angels that sinned, but cast *them* down to hell, and delivered *them* into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment;

* Joh. 4. 18. Jude 6.

5 And spared not the old world, but saved * Noe the eighth *person*, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly:

* Gen. 7. 1.

6 And * turning the cities of Sodom, and Gomorrha into ashes, condemned *them* with an overthrow, making *them* an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly;

* Gen. 19. 24.

7 And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked:

8 (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with *their* unlawful deeds)

9 The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished:

10 But chiefly them that walk after the flesh, in the lust of uncleanness, and despise ‡ government: * Presumptuous *are they*, self-willed, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities:

‡ Or, *dominion.* * Jude 8.

11 Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation ‡ against them before the Lord.

‡ Some read, *against themselves.*

12 But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not, and shall utterly perish in their own corruption;

13 And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, *as* they that count it pleasure to riot in the day-time: spots *they are*, and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings, while they feast with you;

14 Having eyes full of † adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children:

† Gr. *an adulteress.*

15 Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of * Balaam, *the son* of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness;

* Numb. 22. 23. Jude 11.

16 But

III

WHICH WAS CONCEIVED BY THE HOLY GHOST, BORNE OF THE VIRGIN MARY.

16 But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumb
ass speaking with mans voice, forbad the mad-
neſs of the prophet.
17 * Theſe are wells without water, clouds
that are carried with a tempeſt, to whom the
miſt of darkneſs is reſerved for ever.
18 For when they ſpeak great ſwelling *words*
of vanity, they allure through the luſts of the
fleſh, through much wantonneſs, thoſe that
were ‡ clean eſcaped from them who live in
errour:
19 While they promiſe them liberty, they
themſelves are * the ſervants of corruption: for
of whom a man is overcome, of the ſame is he
brought in bondage.
20 For * if after they have eſcaped the pollu-
tions of the world, through the knowledge of
the Lord and Saviour Jeſus Chriſt, they are again
intangled therein, and overcome; the latter end
is worſe with them then the beginning.
21 For it had been better for them not to
have known the way of righteouſneſs, then after
they have known *it*, to turn from the holy com-
mandment delivered unto them.
22 But it is happened unto them according
to the true proverb, * The dog *is* turned to his
own vomit again; and, The ſow that was waſh-
ed, to her wallowing in the mire.

CHAP. III.

1 *He aſſureth them of the certainty of Chriſt coming to judgment, againſt thoſe ſcorners who diſpute againſt it; 8 warning the godly for the long patience of God, to haſten their repentance.* 10 *He deſcribeth alſo the manner how the world ſhall be deſtroyed:* 11 *exhorting them from the expectation thereof, to all holineſs of life;* 15 *and again, to think the patience of God to tend to their ſalvation, as Paul wrote to them in his epiſtles.*

THis ſecond epiſtle, beloved, I now write
unto you; in *both* which I ſtir up your
pure minds by way of remembrance:
2 That ye may be mindful of the words
which were ſpoken before by the holy prophets,
and of the commandment of us the apoſtles of
the Lord and Saviour:
3 * Knowing this firſt, that there ſhall come
in the laſt days ſcoffers, walking after their own
luſts,
4 And ſaying, Where is the promiſe of his
coming? for ſince the fathers fell aſleep, all
things continue as *they were* from the begin-
ning of the creation.
5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that
by the word of God the heavens were of old,
and the earth † ſtanding out of the water, and † Gr. *conſiſting.*
in the water.
6 Whereby the world that then was, being
overflowed with water, periſhed.
7 But the heavens and the earth which are
now, by the ſame word are kept in ſtore, reſer-
ved unto fire againſt the day of judgment, and
perdition of ungodly men.
8 But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one
thing, that one day *is* with the Lord as a thou-
ſand years, and * a thouſand years as one day. * Pſa. 90. 4.
9 The Lord is not ſlack concerning his pro-
miſe, (as ſome men count ſlackneſs) but is long-
ſuffering to us-ward, * not willing that any * Ezek.
ſhould periſh, but * that all ſhould come to re- 18. 32.
pentance. and 33. 11.
10 But * the day of the Lord will come as a * 1 Tim.
thief in the night; in the which the heavens ſhall 2. 4.
paſs away with a great noiſe, and the elements * 1 Theſ.
ſhall melt with fervent heat, the earth alſo and 5. 2.
the works that are therein ſhall be burnt up.
11 Seeing then that all theſe things ſhall be
diſſolved, what manner of perſons ought ye to
be in *all* holy converſation and godlineſs,
12 Looking for, and ‡ haſting unto the co- ‡ Or,
ming of the day of God, wherein the heavens *haſting the*
being on fire ſhall be diſſolved, and the ele- *coming.*
ments ſhall melt with fervent heat?
13 Nevertheleſs we, according to his pro-
miſe, look for * new heavens and a new earth, * Iſa. 65.
wherein dwelleth righteouſneſs. 17. & 66.
14 Wherefore, beloved, ſeeing that ye look 22.
for ſuch things, be diligent that ye may be Rev. 21. 1.
found of him in peace, without ſpot, and blame-
leſs:
15 And account *that* * the long-ſuffering of * Rom.
our Lord *is* ſalvation; even as our beloved bro- 2. 4.
ther Paul alſo, according to the wiſdom given
unto him, hath written unto you;
16 As alſo in all *his* epiſtles, ſpeaking in them
of theſe things: in which are ſome things hard
to be underſtood, which they that are unlearned
and unſtable wreſt, as *they do* alſo the other ſcri-
ptures, unto their own deſtruction.
17 Ye therefore, beloved, ſeeing ye know
theſe things before, beware leſt ye alſo being led
away with the errour of the wicked, fall from
your own ſtedfaſtneſs.
18 But grow in grace, and *in* the knowledge
of our Lord and Saviour Jeſus Chriſt: To him
be glory, both now and for ever. Amen.

¶ The firſt Epiſtle general of JOHN.

CHAP. I.

1 *He deſcribeth the perſon of Chriſt, in whom we have eternal life, by a communion with God;* 5 *to which we muſt adjoin holineſs of life, to teſtifie the truth of that our communion, and profeſſion of faith, as alſo to aſſure us of the forgiveneſs our ſins by Chriſts death.*

THat which was from the beginning,
which we have heard, which we have
ſeen with our eyes, which we have look-
ed upon, and our hands have handled
of the word of life;
2 (For the life was manifeſted, and we have
ſeen *it*, and bear witneſs, and ſhew unto you
that eternal life which was with the Father, and
was manifeſted unto us)
3 That which we have ſeen and heard, declare
we unto you, that ye alſo may have fellowſhip
with us: and truly our fellowſhip *is* with the
Father, and with his Son Jeſus Chriſt.
4 And theſe things write we unto you, that
your joy may be full.
5 This then is the meſſage which we have
heard of him, and declare unto you, that * God * John 8.
is light, and in him is no darkneſs at all. 12.
6 If we ſay that we have fellowſhip with
him, and walk in darkneſs, we lie, and do not
the truth:
7 But if we walk in the light, as he is in the
light, we have fellowſhip one with another, and
* the bloud of Jeſus Chriſt his Son cleanſeth us * Heb. 9.
from all ſin. 14.
8 * If we ſay that we have no ſin, we deceive Rev. 1. 5.
our ſelves, and the truth is not in us. * 1 King.
9 If we confeſs our ſins, he is faithful and 8. 46.
juſt to forgive us our ſins, and to cleanſe us from Prov. 20. 9.
all unrighteouſneſs. Eccles. 7.
10 If we ſay that we have not ſinned, we 20.
make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

CHAP. II.

1 He comforteth them against the sins of infirmity, 3 Rightly to know God, is to keep his commandments, 9 to love our brethren, 15 and not to love the world. 18 We must beware of seducers: 20 from whose deceits the godly are safe preserved by perseverance in faith and holiness of life.

MY little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, * we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous;

* Heb. 5. 24.

2 And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for *the sins of* the whole world.

3 And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments.

4 He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him.

5 But whoso keepeth his word, in him verily is the love of God perfected: Hereby know we that we are in him.

6 He that saith he abideth in him, ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked.

* 2 Joh. 5. 7 Brethren, * I write no new commandment unto you, but an old commandment which ye had from the beginning: the old commandment is the word which ye have heard from the beginning.

8 Again, a new commandment I write unto you, which thing is true in him, and in you: because the darkness is past, and the true light now shineth.

9 He that saith he is in the light, and hateth his brother, is in darkness even until now.

* Chap. 3. 14. 10 * He that loveth his brother abideth in the light, and there is none † occasion of stumbling in him.

† Gr. *scandal.* 11 But he that hateth his brother is in darkness, and walketh in darkness, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that darkness hath blinded his eyes.

12 I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for his names sake.

13 I write unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because ye have overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little children, because ye have known the Father.

14 I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have known him *that is* from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.

15 Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.

17 And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God, abideth for ever.

18 Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time.

19 They went out from us, but they were not of us: for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but *they went out*, that they might be made manifest, that they were not all of us.

20 But ye have an unction from the holy One, and ye know all things.

21 I have not written unto you because ye know not the truth: but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth.

22 Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist that denieth the Father and the Son.

23 Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: [*but*] *he that acknowledgeth the Son, hath the Father also.*

24 Let that therefore abide in you, which ye have heard from the beginning. If that which ye have heard from the beginning, shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father.

25 And this is the promise that he hath promised us, *even* eternal life.

26 These things have I written unto you, concerning them that seduce you.

27 But the anointing which ye have received of him, abideth in you: and ye need not that any man teach you: but, as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie: and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in ‡ him.

‡ Or, *it.*

28 And now, little children, abide in him; that when he shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his coming.

29 If ye know that he is righteous, ‡ ye know that every one that doeth righteousness, is born of him.

‡ Or, *know ye.*

CHAP. III.

1 He declareth the singular love of God towards us, in making us his sons: 3 who therefore ought obediently to keep his commandments, 11 as also brotherly to love one another.

BEhold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.

2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know, that when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.

3 And every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure.

4 Whosoever committeth sin, transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.

5 And ye know that he was manifested * to take away our sins; and in him is no sin.

* Isa. 53. 6, &c.

6 Whosoever abideth in him, sinneth not: whosoever sinneth, hath not seen him, neither known him.

7 Little children, let no man deceive you: He that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous:

8 * He that committeth sin, is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

* Joh. 8. 44.

9 Whosoever is born of God, doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: Whosoever doeth not righteousness, is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

11 For this is the ‡ message that ye heard from the beginning, * that we should love one another.

‡ Or, *commandment.*

12 Not as * Cain, *who* was of that wicked one, and slew his brother: And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works were evil, and his brothers righteous.

* Joh. 13. 34. & 15. 12. * Gen. 4. 8.

13 Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you.

14 We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren: he that loveth not *his* brother, abideth in death.

15 Who-

15 Whosoever hateth his brother, is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him.

16 Hereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his life for us: and we ought to lay down *our* lives for the brethren.

17 But * whoso hath this worlds good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels *of compassion* from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him?

18 My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue, but in deed and in truth.

19 And hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall † assure our hearts before him.

20 For if our heart condemn us, God is greater then our heart, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, *then* have we confidence towards God.

22 And * whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.

23 And * this is his commandment, that we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us commandment.

24 And * he that keepeth his commandments dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us.

CHAP. IV.

1 He warneth them not to believe all teachers who boast of the Spirit, but to try them by the rules of the catholick faith: 7 and by many reasons exhorteth to brotherly love.

BEloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

2 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God.

3 And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God: and this is that *spirit* of antichrist, whereof you have heard that it should come, and even now already is it in the world.

4 Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, then he that is in the world.

5 They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them.

6 We are of God: * he that knoweth God, heareth us; he that is not of God, heareth not us. Hereby know we the Spirit of truth, and the spirit of errour.

7 Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth, is born of God, and knoweth God.

8 He that loveth not, knoweth not God; for God is love.

9 * In this was manifested the love of God towards us, because that God sent his onely begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him.

10 Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son *to be* the propitiation for our sins.

11 Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another.

12 * No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us.

13 Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit.

14 And we have seen and do testifie, that the Father sent the Son *to be* the Saviour of the world.

15 Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

16 And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is † our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world.

† Gr. *love with us.*

18 There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment: he that feareth, is not made perfect in love.

19 We love him; because he first loved us.

20 If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen?

21 And * this commandment have we from him, that he who loveth God, love his brother also.

* Joh. 13. 34. and 15. 12.

CHAP. V.

He that loveth God, loveth his children, and keepeth his commandments; 3 which to the faithful are light, and not grievous. 9 Jesus is the Son of God, able to save us, 14 and to hear our prayers, which we make for our selves, and for others.

WHosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ, is born of God: and every one that loveth him that begat, loveth him also that is begotten of him.

2 By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God and keep his commandments.

3 For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and * his commandments are not grievous.

* Matth. 11. 30.

4 For whatsoever is born of God, overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, *even* our faith.

5 Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?

6 This is he that came by water and blood, *even* Jesus Christ; not by water onely, but by water and blood: and it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth.

7 For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the holy Ghost: and these three are one.

8 And there are three that bear witness in earth, the spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.

9 If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater: for this is the witness of God, which he hath testified of his Son.

10 He that believeth on the Son of God, hath the witness in himself: he that believeth not God, hath made him a liar, because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son.

11 And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life: and this life is in his Son.

12 He that hath the Son, hath life; *and* he that hath not the Son of God, hath not life.

13 These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God.

‡ Or, *concerning him.*

14 And this is the confidence that we have † in him, that * if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us.

* Ch. 3. 22.

15 And

15 And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.

16 If any man see his brother sin a sin *which is* not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. * Matth. xii. 31. Mar. 3. 29. * There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it.

17 All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death.

18 We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

19 *And* we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness.

20 And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true: and we are in him that is true, *even* in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life.

21 Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen.

¶ The second Epistle of JOHN.

He exhorteth a certain honourable matron with her children, to persevere in Christian love and belief, 8 lest they lose the reward of their former profession; 10 and to have nothing to do with those seducers that bring not the true doctrine of Christ Jesus.

THE elder unto the elect lady, and her children, whom I love in the truth; and not I only, but also all they that have known the truth;

2 For the truth's sake which dwelleth in us, and shall be with us for ever:

3 Grace be with you, mercy, *and* peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love.

4 I rejoyced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the Father.

5 And now I beseech thee, lady, * not as though I wrote a new commandment unto thee, but that which we had from the beginning, that we love one another. * 1 John ii. 7.

6 And this is love, that we walk after his commandments. This is the commandment, that as ye have heard from the beginning, ye should walk in it.

7 For many deceivers are entred into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.

8 Look to your selves, that we lose not those things which we have ‡ wrought, but that we receive a full reward. ‡ Or, gained. Some copies read, *which ye have gained, but that ye receive, &c.*

9 Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God: he that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son.

10 If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into *your* house, neither bid him God speed.

11 For he that biddeth him God speed, is partaker of his evil deeds.

12 Having many things to write unto you, I would not *write* with paper and ink; but I trust to come unto you, and speak † face to face, that our joy may be full. † Gr. *mouth to mouth.*

13 The children of thy elect sister greet thee. Amen.

¶ The third Epistle of JOHN.

He commendeth Gaius for his piety, 5 and hospitality 7 to true preachers; 9 complaining of the unkind dealing of ambitious Diotrephes on the contrary side, 11 whose evil example he not to be followed: 12 and giveth special testimony to the good report of Demetrius.

THE elder unto the welbeloved Gaius, whom I love ‡ in the truth. ‡ Or, *truly.*

2 Beloved, I ‡ wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth. ‡ Or, *pray.*

3 For I rejoyced greatly when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is in thee, even as thou walkest in the truth.

4 I have no greater joy then to hear that my children walk in truth.

5 Beloved, thou doest faithfully whatsoever thou doest to the brethren, and to strangers;

6 Which have born witness of thy charity before the church: whom if thou bring forward on their journey after a godly sort, thou shalt do well:

7 Because that for his names sake they went forth, taking nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receive such, that we might be fellow-helpers to the truth.

9 I wrote unto the church: but Diotrephes, who loveth to have the preeminence among them, receiveth us not.

10 Wherefore if I come, I will remember his deeds which he doeth, prating against us with malicious words: and not content therewith, neither doth he himself receive the brethren, and forbiddeth them that would, and casteth *them* out of the church.

11 Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but that which is good. He that doeth good, is of God: but he that doeth evil, hath not seen God.

12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth it self: yea, and we *also* bear record, and ye know that our record is true.

13 I had many things to write, but I will not with ink and pen write unto thee:

14 But I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speak † face to face. Peace *be* to thee. Our friends salute thee. Greet the friends by name. † Gr. *mouth to mouth.*

¶ The

XI

THE RESURRECTION OF THE BODY.

¶ The general Epistle of JUDE.

He exhorteth them to be constant in the profession of the faith. 4 *False teachers are crept in to seduce them;* 5 *for whose damnable doctrine and manners, horrible punishment is prepared:* 20 *whereas the godly by the assistance of the holy Spirit, and prayers to God, may persevere, and grow in grace, and keep themselves, and recover others out of the snares of those deceivers.*

JUde the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, and called:

2 Mercy unto you, and peace, and love be multiplied.

3 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation: it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you, that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.

4 For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the onely Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward * destroyed them that believed not.

6 And *the angels which kept not their † first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness, unto the judgment of the great day.

7 Even as * Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them in like manner giving themselves over to fornication, and going after † strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.

8 * Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities.

9 Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil, he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, * The Lord rebuke thee.

10 But these speak evil of those things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brute beasts; in those things they corrupt themselves.

11 Wo unto them; for they have gone in the way of Cain, and *ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core. * 2 Pet. 2. 15.

12 These are spots in your feasts of charity when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: * clouds *they are* without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots; * 2 Pet. 2. 17.

13 Raging waves of the sea, foming out their own shame; wandring stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.

14 And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints,

15 To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them, of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard *speeches*, which ungodly sinners have spoken against him.

16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaketh great swelling *words*, having mens persons in admiration because of advantage.

17 But beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ:

18 *How* that they told you *there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts. * 1 Tim. 4. 1. 2 Tim. 3. 1.

19 These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the Spirit. 2 Pet. 3. 3.

20 But ye beloved, building up your selves on your most holy faith, praying in the holy Ghost,

21 Keep your selves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life.

22 And of some have compassion, making a difference:

23 And others save with fear, pulling *them* out of the fire; hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.

24 Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present *you* faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy,

25 To the onely wise God our Saviour *be* glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen.

¶ The Revelation of S. JOHN the Divine.

CHAP. I.

John writeth his revelation to the seven churches of Asia, signified by the seven golden candlesticks. 7 *The coming of Christ.* 14 *His glorious power and majesty.*

THe revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to pass; and he sent and signified *it* by his angel unto his servant John:

2 Who bare record of the word of God, and of the testimony of Jesus Christ, and of all things that he saw.

3 Blessed *is* he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

4 JOhn to the seven churches which are in Asia: Grace *be* unto you, and peace, from him * which is, and which was, and which is to come; and from the seven spirits which are before his throne;

5 And from Jesus Christ, *who is* the faithful witness, *and* the * first-begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth: Unto him that loved us, * and washed us from our sins in his own blood, * 1 Cor. 15. 20. Col. 1. 18. * Heb. 9. 14.

6 And hath * made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him *be* glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen. 1 John 1. 7. * 1 Pet. 2. 5.

7 * Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and * they *also* which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him: even so, Amen. * Dan 7. 13. Matth. 24. 30.

8 * I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty. * Zech. 12. 10.

9 I John, who also am your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ. * Chap. 21. 5. and 22. 13.

10 I was in the Spirit on the Lords day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet,

11 Saying,

11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: and, What thou seest, write in a book, and send *it* unto the seven churches which are in Asia; unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea.

12 And I turned to see the voice that spake with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks;

13 And in the midst of the seven candlesticks, * Dan. 10. 5, 6. one like unto the Son of man, * clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle.

14 His head and *his* hairs *were* white like wooll, as white as snow; and his eyes *were* as a flame of fire;

15 And his feet like unto fine brass, as if they burned in a furnace; and his voice as the sound of many waters.

16 And he had in his right hand seven stars: and out of his mouth went a sharp two-edged sword: and his countenance *was* as the sun shineth in his strength.

17 And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead: and he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not; * I am the first and the last: * Isa. 41. 4. and 44. 6.

18 I *am* he that liveth, and was dead; and behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.

19 Write the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter,

20 The mystery of the seven stars which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches: and the seven candlesticks which thou sawest, are the seven churches.

CHAP. II.

What is commanded to be written to the angels, (that is, the ministers) of the churches of 1 Ephesus, 8 Smyrna, 12 Pergamos, 18 Thyatira: and what is commended, or found wanting in them.

UNto the angel of the church of Ephesus, write, These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks;

2 I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil: and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not; and hast found them liars:

3 And hast born, and hast patience, and for my names sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.

4 Nevertheless, I have *somewhat* against thee, because thou hast left thy first love.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.

6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitanes, which I also hate.

7 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches, To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

8 And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna, write, These things saith the first and the last, which was dead, and is alive;

9 I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich) and *I know* the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but *are* the synagogue of Satan.

10 Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.

11 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. He that overcometh, shall not be hurt of the second death.

12 And to the angel of the church in Pergamos, write, These things saith he, which hath the sharp sword with two edges;

13 I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, *even* where Satans seat *is*: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas *was* my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of * Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling-block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication. * Num. 25.

15 So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate.

16 Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

17 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, saving he that receiveth *it*.

18 And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira, write, These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet *are* like fine brass;

19 I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works; and the last *to be* more then the first.

20 Notwithstanding, I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman * Jezabel, which calleth her self a propheteſs, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols. * 1 King. 16. 31.

21 And I gave her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

22 Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds.

23 And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that * I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works. * Psal. 7. 9. Jer. 11. 20. and 17. 10.

24 But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, As many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak, I will put upon you none other burden.

25 But that which ye have *already*, hold fast till I come.

26 And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations:

27 (* And he shall rule them with a rod of iron: as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers) even as I received of my Father. * Psal. 2. 9.

28 And I will give him the morning-star.

29 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

CHAP. III.

2 *The angel of the church of Sardis is reproved,*

3 *exhorted*

Christs Glorious Appearance. Revel: 1

13. And in the midst of the 7. Candlesticks one like unto the Son of man, clothed with a garment downe to the foot etc:
16. And he had in his right hand 7. Starrs: And out of his mouth went a sharp two edged sword: and his countenance was as the Sun etc:

Christs glorious Appearance . Revel: 1

3 exhorted to repent, and threatned if he do not repent. 8 The angel of the Church of Philadelphia 10 is approved for his diligence and patience. 15 The angel of Laodicea is rebuked, for being neither hot nor cold, 19 and admonished to be more zealous. 20 Christ standeth at the door and knocketh.

AND unto the angel of the church in Sardis, write, These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead.

2 Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before God.

3 Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. * If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.

4 Thou hast a few names even in Sardis, which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy.

5 He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the * book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.

6 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia, write, These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath * the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth:

8 I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name.

9 Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan (which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie) behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.

11 Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

12 Him that overcometh, will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, *which is* new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and *I will write upon him* my new name.

13 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

14 And unto the angel of the church ‡ of the Laodiceans, write, These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God;

15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou were cold or hot.

16 So then because thou art luke-warm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth:

17 Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked.

18 I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and *that* the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eye-salve, that thou mayest see.

19 * As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore and repent.

20 Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.

21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.

22 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

CHAP. IV.

2 John seeth the throne of God in heaven. 4 The four and twenty elders. 6 The four beasts full of eyes before and behind. 10 The elders lay down their crowns, and worship him that sat on the throne.

AFTER this I looked, and behold, a door *was* opened in heaven: and the first voice which I heard, *was* as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither, and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter.

2 And immediately I was in the spirit: and behold, a throne was set in heaven, and *one* sat on the throne.

3 And he that sat, was to look upon like a jasper, and a sardine stone: and *there was* a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.

4 And round about the throne *were* four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

5 And out of the throne proceeded lightnings, and thundrings, and voices: and *there were* seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of God.

6 And before the throne *there was* a sea of glass like unto chrystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, *were* four beasts full of eyes, before and behind.

7 And the first beast *was* like a lion, and the second beast like a calf, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast *was* like a flying eagle.

8 And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him, and *they were* full of eyes within; and † they rest not day and night, saying, * Holy, holy, holy, Lord God almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.

9 And when those beasts give glory, and honour and thanks to him that sat on the throne, who liveth for ever and ever,

10 The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying,

11 * Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory, and honour, and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are, and were created.

CHAP. V.

1 The book sealed with seven seals: 9 which only the Lamb that was slain is worthy to open. 12 Therefore the elders praise him, 9 and confess that he redeemed them with his blood.

AND I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne, a book written within, and on the backside, sealed with seven seals.

2 And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?

3 And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon.

4 And

---

* Prov. 2. 11. Heb. 12. 3.

† Gr. they have no rest.

* Isa. 6. 3.

* Chap. 5. 12.

4 And I wept much because no man was found worthy to open, and to read the book, neither to look thereon.

5 And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, * the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.

* Gen. 49. 9.

6 And I beheld, and lo, in the midst of the throne, and of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders stood a Lamb, as it had been slain, having seven horns, and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth.

7 And he came and took the book out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne.

8 And when he had taken the book, the four beasts, and four *and* twenty elders fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of ‡ odours, which are the prayers of saints.

‡ Or, incense.

9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood, out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;

10 * And hast made us unto our God, kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth.

* 1 Pet. 2. 9.

11 And I beheld, and heard the voice of many angels round about the throne, and the beasts, and the elders: and the number of them was * ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands;

* Dan. 7. 10.

12 Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain, to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.

13 And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I, saying, Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power *be* unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.

14 And the four beasts said, Amen. And the four *and* twenty elders fell down and worshipped him that liveth for ever and ever.

CHAP. VI.

The opening of the seals in order, and what followed thereupon; containing a prophecy to the end of the world.

AND I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts, saying, Come, and see.

2 And I saw, and behold, a white horse; and he that sat on him had a bow, and a crown was given unto him, and he went forth conquering and to conquer.

3 And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second beast say, Come, and see.

4 And there went out another horse *that was* red: and *power* was given unto him that sat thereon, to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.

5 And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, Come, and see. And I beheld, and lo, a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand.

‡ The word *chanix* signifieth a measure containing one wine-quart, and the twelfth part of a quart.

6 And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, ‡ A measure of wheat for a peny, and three measures of barley for a peny; and see thou hurt not the oyl and the wine.

7 And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come, and see.

8 And I looked, and behold, a pale horse; and his name that sat on him was Death, and hell followed with him: and power was given ‡ unto them, over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with the sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

‡ Or, to him.

9 And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held.

10 And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

11 And white robes were given unto every one of them, and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow-servants also, and their brethren that should be killed as they *were*, should be fulfilled.

12 And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and lo, there was a great earthquake, and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood;

13 And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig-tree casteth her ‡ untimely figs when she is shaken of a mighty wind:

‡ Or, *green figs.*

14 * And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places:

* Isa. 34. 4.

15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bond-man, and every free-man *hid themselves in the dens, and in the rocks of the mountains;

* Isai. 19. *Hos. 10. 8. Luk. 23. 30.

16 * And said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb:

17 For the great day of his wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?

CHAP. VII.

3 An angel sealeth the servants of God in their foreheads. 4 The number of them that were sealed: of the tribes of Israel a certain number. 9 Of all other nations an innumerable multitude, which stand before the throne, clad in white robes, and palms in their hands. 14 Their robes were washed in the blood of the Lamb.

AND after these things, I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.

2 And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea,

3 Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have * sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.

* Ezek. 9. 4.

4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed: *and there were* sealed an hundred *and* fourty *and* four thousand, of all the tribes of the children of Israel.

5 Of the tribe of Juda *were* sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben *were* sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Gad *were* sealed twelve thousand.

6 Of the tribe of Aser *were* sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Nephthalim *were* sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses *were* sealed twelve thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon *were* sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Levi *were* sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar *were* sealed twelve thousand,

8 Of

The foure Horſes ſent forth. Revel. 6.

2. And I ſaw, and behold a white Horſe etc:
4. And there went out another Horſe that was red, etc:
5. And I beheld, and lo a black Horſe, etc.
8. And I looked and behold a pale Horſe and his name that ſate on him was Death etc: 12. And ye ſun became black etc: and ye Moon as blood etc: 13. And ye ſtars of heaven fell

F. H: Van Hove fecit

Thirtieth Article. Four Fourth. Rev'd. 6.

Locusts Arise. Revel 9.

1. And I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth etc.
2. And he opened the bottomlesse pit, and there arose a smoak out of ye pit etc: and ye sun and ye air were darkned &c
3. And there came out of the smoak Locusts, etc:
15. And ye 4. Angels were loosed etc: for to slay etc:
17: And ye heads of ye Horses were as ye heads of Lions etc.

8 Of the tribe of Zabulon *were* sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Joseph *were* sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin *were* sealed twelve thousand.

9 After this I beheld, and lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands;

10 And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb.

11 And all the angels stood round about the throne, and *about* the elders, and the four beasts, and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God,

12 Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might *be* unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.

13 And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arayed in white robes? and whence came they?

14 And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.

15 Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple: and he that sitteth on the throne shall
Isa. 49. 10. * dwell among them.

16 * They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat.

17 For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne, shall feed them, and shall lead them un-
Isa. 25. 8. to living fountains of waters: * and God shall
Rev. 21. 4. wipe away all tears from their eyes.

CHAP. VIII.

1 At the opening of the seventh seal, 2 seven angels had seven trumpets given them: 6 four of them sound their trumpets, and great plagues follow. 3 Another angel putteth incense to the prayers of the saints on the golden altar.

AND when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven for the space of half an hour.

2 And I saw the seven angels which stood before God; and to them were given seven trumpets.

3 And another angel came and stood at the altar, having a golden censer; and there was given unto him much incense, that he should ‡ offer *it* with the prayers of all saints upon the
‡ to golden altar, which was before the throne.
prayers.

4 And the smoke of the incense *which came* with the prayers of the saints, ascended up before God, out of the angels hand.

5 And the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth: and there were voices, and thundrings, and lightnings, and an earthquake.

6 And the seven angels which had the seven trumpets, prepared themselves to sound.

7 The first angel sounded, and there followed hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth: and the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up.

8 And the second angel sounded, and as it were a great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea; and the third part of the sea became blood:

9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died; and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

10 And the third angel sounded, and there fell a great star from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters:

11 And the name of the star is called Wormwood: and the third part of the waters became wormwood; and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth angel sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars; so as the third part of them was darkened, and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.

13 And I beheld, and heard an angel flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Wo, wo, wo to the inhabiters of the earth, by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels which are yet to sound.

CHAP. IX.

1 At the sounding of the fifth angel, a star falleth from heaven, to whom is given the key of the bottomless pit. 2 He openeth the pit, and there come forth locusts like scorpions. 12 The first wo past. 13 The sixth trumpet soundeth. 14 Four angels are let loose, that were bound.

AND the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit.

2 And he opened the bottomless pit, and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened, by reason of the smoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth; and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power.

4 And it was commanded them, that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads.

5 And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five moneths: and their torment *was* as the torment of a scorpion, when he striketh a man.

6 And in those days * shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them. * Isa. 2. 19. Chap. 6. 16

7 And the shapes of the locusts *were* like unto horses prepared unto battel; and on their heads *were* as it were crowns like gold, and their faces *were* as the faces of men.

8 And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as *the teeth* of lions.

9 And they had breast-plates, as it were breast-plates of iron, and the sound of their wings *was* as the sound of chariots of many horses running to battel.

10 And they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings in their tails: and their power *was* to hurt men five moneths.

11 And they had a king over them, *which is* the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue *is* Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath *his* name ‡ Apollyon.

‡ That is to say, a destroyer.

12 One wo is past, *and* behold, there come two woes more hereafter.

13 And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a voice

voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God,

14 Saying to the ſixth angel which had the trumpet, Looſe the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.

15 And the four angels were looſed, which were prepared ‡ for an hour, and a day, and a moneth, and a year, for to ſlay the third part of men.

‡ Or, at.

16 And the number of the army of the horſemen *were* two hundred thouſand thouſand: and I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I ſaw the horſes in the viſion, and them that ſat on them, having breaſtplates of fire, and of jacinct, and brimſtone: and the heads of the horſes *were* as the heads of lions; and out of their mouths iſſued fire, and ſmoke, and brimſtone.

18 By theſe three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the ſmoke, and by the brimſtone, which iſſued out of their mouths.

19 For their power is in their mouth, and in their tails: for their tails *were* like unto ſerpents, and had heads, and with them they do hurt.

20 And the reſt of the men which were not killed by theſe plagues, yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they ſhould not worſhip devils, * and idols of gold and ſilver, and braſs, and ſtone, and of wood: which neither can ſee, nor hear, nor walk:

* Pſal. 115. 4. and 135. 15.

21 Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their ſorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their theſts.

CHAP. X.

A mighty ſtrong angel appeareth with a book open in his hand. 6 *He ſweareth by him that liveth for ever, that there ſhall be no more time.* 9 *John is commanded to take and eat the book.*

AND I ſaw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud, and a rainbow *was* upon his head, and his face *was* as it were the ſun, and his feet as pillars of fire.

2 And he had in his hand a little book open: and he ſet his right foot upon the ſea, and *his* left *foot* on the earth,

3 And cried with a loud voice, as *when* a lion roareth: and when he had cried, ſeven thunders uttered their voices.

4 And when the ſeven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven, ſaying unto me, Seal up thoſe things which the ſeven thunders uttered, and write them not.

5 And the angel which I ſaw ſtand upon the ſea, and upon the earth, * lifted up his hand to heaven,

Dan. 12. 7.

6 And ſware by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven and the things that therein are, and the earth and the things that therein are, and the ſea and the things which are therein, that there ſhould be time no longer:

7 But in the days of the voice of the ſeventh angel, when he ſhall begin to ſound, the myſtery of God ſhould be finiſhed, as he hath declared to his ſervants the prophets.

8 And the voice which I heard from heaven ſpake unto me again, and ſaid, Go, *and* take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel which ſtandeth upon the ſea, and upon the earth.

9 And I went unto the angel, and ſaid unto him, Give me the little book. And he ſaid unto me, * Take *it*, and eat it up; and it ſhall make thy belly bitter, but it ſhall be in thy mouth ſweet as honey.

* Ezek. 2. 8. & 3. 3.

10 And I took the little book out of the angels hand, and ate it up; and it was in my mouth ſweet as honey: and aſſoon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And he ſaid unto me, Thou muſt propheſie again before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings.

CHAP. XI.

3 The two witneſſes propheſie. 6 *They have power to ſhut heaven that it rain not.* 7 *The beaſt ſhall fight againſt them and kill them.* 8 *They lie unburied,* 11 *and after three days and a half riſe again.* 14 *The ſecond wo is paſt.* 15 *The ſeventh trumpet ſoundeth.*

AND there was given me a reed like unto a rod: and the angel ſtood, ſaying, Riſe, and meaſure the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worſhip therein.

2 But the court which is without the temple † leave out, and meaſure it not; for it is given unto the Gentiles: and the holy city ſhall they tread under foot fourty *and* two moneths.

† Gr. caſt out.

3 And ‡ I will give *power* unto my two witneſſes, & they ſhall propheſie a thouſand two hundred *and* threeſcore days clothed in ſackcloth.

‡ Or, I will give unto my two witneſſes, that they may propheſie.

4 Theſe are the * two olive-trees, and the two candleſticks ſtanding before the God of the earth.

* Zech. 4. 3, 11, 14.

5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he muſt in this manner be killed.

6 Theſe have power to ſhut heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy: and have power over waters, to turn them to bloud, and to ſmite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they ſhall have finiſhed their teſtimony, the beaſt that aſcendeth out of the bottomleſs pit, ſhall make war againſt them, and ſhall overcome them, and kill them.

8 And their dead bodies *ſhall lie* in § ſtreet of the great city, which ſpiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where alſo our Lord was crucified.

9 And they of the people, and kindreds, and tongues, and nations, ſhall ſee their dead bodies three days and an half, and ſhall not ſuffer their dead bodies to be put in graves.

10 And they that dwell upon the earth ſhall rejoyce over them, and make merry, and ſhall ſend gifts one to another; becauſe theſe two prophets tormented them that dwelt on the earth.

11 And after three days and an half, the ſpirit of life from God entred into them: and they ſtood upon their feet, and great fear fell upon them which ſaw them.

12 And they heard a great voice from heaven, ſaying unto them, Come up hither. And they aſcended up to heaven in a cloud, and their enemies beheld them.

13 And the ſame hour was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were ſlain † of men ſeven thouſand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven.

† Gr. names of man.

14 The ſecond wo is paſt, *and* behold, the third wo cometh quickly.

15 And the ſeventh angel ſounded, and there were great voices in heaven, ſaying, The kingdoms of this world are become *the kingdoms* of our Lord, and of his Chriſt, and he ſhall reign for ever and ever.

16 And the four and twenty elders which ſat before God on their ſeats, fell upon their faces, and worſhipped God,

¶ 17 Saying,

The Mighty Angells Appearance Rev: 10.

1. And I saw another mighty Angel etc: clothed with a cloud and a rain-bowe was upon his head, his face as it were the sun and his feet as pillars of fire. 4: And when the 7. thunders had uttered their voices, etc: 8. And the voice which I ~ heard from heaven spake unto mee againe and said goe and take the little booke which is open etc:

The two Witneſſes. Revel: 11.

3. And I will give power unto my two witneſſes and they ſhall propheſie 1260. dayes clothed in ſackcloth.
7. And when they ſhall have finiſhed their teſtimony, etc:
8. And their dead bodies ſhall lie in the ſtreet, etc:
11. And after 3 dayes and a half the ſpirit of life, etc:
12. And they aſcended up to heaven in a cloud. etc:

The Woman Pursued by ye Dragon Rev: 12.

4. And the Dragon stood before the Woman which was readie to be delivered for to devoure her child as soone as it was borne etc:

The Beast is worshipt. Revel 13.

1: And I saw a beast rise up out of the Sea, having seven heads, and ten horns, and upon his horns ten Crowns, etc: 4: And they worshiped the Dragon etc: 11. And I beheld another beast etc: and he had two horns like a Lamb etc:

F. H. Van Hove fecit

17 Saying, We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which art, and wast, and art to come; because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned.

18 And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great, and shouldest destroy them which ‡ destroy the earth.

‡ Or, corrupt.

19 And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the ark of his testament: and there were lightnings, and voices, and thunderings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

CHAP. XII.

1 *A woman clothed with the sun travaileth.* 4 *The great red dragon standeth before her, ready to devour her child.* 6 *When she was delivered she fleeth into the wilderness.* 7 *Michael and his angels fight with the dragon, and prevail.* 13 *The dragon being cast down into the earth, persecuteth the woman.*

AND there appeared a great ‡wonder in heaven, a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars:

‡ Or, sign.

2 And she being with child, cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered.

3 And there appeared another ‡ wonder in heaven, and behold, a great red dragon, having seven heads, and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.

‡ Or, sign.

4 And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child assoon as it was born.

5 And she brought forth a man-child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne.

6 And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred *and* threescore days.

7 And there was war in heaven; Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought and his angels:

8 And prevailed not, neither was their place found any more in heaven.

9 And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the devil and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10 And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.

11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.

12 Therefore rejoyce, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Wo to the inhabiters of the earth, and of the sea: for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.

13 And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man-*child*.

14 And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might flie into the wilderness, into her place: where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood, after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood.

16 And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.

17 And the dragon was wroth with § woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *A beast riseth out of the sea with seven heads and ten horns, to whom the dragon giveth his power.* 11 *Another beast cometh up out of the earth;* 14 *causeth an image to be made of the former beast,* 15 *and that men should worship it,* 16 *and receive his mark.*

AND I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the ‡ name of blasphemy.

‡ Or, *nam a*

2 And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as *the feet* of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.

3 And I saw one of his heads, as it were † wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondred after the beast.

† Gr. *as in.*

4 And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who *is* like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him?

5 And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things, and blasphemies; and power was given unto him ‡ to continue fourty *and* two moneths.

‡ Or, *to make war.*

6 And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.

7 And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.

8 And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

9 If any man have an ear, let him hear.

10 He that leadeth into captivity, shall go into captivity: * He that killeth with the sword, must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

* Matth. 26. 52.

11 And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon.

12 And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth, and them which dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth, in the sight of men,

14 And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth, by *the means of* those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast which had the wound by a sword, and did live.

15 And he had power to give † life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as

† Gr. *breath.*

would not worship the image of the beast, should be killed.

16 And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, † to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads:

17 And that no man might buy or sell save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man: and his number is six hundred threescore and six.

† Gr. to give.

CHAP. XIV.

1 *The Lamb standing on mount Sion with his company.* 6 *An angel preacheth the gospel.* 8 *The fall of Babylon.* 15 *The harvest of the world, and putting in of the sickle.* 20 *The vintage and wine-presst of the wrath of God.*

AND I looked, and lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred fourty and four thousand, having his Fathers name written in their foreheads.

2 And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps:

3 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders: and no man could learn that song, but the hundred and fourty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.

4 These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins: these are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth: these † were redeemed from among men, being the first-fruits unto God, and to the Lamb.

† Gr. were bought.

5 And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

6 And I saw another angel flie in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people,

7 Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him, for the hour of his judgment is come: * and worship him that made heaven and earth, and the sea and the fountains of waters.

* Psal. 146. 5, 6. Acts 4. 15.

8 And there followed another angel, saying, * Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

* Isai. 21. 9. Jer. 51. 8. Ch. 18. 2.

9 And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive *his* mark in his forehead, or in his hand,

10 The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture, into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone, in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb:

11 And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

12 Here is the patience of the saints: here † are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.

† Or, from henceforth

13 And I heard a voice from heaven, saying unto me, Write, Blessed *are* the dead which die in the Lord, † from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and their works do follow them.

† Or, henceforth saith the Spirit.

14 And I looked, and behold, a white cloud, and upon the cloud *one* sat, like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle.

15 And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, * Thrust in thy sickle, and reap: for the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is † ripe.

* Joel 3. 13.

† Or dried.

16 And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth; and the earth was reaped.

17 And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle.

18 And another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe.

19 And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast *it* into the great wine-press of the wrath of God.

20 And the wine-press was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the wine-press, even unto the horse-bridles, by the space of a thousand *and* six hundred furlongs.

CHAP. XV.

1 *The seven angels with the seven last plagues.* 3 *The song of them that overcome the beast.* 5 *The seven vials full of the wrath of God.*

AND I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvellous, seven angels having the seven last plagues, for in them is filled up the wrath of God.

2 And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire; and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, *and* over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God.

3 And they sing * the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous *are* thy works, Lord God Almighty; * just and true *are* thy ways, thou King of saints.

* Exod. 15. 1. * Psal. 145. 17.

4 * Who shall not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy name? for *thou* only *art* holy: for all nations shall come and worship before thee; for thy judgments are made manifest.

* Jer. 10. 7.

5 And after that I looked, and behold, the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven was opened:

6 And the seven angels came out of the temple, having the seven plagues, clothed in pure and white linen, and having their breasts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of the four beasts gave unto the seven angels, seven golden vials full of the wrath of God, who liveth for ever and ever.

8 And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God, and from his power; and no man was able to enter into the temple, till the seven plagues of the seven angels were fulfilled.

CHAP. XVI.

2 *The angels pour out their vials full of wrath.* 6 *The plagues that follow thereupon.* 15 *Christ cometh as a thief, blessed are they that watch.*

AND I heard a great voice out of the temple, saying to the seven angels, Go your ways and pour out the vials of the wrath of God upon the earth.

2 And

Seven Vials poured out. Revel: 16.

1. And I heard a great voice etc: saying to the seven Angels, go your wayes, and pour out the Vials of the wrath of God upon yᵉ earth. etc:

12. And I saw three unclean Spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the Dragon and out of yᵉ mouth of yᵉ beast etc:

I. H. van Hove fecit

3. And I saw a Woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast etc: having seven heads etc:
4: And the woman was arayed in purple, and scarlet colour etc: having a golden cup in her hand etc:

F. H. van Hove fecit

2 And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and upon them which worshipped his image.

3 And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea; and it became as the blood of a dead man: and every living soul died in the sea.

4 And the third angel poured out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters; and they became blood.

5 And I heard the angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and wast, and shalt be, because thou hast judged thus:

6 For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink; for they are worthy.

7 And I heard another out of the altar say, Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous *are* thy judgments.

8 And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sun; and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire.

9 And men were ‡ scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues: and they repented not to give him glory.

10 And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness, and they gnawed their tongues for pain,

11 And blasphemed the God of heaven, because of their pains and their sores, and repented not of their deeds.

12 And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared.

13 And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs, *come* out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet.

14 For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battel of that great day of God Almighty.

15 * Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed *is he* that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame.

16 And he gathered them together into a place, called in the Hebrew tongue, Armageddon.

17 And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, It is done.

18 And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake *and* so great.

19 And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, *to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath.

20 And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.

21 And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, *every stone* about the weight of a talent: and men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail; for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

CHAP. XVII.

3, 4 A woman arrayed in purple and scarlet, with a golden cup in her hand, sitteth upon the beast, 5 which is great Babylon, the mother of all abominations. 9 The interpretation of the seven heads, 12 and the ten horns. 8 The punishment of the whore. 14 The victory of the Lamb.

AND there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore, that sitteth upon many waters:

2 With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabiters of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

3 So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet-coloured beast, full of names of blasphemie, having seven heads and ten horns.

4 And the woman was arayed in purple, and scarlet colour, and † decked with gold and precious stone, and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication.

† Gr. *gilded.*

5 And upon her forehead *was* a name written, MYSTERIE, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

‡ Or, *fornications.*

6 And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondred with great admiration.

7 And the angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns.

8 The beast that thou sawest, was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, (whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world) when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 *And* here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth.

10 And there are seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, *and* the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition.

12 And the ten horns which thou sawest, are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast.

13 These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast.

14 These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: * for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings; and they that are with him, *are* called, and chosen, and faithful.

* 1 Tim. 6. 15 Ch. 19. 16.

15 And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

16 And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate, and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled.

18 And the woman which thou sawest, is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.

CHAP. XVIII.

2 Babylon is fallen. 4 The people of God commanded to depart out of her. 9 The kings of the earth, 11 with the merchants and mariners, lament

ment over her. 20 *The saints rejoyce for the judgments of God upon her.*

AND after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightned with his glory.

2 And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, * Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. * Chap. 14. 8.

3 For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the ‡ abundance of her delicacies. ‡ Or, power.

4 And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, * Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues: * Jer. 51. 6.

5 For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembred her iniquities.

6 Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double, according to her works: in the cup ℣ she hath filled, fill to her double.

7 How much she hath glorified her self, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a * queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow. *Isai. 47. 8.

8 Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burnt with fire; for strong *is* the Lord God who judgeth her.

9 And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication, and lived deliciously with her, * shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning, * Ezek. 26. 17.

10 Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city: for in one hour is thy judgment come

11 And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her, for no man buyeth * her merchandise any more: * Ezek. 27. 27.

12 The merchandise of gold and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all ‡ thyine wood, and all manner vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and iron, and marble, ‡ Or, sweet.

13 And cinamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oyl, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, & sheep, & horses, and chariots, and ‡ slaves, and souls of men. ‡ Or, bodies.

14 And the fruits that thy soul lusted after, are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly, are departed from thee, and thou shalt find them no more at all.

15 The merchants of these things which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off, for the fear of her torment, weeping, and wailing,

16 And saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones and pearls:

17 For in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And every ship-master, and all the company in ships, and sailers, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off,

18 And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What *city is* like unto this great city?

19 And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea, by reason of her costliness: for in one hour is she made desolate.

20 Rejoyce over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets, for God hath avenged you on her.

21 And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, & shall be found no more at all

22 And the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters shall be heard no more at all in thee; and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft *he be*, shall be found any more in thee; and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee;

23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee; and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived:

24 And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.

CHAP. XIX.

1 *God is praised in heaven for judging the great whore, and avenging the blood of his saints.* 7 *The marriage of the Lamb.* 10 *The angel will not be worshipped.* 17 *The fowls called to the great slaughter.*

AND after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia; Salvation, and glory, and honour, and power, unto the Lord our God:

2 For true and righteous *are* his judgments; for he hath judged the great whore which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand.

3 And again they said, Alleluia. And her smoke rose up for ever and ever.

4 And the four and twenty elders, and the four beasts fell down and worshipped God that sat on the throne, saying, Amen; Alleluia.

5 And a voice came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye his servants, and ye that fear him, both small and great.

6 And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thundrings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

7 Let us be glad and rejoyce, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made her self ready.

8 And to her was granted, that she should be arayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.

9 And he saith unto me, Write, * Blessed *are* they which are called unto the marriage-supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God. * Matth. 22. 2.

10 And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, * See *thou do it* not: I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophesie. * Chap. 22. 9

11 And I saw heaven opened, and behold, a white horse; and he that sat upon him *was* called faithful and true, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war.

12 His eyes *were* as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written that no man knew but he himself.

13 * And he *was* clothed with a vesture dipt in blood: and his Name is called, The Word of God. *Isai. 63. 2.

14 And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

15 And

9. And the Kings of the earth etc: shall bewail her etc:
11: And the Marchants etc: 18. And cryed when they
saw the smoak of her burning: etc:
21. And a mighty Angel took up a stone, like a great
Milstone and cast it into the sea, saying thus with-
violence shall that great Citty Babylon be thrown down

Satan bound. Revel: 20.

1. And I saw an Angel etc: having the key of the bottom-
less pit, and a great chain in his hand.
2. And he laid hold on the Dragon etc:
3. And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him
up, and set a seal upon him etc:

15 And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the wine-press of the fierceness and wrath of almighty God.

16 And he hath on his vesture, and on his thigh a name written, * KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

17 And I saw an angel standing in the sun: and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that flie in the midst of heaven, Come and gather your selves together unto the supper of the great God;

18 That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great.

19 And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies gathered together, to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.

20 And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which *sword* proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

CHAP. XX.

2 Satan bound for a thousand years. 5 The first resurrection: 6 they blessed that have part therein. 7 Satan let loose again. 8 Gog and Magog. 10 The devil cast into the lake of fire and brimstone. 12 The last and general resurrection.

AND I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit, and a chain in his hand.

2 And he laid hold on the dragon that old serpent, which is the devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years.

3 And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season.

4 And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and *I saw* the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years,

5 But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This *is* the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy *is* he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God, and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

7 And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison,

8 And shall go out to deceive the nations, which are in the four quarters of the earth, * Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battel: the number of whom *is* as the sand of the sea.

9 And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.

10 And the devil that deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet *are*, and shall be tormented day and night, for ever and ever.

11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them

12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; * and the books were opened: and another * book was opened, which is *the book* of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

13 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and ‡ hell delivered up the dead which were in them; and they were judged every man according to their works.

14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire: This is the second death.

15 And whosoever was not found written in the book of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

1 A new heaven and a new earth. 10 The heavenly Jerusalem, with a full description thereof. 23 She needeth no sun, the glory of God is her light. 24 The kings of the earth bring their riches unto her.

AND * I saw a new heaven, and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea.

2 And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven, saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God *is* with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, *and be* their God.

4 * And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.

5 And he that sat upon the throne said, * Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful.

6 And he said unto me, It is done, * I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end: * I will give unto him that is athirst, of the fountain of the water of life freely.

7 He that overcometh shall inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.

8 But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

9 And there came unto me one of the seven angels, which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the bride, the Lambs wife.

10 And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God,

11 Having the glory of God: and her light *was* like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal;

12 And had a wall great and high, *and* had twelve gates, and at ye gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are *the names* of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel.

13 On the east, three gates; on the north, three gates; on the south, three gates; and on the west, three gates.

14 And

* Dan. 7. 10.
* Chap. 3. 5.
‡ Or, *the grave.*
* Isai. 65. 17. 2 Pet. 3. 13.
* Chap. 7. 17.
* Isai. 43. 19. 2 Cor. 5. 17.
* Chap. 1. 8. & 22. 13.
* Isa. 55. 1.

14 And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

15 And he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the city lieth four-square, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the city with a reed, twelve thousand furlongs: the length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equal.

17 And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred *and* forty *and* four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city *was* pure gold, like unto clear glass.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the city *were* garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation *was* jasper; the second, a sapphire; the third, a chalcedonie; the fourth, an emerauld;

20 The fifth, sardonix; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, a topaz; the tenth, a chrysoprasus; the eleventh, a jacinct; the twelfth, an amethyst.

21 And the twelve gates *were* twelve pearls; every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city *was* pure gold, as it were transparent glass.

22 And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty, and the Lamb, are the temple of it.

* Isai. 60. 19. 23 * And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb *is* the light thereof.

* Isa. 60. 3. 24 * And the nations of them which are saved, shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.

* Isai 60. 11. 25 * And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there.

26 And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither *whatsoever* worketh * Phil. 3. 3. Chap. 3. 5. and 20. 12. abomination, or *maketh* a lie: but they which are written in the Lambs * book of life.

CHAP. XXII.

1 *The river of the water of life.* 2 *The tree of life.* 5 *The light of the city of God is himself.* 9 *The angel will not be worshipped.* 18 *Nothing may be added to the word of God, nor taken therefrom.*

AND he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lamb.

2 In the midst of the street of it, and of either side of the river, *was there* the tree of life, which bare twelve *manner of* fruits, *and* yielded her fruit every moneth: and the leaves of the tree *were* for the healing of the nations.

3 And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him.

4 And they shall see his face; and his name *shall be* in their foreheads.

5 * And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever. * Chap. 21. 23.

6 And he said unto me, These sayings *are* faithful and true. And the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done.

7 Behold, I come quickly: blessed *is* he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this book.

8 And I John saw these things, and heard *them*. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel, which shewed me these things.

9 Then saith he unto me, * See *thou do it* not: for I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: worship God. * Chap. 19. 10.

10 And he saith unto me, Seal not the sayings of the prophecy of this book: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

12 And behold, I come quickly; and my reward *is* with me, * to give every man according as his work shall be. * Rom. 2. 6.

13 I am Alpha and Omega, * the beginning and the end, the first and the last. * Chap. 1. 8. and 21. 6.

14 Blessed *are* they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city. Isai. 41. 4. and 44. 6.

15 For without *are* dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.

16 I Jesus have sent mine angel to testifie unto you these things in the churches. I am the root, and the offspring of David, *and* the bright and morning star.

17 And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. * And let him that is athirst come: And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely. * Isai. 55. 1.

18 For I testifie unto every one that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, * If any man shall adde unto these things, God shall adde unto him the plagues that are written in this book: * Deut. 4. 2. Prov. 30. 6.

19 And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and *from* the things which are written in this book.

20 He which testifieth these things, saith, Surely, I come quickly, Amen. Even so, come Lord Jesus.

21 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.

FINIS.

BIBLIOTHECA BODLEIANA

The Heavenly Jerusalem. Revel: 21.

9. And there came unto me one of the seven Angels, etc:
10: And he carried me in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great cittie etc:
23. And the city had no need of the sun, etc: for the glory of God did lighten it etc:

F. H. van Hove fecit